





# PEERLESS MARTIAL GOD

BOOK 03

*Jing Wu Hen*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Peerless Martial God

(绝世武神)

by

Jing Wu Hen

(净无痕)

# Synopsis

---

Lin Feng tried to be the diligent and hard-working good guy. He studied hard, did his best to make his family proud and not get into trouble, but when he saw a girl being taken advantage of, he had to intervene. He had been tricked, sentenced to 10 years in jail and framed for a crime he never committed, all was lost. If his life was over he would take those who ruined his life with him...

Suddenly he opens his eyes again. He is not dead, but alive in the body of the Lin Feng of a different world. This Lin Feng had been killed as trash of cultivation. This world where the strong had no regard for human life and would kill freely if they had the strength. Called 'trash' and thrown away, with vengeance in his heart he will rise to new heights opposing the will of heaven and earth.

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Alice, Not Sane, Pan Pan @ [Totally Insane Translation](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 201: The Officers

---

“Han Man, how strong are these officers?” asked Lin Feng. He wanted to understand the potential of the army. The best way to find out was to understand how strong the officers were.

“Ordinary soldiers are all at the Qi layer. Guards are at the peak of the Qi layer. Sergeants are required to have broken through to the Ling Qi layer. It’s even stricter for the Lieutenants who are required to have broken through, at least, the third Ling Qi layer. Non-commissioned officers must have broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer and as far as the three officers are concerned, one is at the eighth Ling Qi layer and the two others are at the ninth Ling Qi layer. One more step and they’ll reach the Xuan Qi layer. They are extremely strong.”

Han Man explained these things in details to Lin Feng. Strength was the most important thing in the cultivation world, especially within the army. Strength was required when speaking to soldiers, it was impossible to rely only on one’s military exploits, strength was necessary to make subordinates obey orders. Even on the battlefield, without strength, it was too easy to get killed. Being inspiring and intimidating was the biggest challenge.

“Lin Feng, big brother, we stand alone as the Chi Xie troops. Even though the number is not as numerous as for the other parts of the army, their average strength is much higher than the other soldiers. Besides, the officer of the Chi Xie troops is at the peak of the ninth Ling Qi layer. It is said that he is about to break through to the Xuan Qi layer. How majestic!” added Han Man. Lin Feng understood why the situation was that way. The Chi Xie troops were elite troops created by Liu Cang Lan himself. It was

impossible for them not to be the strongest unit within the army.

The armor they were wearing was different from that of the other soldiers. They all had black and gold armor which greatly increased their defense. Besides, the armor had a red luster to it which made the soldiers look incredibly majestic. That is why Han Man and Po Jun wore the armor. It made them strike fear into people. One glance was enough to scare people away as if the armor contained the swift and fierce Qi of the Chi Xie.

“Lin Feng big brother, you can ask the General to give you a lieutenant position so that we can fight the enemy together.” Han Man’s voice was filled with enthusiasm. Lin Feng had come to fight the enemy. If they could fight together side by side as brothers, they would certainly be even more inspired and motivated.

“Lin Feng.” At that moment, five people were moving towards them. The one taking the lead was Liu Cang Lan. When Han Man and Po Jun saw these people, they stood perfectly straight, slightly bowed and performed a military salute: “General, Officer!”

“Hm.” Liu Cang Lan slightly nodded and said: “Han Man, Po Jun, you two can leave.”

“Roger, General!” said Han Man and Po Jun while looking at Lin Feng with a mysterious smile on their faces. Immediately after, they left.

“Lin Feng, come in, they’re with me.” said Liu Cang Lan. Immediately after, he and the four people entered the tent. Lin

Feng closely followed behind them.

In the tent, Liu Cang Lan and the four others sat down in different places and stared at Lin Feng who was standing. Lin Feng was also staring back at them.

Lin Feng looked at the two people on Liu Cang Lan's sides. One was wearing a black and gold armor and the other one was wearing golden armor. The two others were wearing silver armor.

Besides, these people's expressions all looked sharp and majestic. They were calmly sitting there but Lin Feng had the impression that the Chi Xie troops Qi was filling the atmosphere.

“Lin Feng, this is the officer of the Chi Xie troops, Jiu Chi Xie. This is the middle officer, Ren Qing Kuang. This is the left officer, Feng Yu Han, and this is the right officer, Lei Qing Tian.” Liu Cang Lan introduced these people to Lin Feng. Jiu Chi Xie, the officer of the Chi Xie troops, was wearing the Chi Xie armor. Ren Qing Kuang was wearing the golden armor. The left and the right officers, Feng Yu Han and Lei Qing Tian were wearing silver armor.

Liu Cang Lan had appointed these people to lead huge portions of the army: three hundred thousand troops in total. Their power and influence reached the heavens.

Lin Feng slightly bowed in front of these people, but he was full of questions. He didn't know why Uncle Liu had introduced him to all these people.



Liu Cang Lan had left for a walk and had come back with these four people. It was clearly intentional and was no coincidence at all.

“This is Lin Feng whom I was telling you about. The one who has conquered Fei Fei’s heart, my future son-in-law.” said Liu Cang Lan to the four officers while smiling. Lin Feng was dumbstruck. Liu Cang Lan was surprisingly officially declaring that Liu Fei and Lin Feng had an intimate relation and that he was going to become his son-in-law.

Even though Lin Feng knew that Liu Cang Lan was trying to match Liu Fei and Lin Feng, however they were just friends. There was nothing intimate between them. Liu Cang Lan’s words made Lin Feng feel very surprised, but since he spoke that way, Lin Feng couldn’t contradict him. He had no choice but to nod and confirm.

“I am curious to see what kind of man Liu Fei likes.” The right officer Lei Qing Tian stood up and took a few steps towards Lin Feng and suddenly, an incredible amount of Qi moved straight towards Lin Feng.

That Qi smelt like blood and death. Lin Feng, at that moment, had the impression that the person in front of him wasn’t a human being but a demonic killing machine. His hands were covered with an endless amount of blood belonging to his victims.

“How terrifying.” Lin Feng was remained motionless. That insane Qi was able to affect people’s determination. The terrifying

Qi was extremely oppressing.

Lin Feng didn't dare imagine how many lives he had taken to become an officer. Such a Qi was monstrous.

"Huh?" Lei Qing Tian looked interested when he saw that Lin Feng was remaining calm. Immediately after, he took another step towards Lin Feng. He was now about one meter away from Lin Feng and his bloodthirsty eyes were staring at Lin Feng. He looked like a demon.

Lin Feng's facial expression was still the same. He was calmly looking into these two eyes. With his determination, it was difficult for external things to affect or scare Lin Feng.

Out of Lin Feng's body suddenly emerged a dense and thick battle energy. It wasn't as terrifying as the officer's Qi but it was piercingly cold and smelt like death. Even if it wasn't as strong as the powerful Qi he was facing, it was still a brave move from Lin Feng.

"BOOOM!" Lin Feng took a step forward. He surprisingly didn't move backward, but forward. After that step, only two steps were separating Lin Feng and Lei Qing Tian. They both looked fierce and determined. The Qi and the burning battle energy collided in the air. Lin Feng's long hair was fluttering from the wind created by the shockwaves.

That entire scene was only about ten seconds in length. Lei Qing Tian's Qi then slowly vanished. He had a smile on the corner of his

mouth.

“Not bad. Not only didn’t you move away from me but you came closer. I like that.” said Lei Qing Tian while smiling wholeheartedly. He tapped Lin Feng’s shoulders which made his body shake. He was extremely strong.

“No wonder Fei Fei likes him. For someone of his age, having a strength which exceeds the fifth Ling Qi layer is really good.” said the left officer Feng Yu Han while nodding and smiling.

The atmosphere in the tent wasn’t serious and solemn at all anymore.

“If I’m not mistaken, he has already broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer, right?” said the middle officer Ren Qing Kuang while smiling. Lin Feng slightly nodded and said: “Officer Ren, you are right.”

“You are not even eighteen yet. Having reached such a cultivation level is quite impressive. Those who help us here are much weaker. You have unlimited possibilities with your talent. Too bad that you are not going to stay for very long amongst the army.”

Ren Qing Kuang’s voice was filled with regret. Talented young cultivators didn’t stay within the army. All they were seeking was enlightenment on the path of cultivation. Even when they fought on the side of the army, it was just to gain practical experience and become stronger. Situations where life and death were at stake

helped them to become stronger. That kind of cultivator would leave the army after having completed their training.

People like Liu Cang Lan were rare. Because of his function as General, he had many burdens and obligations. He had amazing talent and was constantly getting stronger even with these burdens.

Being a general wasn't ordinary cultivation training, he had to motivate the hearts of the officers and the troops.

Lin Feng's natural talent was much more frightening than Liu Cang Lan's talent. He was obviously not going to stay within the army.

From the four officers, only Jiu Chi Xie hadn't said a word. He looked solemn and respectful. His facial expression looked like it had been frozen for a thousand years.

"Alright, you can go back to your positions. Chi Xie, you can stay here." said Liu Cang indifferently. The three officers nodded and left the tent.

"Lin Feng." shouted, Jiu Chi Xie, who had been silent all this time.

"Huh?" Lin Feng raised his head and looked Jiu Chi Xie guessing that the man had something to tell him.

“Lin Feng, in the Chi Xie troops, apart from me as an officer, there are three non-commissioned officers, thirty lieutenants, three hundred sergeants and three thousand guards. In total, there are 28,521 Chi Xie armored horses. All our troops are elite fighters. Our strategy is to fight one against ten. Even though we have less troops than the other factions, if we attack, we win.” said Jiu Chi Xie in a calm and solemn tone. His words were poignant. Besides, he surprisingly perfectly remembered the exact number of Chi Xie horses they had. It was incredible that he knew the exact number, during battles, they could die at any moment, so it was difficult to establish accurate statistics. People would normally just have a general idea.

“Lin Feng, will you remember this?” Said Jiu Chi Xie which surprised Lin Feng. Why did Jiu Chi Xie want Lin Feng to remember it?

But Lin Feng still nodded and said: “I will.”

“Then it’s good. Lin Feng, every single member of the Chi Xie troops is an elite soldier. After each battle, remember how many we have lost. I will then know how many of our brothers have passed away. It will sadden me more with each death. So that next time, I will do my best and spare no efforts to greatly reduce the number of my brothers that have to die.”

Jiu Chi Xie was speaking from his heart. Lin Feng deeply respected him Jiu Chi Xie was indubitably an outstanding officer who was like a brother to his troops which is why he remembered all of them.

# Chapter 202: The Black Guards

---

Early in the morning, in the white fog, a bugle call filled the air and everybody on the military site could hear it.

In one tent, there was Lin Feng and he was wearing red armor which was the color of fresh blood.

He raised his head and looked in the horizon. He said to himself: “They have finally arrived.”

In the middle of the night, he had received the information that the troops of the Mo Yue Country were already fifty kilometers away, but they weren’t attacking. They were just setting up a campsite.

The troops of the Xue Yue Country couldn’t afford to neglect safety and they had sentinels making rounds and watching every single action performed by the troops from the Mo Yue Country. That bugle call, followed by the sounds of the war drums, probably meant the beginning of the war.

The sound was unceasing but there wasn’t the least bit of chaos inside the camp. Instead, everyone was extremely organized. The battle could start at any moment, it was impossible for the troops to panic because of that.

a few silhouettes appeared and were all wearing red armor in Lin Feng’s tent. Their faces were covered by their helmets but their expressions were sharp when looking towards Lin Feng.

“Follow me.” said Lin Feng indifferently. Immediately after, he left the tent and jumped on his dragon colt horse. The others also calmly jumped on their Chi Xie armored horses and followed him.

The other Chi Xie troops looked at Lin Feng and the people following him. There were about forty people. Their armor was an even bloodier red than the other soldiers to the extent that it was dazzling to the eye. It looked like the morning sun shining on a puddle of blood. Forty people wasn't enough to make a complete squad within the army either.

In the army, sergeants controlled a hundred people.

Lin Feng and the others galloped past them at full speed. A short time after, they arrived in a place where the two military factions were facing each other.

In front of Lin Feng, there was a vast black ocean of troops who were releasing a deadly Qi. They were the soldiers of the Mo Yue Country.

Before, Lin Feng had never seen a battlefield except on television in his previous life. When he saw it, intense feelings invaded his heart. In the middle of all these troops, one person was like a grain of sand.

These hundreds of thousands of people, if they all used a bow, they could kill a single opponent in a flash, even if they had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer.

On the battlefield, extremely strong cultivators were rare so relying on personal strength was too difficult. That's why Liu Cang Lan, back in the days, beheaded the leader of the enemy troops who was giving orders.

Amongst the troops of the Xue Yue Country, the left, right and middle troops were in perfect formation but the Chi Xie troops were dispersed across the army.

Concerning the Imperial City troops which followed Duan Tian Lang, they were in formation shoulder to shoulder with the middle troops.

Liu Cang Lan, Jiu Chi Xie and Ren Qing Kuang were at the very front of the troops.

“Brother Liu, the enemy is arriving and they look terrifyingly strong. It seems like they have over five hundred thousand troops. How are we supposed to cope with them?” asked Duan Tian Lang indifferently while galloping towards Liu Cang Lan.

“Duan Tian Lang, do you think that the prince of Mo Yue will directly attack us?” said Liu Cang Lan while turning his head around and looking at Duan Tian Lang. He sounded cold and indifferent. While two armies were facing each other, even if one was in numeral superiority, it was impossible for them to launch a direct attack. A war was about exchanging lives, even if they won, the result would be tragic. Considering the reputation of Mo Yue, it was impossible for them to launch such an attack.



“Brother Liu, you always understand the enemy properly before the beginning of the war. I admire that.” said Duan Tian Lang while smiling indifferently. “It’s just that there is a huge number of possibilities. What about the princess? She is amongst the troops right now. If something happens to her, who will bear the responsibility? I think that you should find a solution to win as soon as possible.”

“The princess came with you so it’s your duty to ensure her security.” said Liu Cang Lan while smiling coldly. The troops were going to engage in a close combat from morning to evening and Dan Tian Lang was asking Liu Cang Lan to find a solution to win as quickly as possible. Not only did he make him bear the responsibility for the battle but was also making him responsible for the security of the princess. That was ridiculous.

“Brother, how can you talk that way? This territory is yours, I am a guest. Since it’s that way, the princess’ safety is in your hands. Obviously, if you don’t care about that, you should remember that you took away the princess’ personal guard.” said Duan Tian Lang coldly while looking at Lin Feng.

“Duan Tian Lang, you are facing the enemy army and surprisingly you are still in the mood for boring conversations and refuse to assume your own responsibilities.” said Lin Feng while urging on his horse. Under his armor, his facial expression was extremely sharp, he then said: “If anything happens to the princess, I will die, but could it be that you are forgetting about your own responsibilities?”

When he finished talking, Lin Feng didn't wait for Duan Tian Lang to reply and immediately urged on his horse galloping towards Duan Xin Ye.

At that moment, Duan Xin Ye was also wearing armor but her beautiful eyes were not hidden by her helmet. In order to see, there was a slit for the eyes.

Behind Lin Feng was a group of people wearing bright red armor. Their faces were entirely covered except for their eyes which looked extremely sharp and cruel.

"What are you doing here?" asked Yue Tian Chen who was protecting Duan Xin Ya on her other side. When he saw Lin Feng, he looked vigilant and cold.

"That's none of your business." replied Lin Feng coldly. He then handed over a helmet to Duan Xin Ye and said: "Princess, that helmet will protect your face. It's better for you to wear it."

"Alright, thank you." said Duan Xin Ye while putting it on her head. In case of sudden attack, that helmet would be much safer for her.

"Lin Feng, you are my personal guard, stay here and protect Me." said Duan Xin Ye with a beautiful smile on her face. In case of danger, her face would be protected. At that moment, she was wearing the helmet so only her beautiful eyes were visible. On the back of her horse, she looked majestic and heroic.

Lin Feng was surprised and immediately nodded: “Alright.”

Yue Tian Chen stared at Lin Feng in an ice-cold way but Lin Feng ignored him and gazed at the boundless distance.

Suddenly, the army of the enemy appeared. Many people were mounted within the enemy army. A cloud of dust filled the air. They were about a kilometer away from the Xue Yue army when they stopped.

“We are the black guards of the Mo Yue Country. Thirty-six people, who dares to fight us?” said a loud and deep voice. The black guards of the Mo Yue Country were like the Chi Xie troops in Xue Yue. They were the elite soldiers.

Jiu Chi Xie looked calm when he saw them and said sounding indifferent he said: “Don’t fight.”

The Chi Xie troops looked expressionless. They had no particular feeling. Orders were like mountains. They only obeyed orders and were never swayed away by their personal feelings.

“Don’t fight?” said Duan Tian Lang while smiling coldly. He raised his head and said arrogantly: “The Chi Xie troops are the elite forces of the Xue Yue Country and today we are at war, surprisingly you said we’re not fighting... Why are you ruining the troops’ mood, what is your purpose?”

“Duan Tian Lang, if you want to fight, then send your own

troops.” replied Jiu Chi Xie coldly while glancing at Duan Tian Lang. The black guards were all outstanding. Not a single person was weak. Powerful Qi was emerging from their bodies. No wonder that they were elite troops.

“So that’s how the Chi Xie troops are! What a band of scoundrels. Even though I am not talented, I will also not move back!” shouted Duan Tian Lang in an extremely loud voice so that everyone could hear him. In a flash, Duan Tian Lang moved all of his troops forward. Every day, he found the Chi Xie troops more and more disappointing. First, they hadn’t opened the city gate for him and at that moment they didn’t dare fight. Liu Cang Lan didn’t deserve his nickname “The Divine Arrow”.

“Amongst the people of the Celestial Academy, who is willing to fight? I can send out thirty five elite troops and let you lead the battle.” said Duan Tian Lang while galloping towards the students of the Celestial Academy. “Of course, if none of you wants to fight, I will send someone from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.”

“I want to fight.” said someone at that moment amongst the people of the Celestial Academy. A young man came out and energy was emerging from his body.

“Alright. Students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and of the Celestial Academy are all outstanding disciples in the Xue Yue Country. Thirty five elite disciples, come out and go fight along with that young man. Show them how majestic and prestigious our country is.” said Duan Tian Lang heroically.

“How strong are these black guards?” asked Lin Feng with a

subtle question.

“Thirty six people, the weakest ones are at the third Ling Qi layer, ten of them are of the fourth Ling Qi layer, six of them at the fifth Ling Qi layer, two at the sixth one and one at the seventh.” said Ba Dao in a low voice.

Lin Feng was astonished. These black guards were strong. The weakest were at the third Ling Qi layer. They were very strong. Surprisingly, there was even one at the seventh Ling Qi layer who alone could defeat a hundred Chi Xie troops. Jiu Chi Xie had chosen not to fight, he obviously had a good reason.

The Mo Yue Country had directly sent such an elite formation of soldiers, this was a tactic of war.

At that moment, the thirty six people were already leaving, Lin Feng saw the Qi that students of the Celestial Academy were releasing and said: “You cannot join the fight, you will all die.”

“Huh?” said a young man while frowning and looking at Lin Feng. He then immediately replied: “Lin Feng, you and me are both military students, I thought that you were hot blooded like me. I wouldn’t have thought that you would be a coward.”

When he finished talking, that young man immediately galloped towards the black guards.

When these black guards saw the Xue Yue people arrive, they

firmly held their spears. When the Xue Yue cultivators arrived in front of them, they released a powerful Qi and they all threw their spears which flew through the air at incredible speeds.

At that moment, there were horses chaotically running around and neighing. The spears had all reached their destination: the hearts of the thirty six Xue Yue cultivators. Thirty six strong and famous Xue Yue cultivators had just met a violent death.

One spear had been enough.

Lin Feng looked expressionless. He had warned them, but they hadn't listened to him. What else could he do?

The thirty-six black guards took back their spears, went back in formation and shouted: "The Black Guards invite the Xue Yue Chi Xie troops come and fight."

## Chapter 203: The Celestial Sword Unit

---

The Xue Yue army was silently looking at that row of black guards. They were astonished.

These thirty six black guards were incredibly strong. These black guards and their spears were proud and despised the Xue Yue army. They could kill people with a simple toss of their weapons.

When they heard the invitation of the black guards, the Xue Yue army remained silent.

“Glorious deaths, they deserve respect. Not all the students of the Celestial Academy are cowards who don’t dare fight.” said Duan Tian Lang in a low voice. Then, sounding inspiring, he said: “Amongst the geniuses of the Celestial Academy, who is willing to go and avenge your fellow students?”

“Cowards who don’t dare fight?” Lin Feng obviously understood whom Duan Tian Lang was talking about. Everybody did.

“As you said, we are bound by a common hatred for the enemy. The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and the Celestial Academy are fighting as brothers. I heard that your son, Duan Han, is an outstanding genius. He has also come to the battlefield to acquire practical experience. I would like to invite Duan Han to regain our countries prestige, as our country has just been humiliated.” Said Lin Feng.

“Let Duan Han go and accomplish the heroic deed.” said a person

behind Lin Feng extremely loudly.

“Let Duan Han go and become a hero.” shouted a person in the middle of Chi Xie troops. These voices were deafening to Duan Han’s ears.

Duan Han and his father were staring at Lin Feng. How cruel and sly. They had almost forgotten their original evil and malicious intentions.

“You just said, a moment ago, that dying on the battlefield was a glorious death, worthy of respect. Duan Han is not a coward, he is extremely powerful. He would not be scared and turn down a fight. No matter what the result of the battle is, it doesn’t matter, it is glorious and worthy of respect. Therefore, I want to invite, Duan Han to fight for his country.” said Lin Feng firmly.

“Let Duan Han go and fight.” said another voice extremely loudly. Duan Tian Lang was fixedly and coldly staring at Lin Feng. That bastard was putting him in a situation which he could not get himself out of.

“If I want to fight, I can decide myself, what is the point in putting so much pressure on others?” shouted Duan Han to Lin Feng loudly enough so that everybody could hear him clearly.

“Shut up.”

When Duan Han finished talking, Lin Feng shouted even louder:



“You and your father are really shameless. I put pressure on you to go and fight? You don’t even dare fight. Since the beginning, you have only sent students of the Celestial Academy to fight because you want them all to die.”

Lin Feng was surprisingly verbally attacking Duan Tian Lang and his son in the presence of all the troops. Everybody was stupefied but the students of the Celestial Academy, who were initially not reacting, narrowed their eyes. They became aware of how malicious and sly Duan Tian Lang was being.

“Lin Feng, do you know to whom you are talking?” said Duan Tian Lang sounding extremely evil. He was the chief commander of all the army and Lin Feng surprisingly dared humiliate him.

“I am not under the authority of the chief commander.” said Lin Feng coldly.

Duan Tian Lang wanted to speak but suddenly a cold voice spread: “Duan Tian Lang, I let you enter the city for you to help us fight against the enemy, not for you to cause trouble here and act childishly.” It was obviously Liu Cang Lan. Immediately after, he looked at Lin Feng and said: “You contradicted Chief Commander Duan Tian Lang and that is an offense. You go fight and atone for your crime with military accomplishments.”

“Roger, General.” nodded Lin Feng solemnly and respectfully. Immediately after, he looked in front of him and started galloping at full speed on the back of his dragon colt horse. He was closely followed by more than thirty fighters wearing blood red armor. A cloud of dust rose around them.

When the black guards saw Lin Feng and the others approach, they threw their spears at terrifying speeds which emitted whistling sounds as they pierced through the air. Powerful Qi was emerging from their spears. The sounds of the spears piercing through the air spread across the battlefield.

“Break!” said Lin Feng at that moment. Immediately after, all the fighters surrounding him took out weapons which diffused a resplendent glow and cut the spears down.

“Psshhh... pshhh.”

The crowd only saw that these spears which were moving towards Lin Feng and all the others at full speed had just been broken and some had been split midair.

“What’s going on?”

Everybody was shocked. How was that possible? Even though Lin Feng and his fighters were stronger than the opponents, it wasn’t possible for them to be able to break those spears so easily.

“What sharp weapons!” The crowd was looking at the weapons Lin Feng and the fighters were holding in their hands, they were extremely sharp.

“Go!” After Lin Feng said that word, they galloped towards the opponents at full speed and in the blink of an eye, blood splashed

high into the air and the sound of cutting flesh followed by horses neighing filled the air.

Ba Dao's blade moved through the air and released tyrannical blade energy. His strength of the sixth Ling Qi layer meant death for all the black guards.

Lin Feng's long sword was dazzling as he attacked the leader of the black guards, who was at the seventh Qi layer.

His sword twinkled and immediately pierced through the atmosphere releasing an insane amount of deadly energy.

In the blink of an eye, half of the black guards were dead and many of them were injured.

"Block!" the leader of the black guards blocked Lin Feng's sword while his face turned deathly pale. Since when were there such strong cultivators recruited into the Chi Xie troops?

Invincible.

In the middle of the fight, the black guards suddenly started turning around and insanely urging their horses to retreat. The whole Xue Yue army was dumbstruck.

"Kill!" said Lin Feng. Everybody understood clearly, they all readied their weapons as they caught up with the black guards and gave them a bloody, violent death.

Lin Feng on his dragon colt horse and the others on their Chi Xie armored horses continued chasing the remaining black guards who were still trying to escape.

At that moment, a strong and robust silhouette jumped from his Chi Xie armored horse, roared loudly and stamped onto the ground. A huge crater appeared in the earth under the black guards making them all collapse into the crater, unable to escape.

“Break.”

The leader of the black guards grabbed his second spear and thrust it into the wall of the crater. A loud rumble filled the air, the ground was shaking. A hole had appeared in the wall where the spear landed. The chief of the black guards wanted to escape through that hole.

“Stay there!”

Immediately, vines appeared and wrapped around the black guards constricting their bodies and making them unable to move.

“Tyrannical blade.”

In the air appeared an illusionary blade which immediately cut downwards. Many of the black guards were struck.

“In the blink of an eye, only one of the black guard remained: their leader at the seventh Ling Qi layer.

Since the beginning of the fight, only the time of one deep breath had elapsed.

“Arghhh...” shouted the leader of the black guards. His spear seemed incredibly powerful. He jumped off his horse and his body flew into the air.

Lin Feng looked calm and solemn. He actually gave his own helmet to Duan Xin Ye, so he hadn't been wearing one himself. His handsome face was visible and his long hair was fluttered with the wind.

His body slightly urged his horse on. Immediately after, he jumped into the air. At that moment, an incredible amount of battle energy was burning all around his body. In the sky, an illusionary black sword appeared, a deadly yet divine sword.

“You attacked my comrades which is a crime, I must kill you.” said Lin Feng in a solemn and calm tone. His body was still in the air. He took a deep breath and his deadly black sword fell from the sky.

“Psshhh...”

The black sword illusion fell down from the sky and cut the body of the black guard leader down the middle and his body split into

two pieces. He didn't even have the time to let out a horrible shriek, he was just silently cut into two.

“Boom boom boom boom boom....” That attack had been so incredible that everybody's heart was pounding loudly in their chests.

An illusionary sword in the air had cut the black guard's leader into two.

How powerful.

Besides, the one who had launched that attack was still a young man. At that moment, that handsome young man jumped back onto his horse and calmly returned to the army. The entire army was looking at him and were frantically trying to get a better look, they wanted to see that young man more clearly.

“Woow.” the sky was shaking. The Chi Xie troops' hearts were filled with burning enthusiasm.

It had been a long time since they had had that feeling. They hadn't thought that such a young man could awake such feelings in their hearts.

Jiu Chi Xie smiled indifferently. He calmly looked at Liu Cang Lan and said: “General, I see your image in him.”

Liu Cang Lan turned his head and smiled back at Jiu Chi Xie.

“I haven’t seen you smile in a long time.” said Liu Cang Lan and then turned around. The Mo Yue army was surprisingly turning around and retreating. They had come for power and prestige but had to move back because of Lin Feng.

“I am not as gifted as him.” said Liu Cang Lan discreetly to Jiu Chi Xie which made him shiver. Immediately after, he smiled again. Lin Feng’s spirit was stronger and he had a higher natural talent as well.

Lin Feng calmly returned to Duan Xin Ye’s side as she took off her helmet. Her long and delicate fingers moved her hair aside and looked at Lin Feng with a huge smile on her face. Lin Feng was bewitched, her smile was truly enchanting.

Only Duan Tian Lang and his son had hideous expressions on their faces, especially Duan Han. Back in the days, he used to think that he was better than Lin Feng. At that moment though, he was weaker than Lin Feng and far from being able to catch up with his level of strength.

“Lin Feng.” said Liu Cang Lan in a loud voice.

“General.” replied Lin Feng.

“You are now a Lieutenant. You are now in charge of your own Chi Xie unit called The Celestial Sword and you are directly under Jiu Chi Xie.”

With the military merits of slaughtering the black guards and forcing the enemy army to retreat, Liu Cang Lan obviously had enough to grant Lin Feng a Lieutenant position. Lin Feng had just displayed how great his power was. Nobody was going to have any objections.

“Lin Feng gratefully accepts.”



# Chapter 204: Assassin!

---

Lin Feng galloped towards Jiu Chi Xie and said with a respectful tone: “Officer!”

“Lin Feng, your tent is still in the same place. Now you are a Lieutenant so feel at ease within the Chi Xie troops. You can do as you wish with the soldiers. If there is any danger, you can handle it as you wish, but I want these two back when you are done. If they leave, I’m losing two lieutenants.” said Jiu Chi Xie while pointing at Han Man and Po Jun who were behind Lin Feng.

“Officer, does this mean we can join the Celestial Sword unit?” said Han Man while looking excited. If he could work with Lin Feng, he wouldn’t care about his lieutenant status and would follow Lin Feng’s orders.

“No, return to your units now.” said Jiu Chi Xie. Han Man and Po Jun smiled wryly and said: “Roger, Officer.”

After saying that, they smiled wryly while looking at Lin Feng and immediately went back to their units.

“Lin Feng, these two guys, I still need them. Sooner or later, they will be under your command.” said Jiu Chi Xie with a mysterious tone. Immediately after, he added: “You can go now.”

“Alright.” said Lin Feng while slightly nodding and moved aside.

“Lin Feng.” at that moment, a clear and distinct voice emerged. Lin Feng turned around and saw Duan Xin Ye waving to him.

“You guys can wait for me here.” said Lin Feng to Ba Dao and the others. Immediately after, he went towards the princess and asked: “What’s the problem?”

“There must be a problem in order for me to speak with you? You are my personal guard.” said Duan Xin Ye while giving a sweet smile towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng didn’t know how to reply.

“Lin Feng, come with me to my tent. Qiu Cao will make us some tea and we can talk for a while.” said Duan Xin Ye. Lin Feng remained silent.

“You don’t feel like it? Well, forget about it then. You can leave.” said Duan Xin Ye when she saw that Lin Feng remained silent. She looked disappointed, yet tried to smile.

Lin Feng turned his horse around. Duan Xin Ye nibbled on her lip and a bitter feeling invaded her heart. Usually, it was young men who would always chase her but she always rejected them. She didn’t even look at the handsome young men in the city. However, she was interested in Lin Feng, that frivolous and unrestrained young man. She started to have feelings for him. She had finally gathered the courage to invite him and he rejected her like she did with all the noble young men before.

“You guys can go back to the tent without me.” said Lin Feng which reached Duan Xin Ye’s ears. She then saw him turn around.

A sweet and soft smile appeared on her face. Her grief turned into happiness.

Initially, Lin Feng didn't refuse her offer, he was just ordering his troops to go back.

"Princess." said Lin Feng while moving back to Duan Xin Ye.

"Let's go."

Duan Xin Ye's hair was floating on the wind while the horse galloped. At that moment, many people were following her. Lin Feng also closely followed alongside her and hadn't noticed that some people were evilly looking at the couple.

"Hmph." groaned a someone near Liu Cang Lan. Liu Cang Lan was stupefied. He then looked at the angered person and said: "Fei Fei, you have to handle things like this properly."

"Handle what properly?" said Liu Fei while gnashing her teeth. Immediately after, she left. She was secretly cursing at Lin Feng in her heart. What a pervert!

"General, it seems like Princess Duan Xin Ye is interested in Lin Feng. She'll become Fei Fei's rival in the future." said Jiu Chi Xie in a low voice. These older men were slightly angry at the princess. They noticed that Duan Xin Ye didn't look at Lin Feng the same way she looked at other people.

Duan Xin Ye always smiled at people in a friendly manner, but when she smiled to Lin Feng, it was more than that, it was soft, sweet and tender.

The first awakening of love, tender feelings like water... girls couldn't hide such feelings. Everybody could see them in their facial expression, just like Liu Fei.

Liu Cang Lan smiled wryly and shook his head. He then quietly looked at the silhouette leaving. The silhouette was wearing armor, but he didn't forget that underneath they were still holy and pure. As before, he was amazed.

.....

Duan Xin Ye's tent was tastefully furnished. It wasn't luxurious but it was clean and tidy; which made it easy to set one's mind at ease and feel relaxed.

At that moment, Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye were sitting on the floor by a hardwood table.

“Princess, Master Lin, tea is ready.”

Qiu Cao arrived in front Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng and served them some tea.

Lin Feng hastily took his cup of tea while smiling and said: “Girl, there is no need to stick with such formalities.”

Lin Feng wasn't used to being served by someone else.

"Master Lin, you are the Princess' guest, this is my duty." said the servant while smiling. She had two dimples appear on her cheeks when she smiled, she was extremely cute. She was very young, about fifteen years old.

Lin Feng was only smiling, but didn't say anything. Actually, Qiu Cao was also a slave. She was already very lucky to be able to work for the Princess. Besides, Duan Xin Ye seemed to treat her well. Qiu Cao respected Duan Xin Ye but didn't fear her. Duan Xin Ye was the farthest thing from a cruel person.

"Princess, the battlefield is such a dangerous place, why did you need to come here?" asked Lin Feng who didn't understand why Duan Xin Ye was there. What was the point of having the princess on the battlefield?

"I've spent too much time in the Imperial Palace. I was breathing the same stuffy air every single day, so thought that I had to see something else and decided to come and see the brave and courageous soldiers on the battlefield." said Duan Xin Ye in a soft voice while smiling. Many people were dreaming of living in the Imperial Palace, but those who really lived in it had the feeling that it was like a prison and needed to see the outside world.

"Lin Feng, do you like the zither?" suddenly asked Duan Xin Ye. Lin Feng slightly nodded and said: "I do."

“I will play the zither for you.” when Duan Xin Ye saw that Lin Feng nodded, she smiled and looked excited. At that moment, Qiu Cao went and picked up an ancient zither. She cleaned the table and put the zither on the spotless table. It was a very cozy feeling.

Duan Xin Ye was smiling, she put both of her hands on the zither and started playing slowly.

Lin Feng was looked at Duan Xin Ye. She was beautiful, graceful and elegant. Once in awhile, she would raise her head and smile. That smile was enchanting. Regardless of social status, her beauty and elegance sufficed to make any normal man go crazy.

No wonder every single noble young man hoped to marry the princess. Such a beautiful woman, who on top of that had the status of princess and possessed a powerful blood spirit, she could tempt most men.

Duan Xin Ye started playing a melody which made Lin Feng imagine a calm stream running through a bamboo forest.

Zither connoisseurs could easily tell what kind of personality and temperament a person had when they listened to them playing the zither. She was as cool as a mountain stream, like an orchid in the middle of a peaceful mountain.

Lin Feng slowly closed his eyes and calmly listened to the wonderful music. He was feeling happy. Being with Duan Xin Ye, he didn't feel like he needed to be cautious, he could relax. He felt joyful in his heart.

Duan Xin Ye, once in awhile, was raising her head to look at Lin Feng. When she saw that Lin Feng was closing his eyes and seemed to be completely relaxed, the smile on her face was becoming sweeter and sweeter.

Inside the tent, the atmosphere was calm and peaceful. Only the sound of the zither filled the air.

But at that moment, Lin Feng, who was firmly closing his eyes while listening to the music, suddenly had a strange sensation.

He suddenly opened his eyes. His eyes were completely black and expressionless. The world around him had become slow and he was now within his world of darkness. Without the slightest hesitation, he grabbed a dagger and slashed through the air.

“Kacha!”

His dagger ended up cutting an arrow down mid air, which passed near Lin Feng’s cheek.

A strong wind was blowing against the tent and raised its heavy curtains. Immediately after, a silhouette flickered through the air like an illusion. Lin Feng could feel the danger incoming.

Lin Feng raised his dagger again as he could feel a sword moving towards him. Lin Feng moved his dagger towards the illusionary figure, but it had no effect.

“Pssshh.. pshhh..” Lin Feng’s dagger arrived at the enemy’s chest, but what shocked him was the opponent used his right hand to block Lin Feng’s and used his left hand to throw an extremely sharp arrow towards the princess behind Lin Feng.

The entire situation happened at the speed of lightning. Even though the opponent didn’t care about his own life, they were determined to kill the princess before they died.

“An assassin.”

Lin Feng’s heart was pounding. The opponent’s arrow which he had thrown was much too quick. It had almost reached its destination and Lin Feng was unable to stop it.

...and if he didn’t block it, Princess Duan Xin Ye would definitely die.

That assassin was at the fifth Ling Qi layer. That sword was extremely brutal and the assassin was determined to exchange their life for the princess’ life.



# Chapter 205: The Prologue of Battle

---

“Eight strikes of desolation.” Without hesitating, Lin Feng launched his Eight Strikes of Desolation but it only caused the arrow to deviate slightly.

As if Lin Feng had anticipated this, he raised his hand at the speed of lightning and launched his Qi forward to block the arrow.

“Pshh... pshhh...” Lin Feng’s Qi only barely struck against the arrow to slow it, but the arrow still pierced through it.

“Xin Ye, DODGE!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. Lin Feng’s sword was still in the opponent’s chest. Lin Feng released an incredible amount of sword energy inside the assassin’s body. The assassin met a terrifyingly brutal death.

“Pshhh....” Lin Feng turned around and his face turned deathly pale. He only barely saw the arrow penetrate into flesh!

But it wasn’t the princess at all, it was Qiu Cao. A moment before, Qiu Cao had thrown herself in front of Duan Xin Ye in order to protect her.

“Qiu Cao!” shouted Duan Xin Ye with a sorrowful scream. After that, a hole appeared in the roof of the tent and vines descended from the sky, grabbed Duan Xin Ye’s body and lifted her into the air.

“She is staying here!” shouted Lin Feng. He jumped up in the air and slashed out with the Qi from his long sword.

At the same time, another silhouette fell from the sky. A long blade struck against the sword Qi of Lin Feng and destroyed it.

Duan Xin Ye’s silhouette, in the blink of eye, disappeared from the tent and was taken away by the vines.

Lin Feng was astonished. His face was deathly pale. What a skilful attack. Besides, even the weakest person was at the fifth Ling Qi layer. Lin Feng alone couldn’t block all of them.

An endless Qi suddenly emerged from Lin Feng’s sword and it was followed by a horrible shriek. The energy from the opponent’s sword was completely dispersed. Lin Feng was furious and launched a lethal, unavoidable attack at the opponent.

“BOOM!”

The sword Qi caused the tent to explode into small pieces. Lin Feng looked around at his surroundings. He looked furious.

When Lin Feng saw the opponents attempting to escape, he immediately jumped up into the air in pursuit, but at that moment a fist struck his face, sending him backwards.

“Get out of my way!” shouted Lin Feng extremely loudly when he saw the armoured person blocking his way. Lin Feng had been

pushed back to the tent by that powerful strike to his face.

“How is Her Majesty, the princess?” asked the person while looking at the tent.

When that person saw that Lin Feng wasn't replying, they continued: “What have you done to the princess?”

Lin Feng had the sensation that the assassins were already close to escaping. He had no time for useless conversations. He moved forwards and brandished his sword.

“Hmph.” The armoured person smiled coldly and shouted: “Arrows ready!”

When they finished talking, a group of silhouettes suddenly came into vision and raised their bows. They were all aiming at Lin Feng. At that moment, a sharp force rushed towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng's facial expression changed, he knew that he was trapped. He quickly retreated and asked the armoured person: “Was it you?”

That person ignored Lin Feng's question and shouted in an extremely cold voice: “What have you done to the princess?”

When he finished talking, he took a step towards the half-destroyed tent. He then saw that there was only a female's corpse however it was not the princess instead it was Cao Qiu. Obviously,

the princess wasn't there anymore.

“Hand over the princess!” shouted the armoured person. His facial expression was extremely sharp. He slightly raised his hand and at that moment, the myriad of silhouettes pulled back the string of their bows ready to fire towards Lin Feng at any moment.

Lin Feng suddenly smiled and laughed insolently. His two dark and expressionless eyes were staring at that person and he said in an ice-cold tone: “Not only do you plan to assassinate the princess but you also want to make up false charges against me, in order to kill me?”

“I don't understand what you're saying.” said the person while staring at Lin Feng in a cold and indifferent way. He then said: “How dare you mention the princess' life and your own life in the same sentence? You're thinking too highly of yourself.”

“Even though your status of lieutenant was granted to you by Liu Cang Lan, today, you killed the princess' servant and helped kidnap the princess. If you don't provide explanations, you will die here.”

Lin Feng was smiling coldly. How could he explain things clearly?

At the moment when the princess was being kidnapped, they were all waiting close to the tent, how could they have not seen the kidnappers escaping? Besides, at the moment when Lin Feng was chasing the kidnappers, they had intercepted Lin Feng and stopped

his pursuit. Of course, they had prepared this because they wanted to take Lin Feng's life.

The fact that Lin Feng had killed the princess' servant and kidnapped the princess spread very quickly amongst the troops.

An incredible amount of people were heading towards the princess' wrecked tent. In the blink of an eye, the situation became chaotic. Duan Tian Lang had also come once he heard the news.

"Lin Feng, the princess was kind to you, you are her personal guard and surprisingly you dare commit such a crime, now, tell us where the princess is!" shouted Duan Tian Lang while staring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng couldn't provide an explanation.

Even if Lin Feng provided an explanation, nobody was going to believe him. Duan Tian Lang and the others had already declared him as an offender.

As far as they were concerned, Lin Feng was the one who had killed Qiu Cao and kidnapped the princess.

At that moment, Lin Feng wasn't sure if Duan Tian Lang was responsible or it was another person within the military.

"Duan Tian Lang, are you not the person at the origin of this?" said Lin Feng coldly. If it was really Duan Tian Lang, that was

really too shameless. The first arrow was actually aimed at Princess Duan Xin Ye, if Lin Feng hadn't done his best to intercept it, Duan Xin Ye would have died.

“You will never stop until you're dead.” shouted Duan Tian Lang in an ice-cold tone. He then immediately continued: “I will give you some time to think, if you don't tell where the princess is, I will kill you as punishment.” When he finished talking, he lit an oil lamp and then a deadly energy emerged from his body as he moved towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked cold and indifferent. A murderous light flashed in his eyes.

If Duan Tian Lang was really at the origin of this, this was a good opportunity. Why wasn't he killing him on the spot though and provided him with time to think about giving him an answer?

This short time was enough for the news to spread to Liu Cang Lan and for him to quickly rush to the location.

Lin Feng didn't understand Duan Tian Lang's intentions.

Lin Feng, however, could not determine whether the princess was still alive or not.

He wanted to go and look for Duan Xin Ye instead of wasting time here, after all, she had been kidnapped and he was responsible for protecting her.

However, considering the number of arrows aiming at him and the incredibly strong soldiers surrounding him, rushing to save her would have been idiotic. His life was currently in danger.

He slowly turned around and saw that the oil lamp would soon burn out.

The ground started to shake. An incredible number of horses rushed towards the campsite. The tent was completely surrounded by soldiers in an instant.

“Duan Tian Lang, do you think that you can act as you please here?”

At that moment, a voice spread through the atmosphere. Liu Cang Lan appeared in the air with his bow on his back. Behind him, the officer of the Chi Xie troops, Jiu Chi Xie, was closely following. He immediately moved next to Lin Feng and ignored everybody else.

“Liu Cang Lan, Lin Feng plotted against the princess and did not protect her. She is nowhere to be found. Why do you choose to side with him? What evil intentions are you harbouring?” said Duan Tian Lang

“I don’t care who kidnapped the princess but since such a short time has passed, looking for the princess within the campsite would be the best solution rather than wasting time here. She would not have been able to leave the camp. However, you have

brought all of your soldiers here and created a chaotic environment and spread rumours. How does that affect the morale for our army? You wouldn't be doing this on purpose to cause harm to Lin Feng?"

Liu Cang Lan's words surprised Lin Feng. As expected, Liu Cang Lan was very experienced and proved he clearly understood the most important aspects of the situation.

Duan Tian Lang was an aristocrat and the chief commander. How could he not understand what was most important in this situation? In such a situation, the most important thing was to immediately search for the missing princess and it was not use his army to trap Lin Feng in an attempt to punish him. The fact that he had given Lin Feng some time seemed to have something to do with Liu Cang Lan.

"I obviously understand that, but I have given him the time it takes for an oil lamp to burn yet Lin Feng still cannot tell us where the princess is. Liu Cang Lan, you are a general, punishing Lin Feng is your duty but instead, you are siding with a criminal. If you don't move out of the way then do not blame me for not showing mercy." said Duan Tian Lang in a calm and respectful tone as if he held friendly feelings towards Liu Cang Lan and did not want to fight.

A smile appeared on Liu Cang Lan's face as he said: "Inviting you to come here to fight our common enemy was a huge mistake. Duan Tian Lang, you are a traitor!"

"Chi Xie armored cavalry, are you there?" shouted Liu Cang Lan



furiously.

“We are!” The atmosphere suddenly filled with the shouts of Chi Xie armored cavalry. The Chi Xie horses neighed and the atmosphere was filled with a deadly Qi.

Duan Tian Lang's troops were chaotic and their morale was unstable.

“Liu Cang Lan collaborates with Lin Feng, a criminal who has kidnapped the princess. He is clearly a traitor! They both deserve the death sentence by law, kill them!”

Duan Tian Lang then shouted coldly: “Release your arrows!”

When Duan Tian Lang finished talking, an endless sea of arrows spread through the air towards Liu Cang Lan and Lin Feng. Duan Tian Lang had actually given his army the order to kill them.

“Kill them all!” shouted Jiu Chi Xie who started galloping towards the army while shooting powerful arrows from his bow. Immediately, soldiers started giving horrible shrieks of pain. They all came from the soldiers who were surrounded by the Chi Xie armored cavalry. The Chi Xie armored cavalry were mercilessly slaughtering those soldiers.

Duan Tian Lang had attempted to kill General Liu Cang Lan. The Chi Xie armored cavalry troops were furious.

The Chi Xie troops had already killed a large number of Duan Tian Lang's troops. Duan Tian Lang was furious.

In the blink of an eye a civil war had begun.

Everybody was filled with cold killing intent.

What was going on? How could such a situation come about?

It was because of Lin Feng. Nobody could control the situation any longer. Soldiers from the same army were fighting against each other and dying.

It was as if everything had already been planned since the moment when Lin Feng entered the princess' tent, as if they were doomed from that moment.

In the distance, a bugle call could be heard but most of the Xue Yue troop could barely hear it. At that moment, Liu Cang Lan and Lin Feng's faces turned deathly pale.

The scariest thing about that bugle call was that it came from the Mo Yue Country army, which was moving towards them to launch an attack.

## Chapter 206: The Calamity

---

“Duan Tian Lang, order your troops to stand down.” shouted Liu Cang Lan while stretching his hand and breaking an arrow in front of him. He was furious.

If the Mo Yue country army had launched an attack, they were not prepared to fight, it would even lead to a crushing defeat. At that moment, he could just hope that the troops would stop fighting against each other and the army could focus on Mo Yue Country.

“Stand down? Liu Cang Lan, you are a traitor and attempted to collaborate with someone who assassinated the princess. Even if I am not strong enough, I will fight you to the death.” said Duan Tian Lang in an ice-cold tone.

Liu Cang Lan had a cold sweat dripping down his back.

Duan Tian Lang was completely shameless, he was ready to let tens of thousands die.

Liu Cang Lan jumped up in the air. He shouted furiously: “All the troops of the Xue Yue Country, stop fighting each other and fight against the real enemy, otherwise we will all be buried here!”

“Whoosh..” at that moment, a whistling sound spread through the air. An arrow was hurtling towards Liu Cang Lan at full speed.

“Duan Tian Lang, you traitor!” shouted Liu Cang Lan furiously. He raised his hand and disintegrated the arrow into powder. His body was descending while taking Lin Feng with him at the same time and he shouted: “All the troops of Xue Yue, listen to my orders! Retreat to the Duan Ren Border!” Liu Cang Lan was well aware of the situation. The troops were already in total disorder. They would never be able to resist an enemy attacking them.

“Chi Xie troops, listen to the orders! Retreat to the Duan Ren Border!” shouted Jiu Chi Xie furiously. The horses started galloping in a mad retreat. They didn’t continue fighting and immediately retreated to the Duan Ren Border.

“Whoosh whoosh whoosh....” Horrifying whistling sounds filled the air. Liu Cang Lan raised his head and looked at the sky, his face turned deathly pale as the blood drained from his face.

In the sky, there was a cloud of arrows ready to rain destruction. There were so many arrows that the sky could no longer be seen. The area was completely covered with arrows.

In a flash, Liu Cang Lan noticed that the entire area had turned dark and the cloud of arrows was falling towards them.

Loud mournful cries and horrible shrieks filled the atmosphere. That moment seemed like the doomsday for the Xue Yue Country.

Lin Feng grabbed his sword and raised it in the air. It was dazzling to the eyes and resplendent. When the arrows came into contact with the sword, they were pulverized into dust.

The arrows continued falling from the sky for a full 10 breaths of time. The sky was visible again but at that moment, the tents of the Xue Yue campsite were completely destroyed and countless corpses were lying down on the ground.

“Retreat!”

“Retreat!”

The soldiers were going insane. Many people were shouting to retreat. If they retreated to Duan Ren Border, there would still be some hope.

” Whoosh whoosh whoosh....”

The sky turned black again. Arrows filled the sky and started to descend upon them again.

As before, horrible shrieks endlessly spread throughout the camp. At that moment, horses were galloping at full speed which made the ground shake. It seemed like death was galloping towards the troops of Xue Yue. The armored horses of Mo Yue, after two arrow volleys, were already galloping towards them to launch an attack.

Lin Feng looked at the ground and saw the blood of his dragon-colt horse. Lin Feng grabbed his sword and didn't move backwards, instead he moved towards the armored horses of Mo

Yue.

“Die!” When the soldiers on their armored horses saw that Lin Feng wasn’t retreating, they rushed towards him with killing intent while raising their spears.

Lin Feng’s sword was quiet, dazzling and ice-cold.

The cold and resplendent flow emitted by the sword seemed like it could cover the entire country.

The cavalry which were charging towards him were suddenly cut into two pieces. The upper half was flying through the air and the lower half remained on horseback.

“Deadly sword.” Lin Feng’s expression was ice-cold. Then, his expressionless and dark eyes could be seen. Lin Feng continued to kill the enemies which rushed towards him. The cavalry was being massacred.

Lin Feng continued moving forwards, attacking large groups of enemies with his sword.

One sword swing and a dozen enemies would die.

But at that moment, Lin Feng was already completely surrounded by the enemy troops. They weren’t moving towards him at full speed anymore in small groups. They all raised their spears towards him. Immediately after, they all charged towards Lin

Feng. If they all attacked him, Lin Feng would certainly die.

The terrifying force emanating from Lin Feng's deadly sword was enveloping the enemies causing them all to feel an immense fear. They all had a cold sweat running down their backs.

"Lonely... sword." Lin Feng's body spun at full speed as he attacked enemies in every direction. Every person touched by his sword would meet an incredibly violent death. A single attack was enough to kill dozens of soldiers where they stood.

While meeting his enemies face to face, a brave and courageous cultivator would always win.

Lin Feng jumped into the air and landed on a horse. He released a cold sharp energy into the atmosphere. In the blink of an eye, the horse quickly became docile. Lin Feng cut off its reins and galloped forward at full speed.

His sword was emitting a radiant glow. A single strike would mean death. Lin Feng was a single mounted soldier cutting his way through the enemy army like an invincible war god.

Duan Ren Border was only about five kilometres away from where the soldiers were stationed. Even though it was a very short distance, the landscape had turned into a bloody hell, there were countless corpses which now decorated the landscape.

There were three thousand archers situated above the Duan Ren

Border. They were all the most elite archers. Each time they saw the Mo Yue troops approach, they filled the sky with their arrows. The passage leading to the Duan Ren Border was narrow and could only accommodate a few people. Even if they tried to hide from the arrows they would not have anywhere to hide, this is why the Mo Yue troops didn't dare enter. They did not know how to avoid the arrows raining down on them.

Another reason why the Mo Yue troops would not enter the narrow passage is that there was a man blocking the passageway. If that man guards the pass, ten thousand soldiers cannot get through. That man was Liu Cang Lan, the Divine Arrow. The Xue Yue troops could only stay behind him or climb on up the cliffs of the Duan Ren Border, waiting for the enemy.

If the Mo Yue troops arrived, Liu Cang Lan would inevitably kill them.

Liu Cang Lan's arrows never missed its target and his arrows were always deadly.

While looking at the Xue Yue troops being massacred on the horizon, Liu Cang Lan had the feeling that his heart was being stabbed.

Lin Feng arrived in front of Liu Cang Lan on his new horse, he immediately got down and stood to Liu Cang Lan's side. He was calmly looking at the countless deaths on the horizon.

These troops were all dying because of Duan Tian Lang's grudge



against Lin Feng.

“Duan Tian Lang.”

Lin Feng felt an uncontrollable killing intent towards Duan Tian Lang. A few hundred thousand lives would be lost, what did that mean to Duan Tian Lang? Nothing.

Why did Duan Tian Lang act in such a way? Because he had caused such a large distraction within the encampment and refused to stop the fight, he had given the Mo Yue Country an opportunity to attack.

Besides, it seemed like Mo Yue knew about chaos and came to seize that opportunity.

Enemies were coming in larger amounts but each time they were killed by Liu Cang Lan at the entrance of Duan Ren Border. From the top of the hills, it was easy to kill the approaching enemies while remaining safe.

In the distance, it seemed like the Mo Yue troops had already slaughtered the surplus of Xue Yue troops. Chi Xie horses were galloping towards the Duan Ren Border.

However as the Chi Xie armored horses neared the Duan Ren Border, they all stopped.

The Duan Ren Border was the last stop before the Xue Yue

Country. It was the last checkpoint where the Xue Yue Country could protect themselves. The Mo Yue Country knew this perfectly well.

While standing on the hills of Duan Ren Border, they could easily kill the approaching enemies. From the top, not only could they easily kill people but they would also be able to let the Chi Xie troops safely pass. When using a bow from a high vantage point a single person could kill ten people. Killing a hundred enemies was even normal.

The Mo Yue troops were not going to foolishly rush towards the Duan Ren Border, there were too many people that had climbed to the top of the cliffs.

If they wanted to go through, the Mo Yue troops would have to sacrifice troops by the ten thousands which would be a great loss.

Liu Cang Lan looked at the huge Mo Yue army while shaking in anger.

They were suffering a crushing defeat. That battle was all about slaughtering the Xue Yue army. The Xue Yue army couldn't compete with the Mo Yue army any longer. A moment before, when he had returned to Duan Ren Border, there only a hundred thousand soldiers left and amongst them, many were injured.

Almost all their troops had been killed during that battle.

During the inner chaos, the Mo Yue troops had moved rapidly leaving them no chance to resist. All they could do was run away. How could they resist to an army composed of five hundred thousand attacking when they were unprepared. An incredible amount of people had already been killed.

At that moment, in front of the troops that had stopped, a silhouette slowly appeared. It was a young man. His face looked pale but his two eyes looked sharp and cruel making people want to prostrate themselves before him. This person was the enemy prince.

“General Divine Arrow.” said the young man. His voice was low but it pierced through Liu Cang Lan and the others.

“Mo Jie.” said Liu Cang Lan in an ice-cold tone while looking at that young man.

## Chapter 207: No Choice but Death

---

“General Divine Arrow, you have been protecting the Duan Ren Border for many years. That is a great military accomplishment, and you are a legendary figure. Nobody has ever been able to pass through the Duan Ren Border. I, Mo Jie, have always admired you for that. I am very happy to meet you today.” said Mo Jie while calmly sitting on his horse and looking towards Liu Cang Lan, slightly bowing in respect. He respected the General of Xue Yue.

“The general of a massacred army has no need for military accomplishments.” Liu Cang Lan sounded saddened. They had already lost hundreds of thousands of soldiers and it was his fault. His heart was still bleeding over his mistake.

“What happened is not your fault. If you decided to come over to my Mo Yue country, I, Mo Jie would welcome you and even grant you with the status of a Commander.” said Mo Jie in an extremely polite tone. Even though he had a high status, he was indeed a prince, there wasn't the slightest bit of arrogance in his voice. He even bowed in front of Liu Cang Lan, wasn't this a major event?

“A victory is a victory, a defeat is a defeat. What is the point in speaking about it?” said Liu Cang Lan while shaking his head. “Thank you for your kindness, but I refuse.”

“I will show you somebody and you will understand.” said Mo Jie while waving his hand. Someone next to him moved and then a few silhouettes appeared. Amongst them was a beautiful young woman who was trapped by a vine. She was brought to the front of others.

“Princess.” Lin Feng and Liu Cang Lan were completely astonished, especially Lin Feng. A thought flashed through Lin Feng’s mind. Was she a hostage?

How could this happen? How could the princess be in Mo Jie’s hands?

Could it be that the assassin who captured the princess wasn’t Duan Tian Lang but people under Mo Jie’s control?

But why had he been ambushed by soldiers of Duan Tian Lang, who wanted to kill him?

Lin Feng had no idea what was happening.

At that moment, Mo Jie looked at Lin Feng, smiled and said: “Your name is Lin Feng, right?”

Lin Feng was stupefied when he heard Mo Jie. Mo Jie slowly started speaking.

“In a towering rage, I rest under the whistling sound of rain.”

“Gazing into the distance, looking up to the heavens, I utter a long and loud cry. My chest feels painful.”

“Thirty soldiers now with the dust and earth, the moon and the

clouds stretching as far as can see.”

“The young man’s hair turns white, he is filled with sorrow.”

“The humiliation of Duan Ren.”

“When the officials hate, they destroy.”

“On the back of the armored horses, going to the mountains armed with flowers.”

“With magnificent ideals in my mind yet starvation filling my stomach, I eat their flesh. To settle my thirst, I drink their blood.”

“Clearing from the beginning until the end, the mountains and lakes, moving towards the heavens.”

Mo Jie’s voice was solemn and respectful. His voice was filled with ardor and lofty sentiments. Liu Cang Lan and Lin Feng were stupefied.

“Those who can sing with such spirit. Lin Feng, if you are willing to come and join Mo Yue, I will welcome you as well. If you wish, we could even become sworn brothers.”

Welcome him and become sworn brothers...

The prince of Mo Yue, Mo Jie, surprisingly attached great importance to Lin Feng.

“If you accept my offer, I will, of course, not harm the princess. She will even become your wife.” continued Mo Jie while smiling. From Lin Feng’s expression, Mo Jie had understood that Lin Feng cared about the princess’s safety.

Liu Cang Lan looked at Lin Feng. He remembered that was the song which Lin Feng had sung. Surprisingly, Mo Jie knew about it as well. Even though they both remained brave, they were doomed. The Mo Yue troops were soon going to enter Duan Ren Border and kill them all.

“Are you the one who sent the assassins to kidnap the princess?” asked Lin Feng.

“You don’t need to doubt anything. I will show you, and you will understand.” said Mo Jie while clapping his hands. Someone moved to his side on horseback, raised his head and took off his helmet. When the face appeared, Lin Feng’s expression turned ice-cold.

“It’s you.” said Lin Feng whose eyes revealed clear killing intent. It was the high ranking soldier who had blocked Lin Feng’s path. He was the one who plotted against the princess.

“You understand now. I knew everything about your army, and even knew about the tensions which existed between you and Duan Tian Lang.” said Mo Jie indifferently. He sounded very calm.

Lin Feng looked at Mo Jie with a cold look and then slowly said: “You were able to create chaos amongst our army using such a tactic, it is indeed a very good method. You are clearly a fierce and ambitious person.”

Lin Feng wasn't using a polite tone. Even though there was tension within their army, managing to create such chaos, that was a flawless attack.

The game of war was a deadly one. It was filled with people who would be stepped on like insects. Falling into someone's trap could be fatal, one careless move and the whole game is lost. They had been careless once and gave Mo Jie a great opportunity. That had lead to the downfall of their army.

“If you and the General come to my country, you will both be heroes.” continued Mo Jie. He really wanted them to join him. Lin Feng and Liu Cang Lan were however both shaking their heads.

“I, Mo Jie, will welcome both of you at any time.”

Mo Jie then turned his head around and said indifferently: “Set up an encampment two kilometres from here.”

When he finished talking, his army began to move. For them, orders must be followed. Mo Jie was like their god.

“Xue Yue army, listen to my words, I want you to withdraw from



the Duan Ren Border. In three days, if you haven't followed my instructions, I will behead the princess." Said Mo Jie in a loud voice. The whole army was shaking after hearing this.

Surprisingly, he wanted them to leave the Duan Ren Border or he would kill the princess.

"During these three days, I will not harm your precious princess. You have three days to think carefully." said Mo Jie. Immediately after, the ground shook and only a cloud of dust remained as they left. Only the Xue Yue army was left and they were all in speechless despair.

There was no possibility of discussing terms with Mo Jie. Mo Jie had given his terms and there was no margin for error. He left as soon as he finished speaking.

While looking at Duan Xin Ye leaving, Lin Feng's heart was laden with grief. Suddenly, he started feeling extremely guilty for what happened. If he was stronger, the princess wouldn't have been kidnapped. Duan Tian Lang would also have had no reason to accuse him and trigger a civil war amongst their two armies. The blood of hundreds of thousands of soldiers would not have been spilled.

Of course, Lin Feng knew that he could not change the past. He was already endlessly furious. He couldn't change anything that happened.

"Let's go back to Duan Ren City." said Liu Cang Lan while

turning around and leaving. While looking at Liu Cang Lan's silhouette, Lin Feng was shaking in anger. He knew that Liu Cang Lan was suffering more than anyone else.

All the soldiers who died were like his brothers.

At that moment, a few silhouettes rushed towards Liu Cang Lan and stopped in front of him.

“Liu Cang Lan, you triggered a war amongst the Xue Yue armies which led to the deaths of so many soldiers, even the princess was kidnapped... what should your punishment be?” shouted Duan Tian Lang who rushed towards Liu Cang Lan. Lin Feng narrowed his eyes. That guy was no better than a beast.

His subordinate had been acting as an insider to capture the princess. It was Duan Tian Lang who didn't want to give up the fight and wanted to harm Lin Feng no matter what. It was because of him that the situation became so chaotic and he refused to give up even as the Mo Yue troops were launching an assault. At that moment, he was still blaming Liu Cang Lan. What a despicable and shameless person.

“Liu Cang Lan, you killed hundreds of thousands of troops. That's a crime that can only be settled with your death.” said Duan Tian Lang. Lin Feng's face became ice-cold. Liu Cang Lan had been too lenient and was being treated unfairly. With their temperaments, life and death were really at stake.

“Duan Tian Lang, I really admire you for still having the audacity

to talk in such a way here.”

Lin Feng couldn't help but speak. He then said coldly: “A real traitor to your country, using your power and authority allow the princess to get kidnapped while you avenge personal grudges. Your desire to kill me didn't only cause the princess to get captured but you refused to stand down when the enemy bugles could be heard and continued to cause chaos within the army. When the Mo Yue troops arrived, you were still thinking about your own selfish interests which led to the loss of a huge number of troops. You came from the Imperial City with your troops and your son but when the enemy arrived, you were fastest people to escape with your tails between your legs. Amongst the soldiers who died, many of them were under your control... and surprisingly you still have the audacity to point your finger at Liu Cang Lan. If I were you, I would have died of shame a long time ago. I really admire you, as the Chief Commander, being able to do all of this without being ashamed is truly admirable.”

Lin Feng's words were extremely cold. The army soldiers were surprised and looked towards Duan Tian Lang. He had a hideous expression on his face.

“Lin Feng, don't forget that you're the princess' personal guard. The princess disappeared, you will not be able to escape your punishment.”

“Duan Tian Lang, don't forget that you are the Chief Commander and the princess was kidnapped within your encampment and by your subordinate. I will not be able to escape my punishment? What do you even mean by that?”

Lin Feng replied aggressively.

“We will see who will die and who will live.” replied Duan Tian Lang with an evil smile on his face. He then turned around and abruptly left.

“You should kill me as long as you have the opportunity because if you let me live, that cowardly mutt that you call a son will die by my hands and then you will be next.” said Lin Feng while looking at Duan Tian Lang’s silhouette leaving. Lin Feng’s voice was like that of an evil demon. Lin Feng’s words came from the hatred within the bottom of his heart. If, in the future, he was allowed to grow strong, he would definitely kill Duan Tian Lang and his son, without hesitation.

Duan Tian Lang heard Lin Feng. He stopped for a second and then immediately continued walking. Lin Feng really planned to kill Duan Tian Lang and his son. If they didn’t die, he wouldn’t be able to live in peace.

## Chapter 208: Night within the City

---

On the top of the tower above the city gate was Liu Cang Lan and behind him were four officers, Lin Feng and Liu Fei.

Liu Cang Lan had been standing there for a few hours already. He remained motionless while the others remained silent. They all understood the pain Liu Cang Lan was feeling in his heart.

Over a hundred thousand people, their lives, their families, their future had vanished in an instant. This was the truth of war.

It was the sad truth. Nobody could predict what was going to happen. Such dramatic events hadn't taken place in over ten years. Besides, Liu Cang Lan had never lost any of his battles in the past, but at that moment, he had lost and his army was massacred.

“Pshhhhh.....” Liu Cang Lan took a deep breath. He then slowly turned around. At that moment, everybody inside the city was already packing and ready to leave Duan Ren City.

The Mo Yue Country was putting pressure on them by using the princess' life. They wouldn't be able to defend the Duan Ren Border.

If they lost the Duan Ren Border, Duan Ren City would become a very dangerous place. A five hundred thousand strong army would easily be able to conquer Duan Ren City.

They were not a simple military force, a large number had broken through to the Ling Qi layer. In one jump, they could scale the gate of Duan Ren City. From there they could rain down arrows and annihilate everything inside.

“Even though Duan Ren City is vast, it could only be considered a small town... it has a population of five hundred and fifty thousand civilians. The civilians must leave the city, even though for many of them it is their place of birth. As a general, I cannot get them involved.” said Liu Cang Lan while sighing.

“As in any war, the outcome is never certain, you can win or you can lose. The only thing in your control is how you deal with the situation, General.” said Lin Feng while shaking his head.

“What do you expect me to do? I don’t understand.” asked Liu Cang Lan who didn’t understand.

Lin Feng turned around, looked at Liu Cang. He then said in a calm and solemn tone: “I need wood.”

“Wood?” Liu Cang Lan stared blankly at Lin Feng. He was dumbfounded. Lin Feng spoke again: “Uncle Liu, I hope that you can satisfy my request this time.”

After remaining silent for a moment, Liu Cang nodded in a serious way and said: “Alright.”

“Officers, I hope you can help me as well.” said Lin Feng while

looking at Jiu Chi Xie and the others. They all slightly nodded, even though they didn't know what Lin Feng actually really meant to do.

At that moment, in the city, horses were neighing and many people were getting ready to leave.

Amongst these people, many of them were from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and the Celestial Academy. They all looked deathly pale. They had hoped to gain military exploits, but it was impossible for them. That place was too dangerous. They had to go back to the Imperial City, where it was safe. This battle had nothing to do with them.

Even the young men who had come with Duan Tian Lang were leaving as well.

“Liu Cang Lan!” shouted Duan Tian Lang extremely loudly.

“Liu Cang Lan, you caused our own army fight against each other and the princess was captured because of it. You then caused hundreds of thousands of people to lose their homes. I will report all of this to His Majesty and he will decide himself on how to punish you for your crimes.” shouted Duan Tian Lang as he moved into the distance. He made it sound like Liu Cang Lan was guilty for everything and never took any of the responsibility.

Lin Feng's heart grew extremely cold. The princess had been kidnapped at Duan Tian Lang's encampment, but he was making out that it had nothing to do with him. Besides, he was running

back to the Imperial City. The princess' life suddenly meant nothing to him any longer.

Lin Feng also understood that Duan Tian Lang wanted to go to the Imperial City to remove all responsibility from himself and shift the blame onto Liu Cang Lan.

Liu Cang Lan didn't pay attention to Duan Tian Lang. He was worthless.

What Liu Cang Lan was regretting the most was that he let Duan Tian Lang join them in the first place. He should have known better than to think Duan Tian Lang would be of any actual use on the battlefield.

With the smile of victory on his face, Duan Tian Lang the Chief Commander was escaping from Duan Ren City with his army. Liu Cang Lan would inevitably stay there and fight Mo Yue resulting in his death. This battle would be even worse for them, no one would be able to escape uninjured. When the right moment came, Duan Tian Lang would report Liu Cang Lan's crimes to His Majesty.

.....

The third day, the deadline was slowly arriving.

Rumbling noises filled the atmosphere. Mo Yue soldiers on their horses were arriving outside of Duan Ren Border. Their army stretched across the landscape as far as the eye could see.



But at that moment, on the hills of Duan Ren Border, there was nobody at all.

Mo Jie moved towards the frontline on his horse. He looked at the empty mountains and looked like he was lost in thought.

Could it be that the troops of Xue Yue had really withdrawn and were offering the Duan Ren Border to the Mo Yue Country?

“Bring the princess to the front!” said Mo Jie indifferently. Duan Xin Ye was on a horseback and was wearing armor. Besides, she wasn’t chained or restrained in any way. Just like Mo Jie said, they hadn’t harmed the princess at all.

“First row of black guards, go secure the cliffs of the Duan Ren Border and do a thorough inspection.” said Mo Jie. In a flash, a row of black guards galloped towards the top of Duan Ren Border.

If Mo Jie gave them an order, they obeyed it even if it cost them their life.

This group of black guards were extremely skillful, if there was nobody to guard Duan Ren Border, it was easy for them to reach the top. At the top, they could check if there was an ambush lying in wait for them.

One hour later, the entire row of black guards came back, nobody was missing.

“Your Highness, there is nobody to be seen from the top of the Duan Ren Border. There is nobody in Duan Ren City either, not even soldiers.” said one of them. Mo Jie was surprised. Not only was there nobody in the Duan Ren Border but there was nobody in Duan Ren City either?

“Clear the way first.” said Mo Jie while sounding cold and detached. Maybe that Duan Ren City was already completely abandoned. If there wasn’t the Duan Ren Border, he would have already engaged in battle and definitely would have won.

The soldiers were walking forwards and then disappeared beyond the Duan Ren Border. Mo Jie and his troops were prudently moving forwards.

If he fought against Liu Cang Lan, he would definitely win, but it wouldn’t be that easy.

During a war, a strategy had to be flawless, if it wasn’t, one could suffer a crushing defeat.

As Mo Jie thought, Duan Ren City was absolutely empty. It was a calm, silent and unpopulated city.

Mo Jie was standing at the top of the protection tower within Duan Ren City and looked expressionless. He had been coming to Duan Ren Border for many years and always wanted to pass through... but at that moment, he had passed through. He could see the sea of broken weapons. It was the symbol of victory, but

that victory was.....

“Station the troops inside Duan Ren City and occupy it.” said Mo Jie. Immediately after, the order was passed to the troops.

They had already conquered the Duan Ren Border. They were also capturing Duan Ren City. Over the vast landscape one could see the Mo Yue troops sweeping across the flatlands.

At midnight, except for a few night guards, everybody was getting a well deserved rest.

Outside of Duan Ren City, a few sorrowful looking silhouettes appeared. In their eyes was pure killing intent.

At the same time, a great number of armored horses were silently moving towards Duan Ren City, however they abruptly stopped. They didn't take one more step forwards.

At that moment, Lin Feng was also outside of Duan Ren City. His black eyes looked ice-cold. He could clearly see everything that was happening inside Duan Ren City.

Lin Feng jumped into Duan Ren City. He was well prepared. A single guard was there, Lin Feng quickly covered their mouth to prevent them from shouting and without mercy he slit their throat.

Lin Feng took the armor from the corpse and put it on. He then

immediately threw the corpse from the city wall and the people below caught it, therefore there was still absolute silence.

Lin Feng could clearly perceive everything that was happening around him. He started to move with complete silence. A moment later, a few more corpses were thrown from the city wall. The Xue Yue troops who were catching the corpses, then took the armor from the corpses and wore it. They then jumped onto the city wall to replace the guards. They were all extremely skillful and careful to make no noise.

All of them had been selected as the best amongst Chi Xie troops. They were all the best of the best from the most elite units within the army. They were all at least sergeants and the weakest of them had reached the third Ling Qi layer.

They were not only doing this at one location on the city walls. Many of them were all attacking from a large number of places and taking over the city wall. The strongest of them were moving into Duan Ren City, killing the night guards and throwing the corpses over the wall to provide the others with armor.

It was already late into the night so everything was done under the cover of darkness and with complete silence. Nobody had been alarmed by these actions.

At that moment, a group of black guards armed with spears appeared in Duan Ren City. They looked majestic and imposing.

Amongst them was a young man whose face looked incredibly

delicate. It was Lin Feng.

These people didn't belong to Mo Yue Country at all. They were all from Xue Yue.

Because the Mo Yue troops had come in and immediately set up camp, they weren't very strict with fortifying their position. Therefore, Lin Feng could easily move to every corner of the city.

A short moment after, Lin Feng and the others arrived at a room and immediately entered.

"Stop." Someone suddenly cried. Two guards were preventing Lin Feng and the others from going inside. They then said: "Some people are already staying inside."

"I know." said Lin Feng while continuing to walk forwards. These two guards were astonished. Immediately after, a resplendent and bright glow appeared and a light green dagger cut the throats of the two guards. They then softly fell down onto the floor.

Lin Feng's silhouette flickered and he immediately moved towards the room. The door of the room opened itself emitting a squeaking sound. The light green dagger started to glow again and quickly slit the throat of the man who just opened the door. His mouth was covered as he slumped down as to stop him making any sounds.

“There is another person inside.” said Lin Feng. Immediately after, they entered the room. Inside the room, there was a great deal of wood. This was part of their plan. The Xue Yue troops were very familiar with it. They knew exactly where everything was placed.

The same thing was happening at multiple locations within Duan Ren City. Finally a sound filled the atmosphere, breaking the silence and calling the troops to attention.

When Lin Feng heard the sound, he obviously knew that they were out of time. He quickly entered into another room and as he left, flames appeared behind him.

There were flames everywhere, fire was completely covering Duan Ren City.

Lin Feng seemed pensive while looking at the flames. In his previous life, he used to use fire to cook delicacies, in this life, he was using fire to cook people alive.

Of course, he knew that this amount of fire wouldn't be sufficient. He needed to turn it into a rampaging fire which engulfed the entire city.

## Chapter 209: The Ambush

---

All around the outside of Duan Ren City , the Chi Xie troops were watching the flames as they engulfed the city. After the order was given, they all urged their horses on and galloped towards Duan Ren City at full speed.

In the blink of an eye, the Chi Xie troops arrived in front of Duan Ren City with their bows in hand. The flames were already soaring higher and higher. Amongst the Chi Xie troops, all of them had prepared for this moment beforehand.

The heads of their arrows were already alight with raging fire and immediately after that, they released their arrows from their bows and a fiery rain of arrows fell upon the city.

What seemed like an endless rain of burning arrows continued to rain down on the city. The scene was magnificent and tragic.

Immediately after, the Mo Yue troops looked at the rain of burning arrows filling the sky above them. They were astonished. It seemed like the heavens were punishing them.

After the Chi Xie troops shot the first volley of arrows, they then started to circle the city releasing volley after volley of fiery death. The scene was so bright that it seemed like the sun had risen early.

Shortly after, the entire city of Duan Ren was a sea of flames. At that moment, chaos and disorder struck the Mo Yue troops. That sudden attack had surprised them. They had fallen into a firetrap.

At the same time, inside the city, Lin Feng and the elite soldiers were assassinating the higher ranking commanders who could relay orders to stop the chaos.

If they had been prepared and ready to fight, it would have been difficult, however using these burning arrows it was possible to injure or kill cultivators of the third Ling Qi layer and even the elites of higher cultivation levels. Of course, it was very difficult to injure the stronger cultivators but it was enough to injure and kill the troops around them. That had been enough to create chaos amongst the Mo Yue troops.

That blazing fire made the Mo Yue troops unable to return to formation and organize their army. It was even more chaotic amongst their horses.

At that moment, Mo Jie was inside his room getting dressed.

A burning arrow shot past him him. He was calm yet looked pensive.

“Burning the entire city with flaming arrows, Liu Cang Lan really deserves his nickname “The Divine Arrow”.” said Mo Jie while sounding indifferent. Immediately after, he said: “I order all the troops to move back towards the northern gate. Don’t extinguish the fire and don’t chase those who have entered the city. Just move back to the northern gate and get prepared to welcome them.” when Mo Jie finished talking, his order was relayed to all their troops throughout the burning city.



At that moment, all the Mo Yue troops had stopped trying to extinguish the fire and stopped fighting against the infiltrators. They were all moving towards the northern gate of the city.

Inside the city, a soldier was killed in the blink of an eye. At the same time, Mo Jie's order had been relayed to all of the troops so they no longer looked for Lin Feng or tried to stop him. Lin Feng could also now ignore them and started to move towards the north gate.

The soldiers who had been chasing Lin Feng were not the only ones to obey the order and stop fighting, all the army without exception followed orders. Nobody dared to call the order into question. They hadn't felt the slightest bit of hesitation.

"Mo Jie has such a strong influence on his troops." thought Lin Feng when he saw that scene. The Mo Yue Country had the goal to make Mo Jie their national symbol, to make them worship him as a god amongst men. Mo Jie, obviously enjoyed such a prestigious reputation in Mo Yue.

There was no one who doubted his strength and talent.

Staying in such a chaotic situation and being unable to act rationally could have led to heavy losses for their army. Gathering the troops together in one place was the best reaction to counter the enemy's strategy. It would enable them to concentrate their strength and break free from the encirclement.

“Now, all we have to do is rely on Uncle Liu.” thought Lin Feng. Immediately after, he sheathed his sword and ran like mad through the flames. He was running shoulder to shoulder with the other troops towards the northern gate.

At that moment, even though the Mo Yue troops were trying to gather altogether, chaos was still present amongst them. Lin Feng was wearing a Mo Yue armor so there was no chance that anybody would find out who he was unless he attacked them.

Besides, it was impossible for hundreds of thousands of troops to know every single face within the army.

At the northern gate, there was an unceasing rain of arrows falling from the sky. The strong cultivators of the Mo Yue Country had gathered there. Some of them could control ice, snow and water. Therefore, they could easily extinguish the fire. In the entire city of Duan Ren, the northern gate was the safest place but it was also covered in darkness.

But in a short time, about a hundred thousand troops had already gathered there and the number of people seemed to be increasing over time.

The crowd was extremely silent. They could distinctly hear the chaos in the distance as well as the people’s steps near them.

At that moment, Mo Jie was standing in front of the crowd looking towards the city gate and said while sounding indifferent: “Open the gate.”

“Open the gate.” shouted a high-ranking soldier. While the gate was being opened, a rumbling noises spread through the air.

“Five thousand elite cavalry, open the way and secure the path two kilometres ahead.” said Mo Jie. Some armored cavalry gathered, they urged on their horses and moved towards the exit of the city.

In the middle of the night, they couldn't see a great deal so they also couldn't see if they were running into an ambush. However, even in the case of an ambush, it was impossible for the entire army to get killed.

In the middle of the crowd, Lin Feng looked at the soldiers who were remaining calm. Mo Jie was truly terrifying.

Even at that moment, nobody was calling his orders in question. He was a true leader. Even at a moment when the sky seemed to be raining death down onto them, they remained calm and fearless.

If the leader didn't remain calm, could his army remain calm? With such a huge number of people it was hard to restore calmness to the army.

The northern city gate was far from the Duan Ren Border. Mo Jie was trying to think as if he was Liu Cang Lan and if he had been Liu Cang Lan, he would have set an ambush between Duan Ren City and the Duan Ren Border, but that was the western city gate. That's why Mo Jie had chosen the northern gate and not the

western gate. He did not want to fall into a trap and get killed.

The five thousand cavalry were progressing through the dark. Everything was perfectly calm and tranquil. The only sound was that of their horse hoofs hitting the ground.

At that moment, a few horses neighed loudly. Suddenly there was the feeling that the ground was unsteady beneath their feet. The cavalry and their horses fell down in a deep pit.

When the cavalry behind them heard this, they rushed over thinking it was an enemy attack and fell into the pit. The situation was chaotic.

Those who had just fallen into the pit wanted to move but then they were stopped by the falling soldiers and horses which fell onto them. The situation was chaotic. Arrows started to fill the air emitting whistling sounds as they pierced through the darkness .

Horrible shrieks unceasingly came from the direction in the elite cavalry unit had entered the darkness to clear the way.

The faces of the troops still inside the city turned deathly pale when they heard the horrible shrieks. Their comrades had probably died in an ambush.

“Let’s move, let’s go to the western gate.” said Mo Jie while remaining calm. Immediately after, all his troops moved towards the western gate.

Even though those who had an ice spirit were opening the way, they were still suffering losses as people died as they were burnt to death or struck by the rain of fiery arrows falling from the sky.

However, the number of troops gathered at the western gate hadn't decreased, on the contrary, there were even more than at the northern gate because there were still parts of the army joining the main force which had not yet arrived.

At that moment, there were more than two hundred thousand soldiers that gathered at the western city gate. But Mo Jie felt cold in his heart. Setting the city on fire was an extremely cruel method. Mo Jie couldn't help but appreciate the strategy. That tactic was unprecedented in history of the continent and it proved to be extremely efficient. It seemed like his five hundred thousand strong army were prisoners inside the city they had just captured.

“Open the gate, three thousand elite cavalry go and clear a path to the Duan Ren Border.” said Mo Jie while still remaining indifferent. This time, he didn't send five thousand but three thousand troops.

As before, these troops opened the gate and left without hesitation.

However they ran straight into an ambush and Liu Cang Lan could be seen with his troops on the horizon.

The Mo Yue troops understood that Mo Jie had seen that there

was a high possibility of it being a trap. Going to the western city gate was actually falling deeper into their trap. A moment before, outside of the northern gate there might not have been enough traps to stop the entire army, there may have only been a single trap. However they had fallen right into the enemies hands.

“General Liu Cang Lan, you are extremely smart. I am now thoroughly convinced.” said Mo Jie while looking at Liu Cang Lan in a cold and detached way.

At that moment, the Xue Yue troops were still firing arrows. There was an endless rain of fire flying through the sky.

Because the tower blocked their sight, the Mo Yue troops couldn't see how many people were waiting outside. They could only see an endless stream of fire on the horizon.

“I am not the one who organized this strategy.” said Liu Cang Lan coldly while slowly raising his hand.

“General, if it was not you, who was it?” asked Mo Jie stupefied.

“Lin Feng.”

Liu Cang Lan then waved his hand down. At that moment, a huge volley of arrows turned into a storm that ravaged the two hundred thousand of Mo Yue troops.

Under that storm of burning arrows, a huge number of troops

were killed without the chance to fight back. At the same time, the arrows set the corpses and the ground on fire which created a sea of fire which spread and burned even more people alive.

When Mo Jie saw that the Xue Yue troops were about to shoot another volley of arrows, he already knew that it was impossible for him to escape.

“Die.” shouted Mo Jie. The Mo Yue army turned into a fearless war machine and moved towards the city gate to fight the arrows head on.

At that moment, everybody was cursing a single name: Lin Feng.

After that battle, Lin Feng would be famous within Xue Yue as well as in Mo Yue.

## Chapter 210: Annihilate the army

---

The troops from both countries were engaged in a fearsome battle. The battlefield was covered with the corpses of soldiers. The Mo Yue troops had rushed from the city to fight against the Xue Yue troops.

The Mo Yue troops constituted a powerful army and their spears glowed through the dark night with fearsome killing. The broken weapons on the ground emitted quiet metallic clangs from their movements.

On both sides of the city, the Chi Xie troops gathered into one location on the battlefield, they then fired another volley of arrows towards the Mo Yue army. The fire was still raging and the heat from the fire was growing more intense with every passing moment. The Mo Yue troops didn't know how to react. At the same time, amongst the Mo Yue troops, a sword glowed with a radiant light and released a terrifying deadly Qi. The sword slashed in a circle at full speed which created a terrifying pressure which killed hundreds of soldiers. It was Lin Feng.

After that sword attack, the other Chi Xie elites who had infiltrated the enemy's army also started to mercilessly slaughter the unguarded troops around them. It created chaos throughout the enemy army. However they continued to follow orders and did not attach a great importance to their own lives.

Fighting at that moment was an army of two hundred and fifty thousand Mo Yue troops while the Xue Yue troops were composed of less than one hundred thousand troops. Mo Yue while suffering



heavy losses within the city, still held the advantage in numbers.

However, sooner or later, the other Xue Yue troops would have a direct confrontation with the enemy army, they just had to wait until the Mo Yue troops moved closer. In the time it would take for the Mo Yue army to reach them, how many arrows could they fire? But they had already killed half of the Mo Yue army and had caused chaos within the army. Considering the fact that they still had the Chi Xie troops ready to fight and Lin Feng's group of elites inside the enemy army causing chaos, it was safe to say that they had complete control over the situation.

When fighting the enemies in a head on battle, who would have the bravest soldiers? Which side would win?

Lin Feng was moving through the army. Anyone who tried to block Lin Feng turned into another corpse on the ground.

Lin Feng wasn't alone though, he was surrounded by the group of elites accompanying him.

The battle between Mo Yue and Xue Yue was a battle of victory or death. Retreating wasn't an option. Lin Feng had no choice. He needed to go and save Princess Duan Xin Ye. Duan Xian Ye had been kidnapped while he was protecting her, if something happened to her, Lin Feng would not only suffer a death sentence but it was also mean punishment for Liu Can Lan. Lin Feng had to rescue Duan Xin Ye.

To Lin Feng's left, a sword was also unceasingly glowing and

every time it moved someone was killed, making its owner look like a reaper of death.

His sword was moving much faster than that of Lin Feng's sword, each of its blows were not only faster but also much more powerful. The deadly Qi it was releasing was several times heavier than that released by Lin Feng. It was clear that the owner of this sword had been through countless bloodbaths.

Lin Feng turned around and saw the young man cutting down his enemies and was shocked. Currently the young man's face was not like that of a beautiful girl. At that moment, he looked ice-cold and emotionless.

He was wearing pure white robes, but he looked like a death god. It was obviously Wen Ao Xue. No wonder he was so respected and revered at the Celestial Academy. Wen Ao Xue's beautiful eyes were as sharp as the god of death's sword.

On the horizon, a beautiful light started to fill the sky. Day was starting to break.

Outside of Duan Ren City, the sea of broken weapons had also turned into a sea of blood and corpses.

These corpses were still fresh and blood continued to pour from the bodies to create a sea of blood.

Lin Feng rushed forwards and with a single deadly sword he

killed a dozen soldiers in his path. However, Lin Feng wasn't excited at all. He looked at all the countless corpses covering the battlefield. His heart felt saddened. This was war and their lives didn't matter much on the battlefield, but to someone they mattered.

A rumble spread through the atmosphere and was coming from a distant place on the horizon. It was a crash of lightning as if the heavens were descending with their wrath.

The entire crowd couldn't help but shiver from head to toe. Everybody slowly raised their head and looked to the horizon.

On the horizon where the sun had started to rise there was now a sea of black clouds. It seemed like a human shape had appeared within them, but it quickly disappeared. Darkness filled the battlefield once again as the sky was covered by these clouds.

It looked like a completely black creature who looked down on humans with disdain from the sky.

"How terrifying." thought Lin Feng. When he saw the sea of black clouds appear in the sky, his heart started pounding.

"A group of barbarians dare to fight against my Mo Yue." A silhouette appeared in the middle of the sea of black clouds. Immediately after, the palm of his hand thrust out and a black seal appeared on the ground.

The seal was the shape of a castle. There was a thick black deadly Qi within which pounded into the ground and crushed anything in its way.

The ground was violently shaking. The hearts of the Xue Yue army were all trembling with fear.

That attack had just killed a thousand Xue Yue soldiers. One attack was enough to claim a thousand lives, these Xue Yue soldiers could barely see it coming before they had been crushed, without even the time to give a horrible shriek.

A gigantic black crater appeared in the ground from the attack, all the corpses of the Xue Yue troops had disappeared into that blackness.

Besides, those who were near the attack, men and horses were sent hurtling away.

The faces of Xue Yue army turned deathly pale. What kind of cultivator was that? Facing such a strong cultivator, they had lost all their courage to fight.

Everybody had stopped moving. The Xue Yue army had come to a halt, the Mo Yue army had stopped too. They had all raised their heads and were blankly staring at that black silhouette in the sky.

“YEAAAHHHHHH....” a short moment after, the Mo Yue troops gave a furious shout which made the ground shake.

That was an extremely strong cultivator from Mo Yue. Alone, he could annihilate an entire army.

When Lin Feng heard that shout, his sword slightly trembled.

There was no room for strategy, he couldn't bring about a radical change in this situation. In front of such a strong cultivator, who could influence the entire course of the war, there was nothing he could do.

He raised his left hand. Lin Feng hated his own weakness, he was not strong enough to protect himself and was not strong enough to influence the continent.

That black palm must have been genuine pure energy and the cultivator must be at the Xuan Qi layer. That pure energy was extremely brutal.

A cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer could rely on pure Qi and pure energy. Such a person could control the sky and eliminate his enemies with powerful attacks. He was clearly at the Xuan Qi layer and Chu Zhan Peng would be like an ant to be crushed under this cultivators shoes.

Someone who could control the sky and attack from the heavens was at least at the peak of the Xuan Qi Layer. Rumors said that the strongest cultivators could fly in the sky and kill millions of people as they wished. Those rumours were all true.

That was the world of cultivation. Strong cultivators could act as they pleased. Soldiers, emperors, rulers, as long as they were strong, they could destroy or save life as they saw fit.

Lin Feng also wanted to reach that point with his cultivation. He also hoped that he would be able to fly amongst the clouds someday. He was making great efforts to make that dream come true and he was unceasingly battling to gain enlightenment. His heart was filled with incredible ambitions and aspirations, he would grow to be as powerful as an unmovable mountain.

But to reach such a cultivation level, how much determination, experience and training was required? Nobody knew.

For example, the strong cultivator who was looking down on them from the clouds, could easily destroy the army of Xue Yue.

Could it be that the Xue Yue army was going to die?

“Liu Cang Lan, you’ve been resisting my army for a while now, I respect you. You are an outstanding person, therefore I will let you die with dignity, I will allow you to take your own life.” The black silhouette in the sky was looking at Liu Cang Lan and sounded like a majestic deity. In front of him, even the highest-ranking generals meant nothing.

Liu Cang Lan raised his head while looking calm and indifferent. He looked at that silhouette in the sky. He then looked at the Xue Yue army. It looked like he was lamenting.

“During a war between two countries, the strongest cultivators are not allowed to get involved, that is one of the rules that all countries respect but today you come and pressure my army,

have I tacitly consented?” Liu Cang Lan’s voice was filled with sorrow.

Mo Yue would respect the rule unless it really wanted to conquer Xue Yue. At that moment, no matter if it was Mo Yue or Xue Yue, at neither of them had the power to conquer the other. Therefore, that rule couldn’t be broken. Of course, there was one exception, if one side accepted the behaviour of the other side.

“I accept.” When the Xue Yue troops heard Liu Cang Lan, they were all filled with great sadness. Lin Feng was extremely saddened.

The princess had been kidnapped, and Duan Tian Lang had caused chaos within the army. Liu Cang Lan, at that moment, had agreed to take his own life... This war had caused chaos, nobody knew what would happen from that point.

# Chapter 211: Yan Yu Ping Sheng

---

Note: Yan Yu means “misty rain” ...\*sigh\*

\*

Everybody was looking towards the sky at the black silhouette.

They only saw that a cold smile had appeared on that black silhouette. He then said coldly: “Anyway, I will give you the time of ten breathes, if you don’t end your own life then I will personally kill you.”

“How could a real man accept death? I would rather die in a battle. Too bad that I’ve gotten my troops involved.” said Liu Cang Lan while raising his head and looking at that black silhouette in the sky. Dense battle energy started burning around his body. His body then flew into the air. He was determined to fight until the end, how could he humiliate himself with suicide?

The entire Xue Yue army looked extremely saddened. This battle was unfair.

“Since you want to die, I will help you achieve your goal.” said the black silhouette coldly. He gathered the pure energy around his body once again. It contained immense power.

“In a towering rage, I rest under the whistling sound of rain.”



“Gazing into the distance, looking up to the heavens, I utter a long and loud cry. My chest feels painful.”

“Thirty soldiers now with the dust and earth, the moon and the clouds stretching as far as can see.”

Suddenly a song filled the entire battlefield with a harmonious melody.

“If Liu Cang Lan dies today, Prince Mo Jie will be buried here as well.”

That voice was so light and powerful that there was no doubt to the truth contained within those words.

The black silhouette had a respectful expression on his face and he then looked into the distance and said: “Who dares to say such insane things?”

“Han Mo, did you think that the cultivators of Xue Yue were gone?” asked a voice which was growing nearer and nearer to that location. That person was quickly approaching from a great distance away. A short instant later, another silhouette appeared in the sky.

There was a floating cloud of pure Qi underneath that man. He was sitting cross-legged on the cloud of pure Qi, he was just calmly playing the zither in front of him.

“Yan Yu Ping Sheng, if I had known I would have brought a raincoat.”

When Han Mo saw the person, he was astonished. Why had he shown up on the battlefield?

“With magnificent ideals in my mind yet starvation filling my stomach, I eat their flesh. To settle my thirst, I drink their blood.”

The middle-aged man was singing and playing the zither. His fingers drifted above the strings and a white pure Qi emerged. In a flash, an ear piercing sound spread through the air, and suddenly, a thousand soldiers from Mo Yue died miserably under the power of his sound based attack.

While laughing and talking, He reduced the enemy to nothing, killing without spilling blood.

“Han Mo, if you kill my soldiers, I will kill your soldiers. In the same way, if you kill Liu Cang Lan, I kill Mo Jie.” said the middle-aged man coldly while looking at Han Mo. Even though he was killing people, he looked graceful while playing the zither and smiling.

The crowd was astonished. He was another extremely strong cultivator. They couldn't stop him. One melody from his zither and he could instantly kill a thousand people.

When the Xue Yue troops saw this person, they looked

enthusiastic. Their hearts were once again filled with hope.

They had never heard Yan Yu Ping Sheng's name but they knew that if he could speak that way, it meant that he must be no weaker than the black silhouette. This was one of the elite cultivators of Xue Yue.

At that moment, Lin Feng's heart was pounding as well. Yan Yu Ping Sheng, that was his real name.

Lin Feng knew that middle-aged man in the sky, but he wasn't the only one, at the Celestial Academy, there were indubitably many people who knew him as well.

That person was Lin Feng's zither teacher who taught him to cleanse his heart. It was his teacher from the peach tree orchard.

Lin Feng hadn't thought that he would see him on the battlefield. It made Lin Feng finally start to feel relieved. The man that helped him break through to a higher Ling Qi layer was also one of the experts of the country.

He was a wise man and he moved at the speed of lightning. He strangely looked like Wen Ao Xue somehow. He also had a womanly beauty to him and on the battlefield, he had the presence of a death god. His attacks cut down the enemy army in thousands.

"Yan Yu Ping Sheng." whispered Lin Feng. He wouldn't forget his name. Maybe Yan Yu Ping Sheng was even stronger than Long

Ding, the Vice-Principal.

Han Mo was fixedly staring at Yan Yu Ping Sheng. He remained silent for a moment and then said: “Yan Yu Ping Sheng, long time no see. Would you like to fight against me?”

“If you want to fight, let’s fight.”

Yan Yu Ping Sheng sounded calm. He was so calm as if the rest of the world couldn’t affect his feelings.

Pure Qi was condensing around Han Mo’s body. He spun his right hand in the air and suddenly black pure energy appeared.

“Annihilation!” Han Mo threw a punch through the air with created an incredible noise as it broke through the atmosphere. That pitch-black energy seemed like it wanted to cover the heavens and the earth with its seals. The attack was rushing straight towards Yan Yu Ping Sheng.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng was calmly sitting on his white cloud of pure Qi. His fingers moved over the strings of his zither and then an incredible bright light emerged and moved towards his opponent.

“Pshhh... pshhh... pshhh...”

Loud clashing sounds invaded the atmosphere. Immediately after, the resplendent and bright light pierced through that black energy. That incredible white light contained an amazing quantity

of pure energy and it was moving straight towards Han Mo. However, the black energy was also continuing its way towards Yan Yu Ping Sheng even though the attack had been greatly reduced in power.

“Let’s move to another place!” shouted Han Mo while moving down through the air.”

“That’s exactly what I had in mind.” replied Yan Yu Ping Sheng. His cloud of pure Qi then vanished.

Then the two silhouettes shot into the distance and moved far away from the armies. Finally, they disappeared from vision completely.

Han Mo and Yan Yu Ping Sheng were extremely strong. If they had stayed there, their attacks would have killed the spectators which is not what Han Mo and Yan Yu Ping Sheng wished.

When all the troops saw the two silhouettes disappear in the horizon, they remained calm for a long time gazing into the distance.

At such a level of strength, one person could affect the fate of an entire battle, they could destroy an entire army. They were extremely powerful. No wonder that the Nine Countries decided to set a rule stipulating that such strong cultivators couldn’t get involved in wars. They could slaughter an entire army with little effort.

“Die!” shouted Liu Cang Lan in the air. He took his bow from his back and a golden spirit appeared behind him. His bow was drew the attention of everyone.

Liu Cang Lan then pulled back the string of his bow when golden arrow illusions appeared and immediately aimed at the Mo Yue troops. He then released the bow string and seven golden lights rushed through the air. Dozens of people died from this single attack.

“Die!” shouted the Xue Yue army. The ground started to shake again. A moment before, Han Mo had killed one thousand people with a single palm strike. He had also tried to force Liu Cang Lan to commit suicide; which had profoundly affected the morale of the troops but at that moment, Yan Yu Ping Sheng had appeared and was fighting against Han Mo. He had come to save them. They still had hope to be able to escape from death. He had lit the fire within their hearts once again.

Blood was heavily flowing on the ground once again.

Lin Feng was firmly holding his sword and unceasingly cutting down anyone in his path. A group of people was fighting alongside him. Wherever they went, blood flowed.

The battlefield had no set area and the battle quickly grew to cover a larger area over time. There was absolutely no organization to this battle, it was only kill or getting killed.

At that moment, Lin Feng finally noticed a silhouette. It was a

beautiful girl riding on a horse: Duan Xin Ye.

However, she was unable to move. Her body had been tied. Besides, she was surrounded by eight of the elite cavalry soldiers. These eight people were wearing majestic black armor, they were members of the black guards.

Duan Xin Ye saw Lin Feng. Her beautiful eyes looked like a warm autumn day. The expression in her eyes revealed that she couldn't wait to be saved by Lin Feng.

Of course, these black guards had also noticed Lin Feng killing his way toward them, leaving nothing but blood and corpses behind him. Their facial expressions grew cold and evil.

At that moment, Lin Feng jumped forward and the same time, a black guard also jumped towards him.

“Pshhh...”

The light emitted by Lin Feng's sword was dazzling.

The black guard's hand moved. Immediately after, Lin Feng felt that a rapid river was rushing towards him. His sword was swaying in the midst of a raging storm of attacks. There was a noise like a wave crashing down on the atmosphere.

When the energy they were releasing collided, Lin Feng was immediately blown backwards. He only saw that that black guard

had immediately landed back on his horse. He then looked at Lin Feng with a cold glare and then the eight black guards urged their horses forward and left with the princess.

“How strong. These black guards are extremely strong.” Lin Feng’s pupils shrank. Even though there were only eight of the black guards, they were much stronger than all the people that Lin Feng had killed previously.

Lin Feng rushed forward while brandishing his sword and immediately after, a soldier fell down from his horse. Lin Feng immediately jumped on the horse and galloped towards these eight black guards at full speed.

Duan Xin Ye had to be saved even if it cost him his life.



## Chapter 212: Long Chase

---

The wind was piercing through Lin Feng's eardrums. He was urging like mad on his horse, galloping at full speed.

Two silhouettes brandished their spears. They wanted to block Lin Feng, but they only saw his sword glow for an instant. In a flash, these two silhouettes fell dead onto the ground. That move hadn't affected Lin Feng's speed at all. Lin Feng was still chasing the princess while being completely surrounded by a fierce battlefield with people dying all around him.

Lin Feng was galloping at full speed. He was almost out of the Duan Ren Border. These nine silhouettes, without the slightest bit of hesitation, entered the passageway that led out of the Duan Ren Border. Lin Feng followed them without hesitation.

Even though the Duan Ren Border was already under the control of Mo Yue, Lin Feng was also wearing the armor of a Mo Yue soldier which made him look like he was one of them. Therefore, nobody was going to attack Lin Feng.

Lin Feng, as well as the group following him, also passed through the passageway of the Duan Ren Border smoothly. Passing through the passage didn't slow them down at all. Once they exited the passage, they could see corpses as far as their eyes could possibly see. These dead bodies lying on the ground were all of the Xue Yue troops.

“What fast horses.” Even though Lin Feng's horse was galloping

at full speed, he couldn't catch up with the black guards at all. Even though they were guided by the horse which Duan Xin Ye was riding, these nine brown horses were much faster than the ordinary horses Mo Yue soldiers used.

However, Lin Feng didn't intend to give up, and he was just as determined as before.

They continued to chase them for a few hours. Lin Feng didn't know how much distance he had already covered. Once in a while, he could see smoke in the distance.

At that moment, Lin Feng had already crossed the border that Xue Yue and Mo Yue shared. At that moment, he was in the Mo Yue Country.

At that moment, there was foam around the mouth of the horse which Lin Feng was riding and it was covered with sweat. It looked exhausted.

That horse had incredible strength and agility, but at that moment, it was already unable to continue. A horse that quick and agile was already exhausted.

Lin Feng could already sense that he was near his enemies. The silhouettes he had been chasing were finally slowing down and then they slowly stopped.

Lin Feng then abruptly pulled on the reins to make his horse

come to a halt. The horse neighed, and suddenly, the legs of Lin Feng's horse suddenly bent and it fell down. At the moment when Lin Feng was pulling on the reins, the horse was already too exhausted to continue. It no longer had the energy to continue.

Lin Feng jumped down from the horse.

He raised his head and saw that the people he was following were also slowly turning around. While remaining on their horses, they coldly looked towards Lin Feng.

Behind these people, Duan Xin Ye was staring at Lin Feng. Even though her hair was messy, her beautiful face wasn't covered, and her soft and delicate face revealed that she was touched by Lin Feng's actions. Her expression was bewitching.

“Let the princess go.”

Lin Feng grabbed the long sword from his back. He then slowly started walking forwards. He looked cold and expressionless. The tip of his sword was dragging across the ground, which was sliced open by the sword, leaving a trail behind it.

“The prince has given us the order to capture him alive.” said one of the black guards indifferently. Lin Feng was stupefied, as the prince wanted him alive?

The prince was obviously Mo Jie. Could it be that he had planned everything from the beginning and had sent these soldiers to

escort the princess and run far away with her so that Lin Feng would follow them?

“It was too bad that we had to spare his life last time. All we could do was take the princess alive. The prince is too merciful.” said one of the men. His face was visible though. Even though he wasn’t very old, his face was already covered with a long beard.

Besides, what surprised Lin Feng is that even though the eight people accompanying Duan Xin Ye were all black guards, their helmets were different than normal.

Amongst them, four of them had a helmet which entirely covered their face except for their eyes.

The four others were wearing helmets which didn’t entirely cover their faces. The one who had just talked was one of those wearing a helmet which didn’t cover his entire face.

“Hu Qiong, even though we cannot kill him, we can teach him a good lesson. We can still be incredibly cruel.” said another person. Hu Qiong was surprised. An evil smile appeared on his face. His horse then started walking towards Lin Feng.

“Do you know what status the four of us have?” asked Hu Qiong coldly.

“The four idiots.” replied Lin Feng with an indifferent tone. How could he know who Hu Qiong and the others were?

“Idiots?” Hu Qiong smiled coldly. “You will realize how foolish you have been to attack us. We are all black guard Lieutenants. We were leading troops on the battlefield, but because of you and that trap you organized, the prince ordered us to leave and capture you alive. You should be proud of yourself.”

“Lieutenants...” Lin Feng was surprised. Because of him, they used the princess as bait and sent four lieutenants. Against all expectations, they were really interested in him.

But who were the four with their faces covered? Even though the Qi they released was not as strong as that of the lieutenants, it was also extremely strong.

“Your strategy to set the city on fire has led to the death of many of our fellow soldiers, and even though I cannot kill you, I want to beat you within an inch of your life. All I feel is hatred towards you.” said Hu Qiong. He then grabbed his weapon, which was a gigantic axe. He looked ferocious and terrifying. His axe probably weighed at least a few hundred kilos.

“Arrrghhhh!” Hu Qiong shouted furiously. His horse suddenly charged towards Lin Feng at full speed. His axe let out a loud thunderous roar as it tore through the air.

Lin Feng unsheathed his sword with incredible speed and sliced off the front legs from the horse which Hu Qiong was riding. Hu Qiong continued and jumped from his horse towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng then raised his sword to block the axe as it crashed down from above. When the axe and Lin Feng's long sword met, Lin Feng was pushed down. The shock alone was enough to make Lin Feng groan, as he had been injured.

“How powerful!” thought Lin Feng. He was astonished. He was blankly staring at the enemy. That guy was the same strength as the leader of the black guards he killed before, seventh Ling Qi layer. He was a level stronger than Lin Feng. Besides, the pressure of Hu Qiong's battle axe striking Lin Feng felt like a mountain crashing down on him, and it even split the ground beneath him.

“You cannot even withstand a single attack.” laughed Hu Qiong while looking down on Lin Feng.

However, when he raised his axe again, he was astonished. Lin Feng suddenly transformed into a shadow and disappeared from sight.

Lin Feng had acted so quickly that Hu Qiong didn't even have time to react. He was still clumsily raising his huge axe.

“Be careful!” shouted one of the black guards, but it was too late. Lin Feng's sword was already at Hu Qiong's throat.

Hu Qiong was still trying to raise his axe, but Lin Feng had already withdrawn his sword.

Vanishing Shadow was the art of taking people's lives by sudden

surprise attacks before they could react; one strike was enough.

That was the power of a Di level skill. Even when Lin Feng was still at the fourth Ling Qi layer, he had used the same attack to kill a cultivator at the seventh Ling Qi layer.

Lin Feng already possessed the strength of the sixth Ling Qi layer. Not only was his basic strength improved by a great deal, but he had also trained with using his martial skills. Practising his martial skills allowed him to utilize maximum strength when attacking.

He could use his Vanishing Shadow to slaughter people in an instant.

Of course, Lin Feng had managed to kill Hu Qiong, who was at the seventh Ling Qi layer, because he underestimated Lin Feng. He had thought that he was a true expert, and Lin Feng exploited that opportunity.

“I don’t want to die.” Hu Qiong’s throat let out a small cry, his voice husky. And suddenly, blood poured from his throat, and even if he didn’t want to die, he was already dead.

Life and death; a momentary slip and it could all be over.

## Chapter 213: Fearless

---

“Hu Qiong!” shouted the three other lieutenants at the same time. The three other lieutenants were looking at Hu Qiong’s collapsing silhouette, their faces were red with anger.

They then raised their heads and looked at Lin Feng with boiling killing intent.

“You dared to kill Hu Qiong?” said one of the lieutenants sounding ice-cold while fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

“Did you not see it?” asked Lin Feng fearlessly.

Lin Feng had an opportunity to kill his opponents; he wasn’t going to miss it. Hu Qiong possessed the strength of the seventh Ling Qi layer. Hu Qiong’s axe was incredibly powerful to the extent that Lin Feng had been injured by the shock from his attack. If he hadn’t killed Hu Qiong, it was the same as committing suicide.

During a war, while two sides were fighting, all battles were a matter of life and death.

“Grr...” The lieutenant gnashed his teeth. He hated Lin Feng and wanted to kill him but Prince Mo Jie had given the order to capture Lin Feng alive.

Nobody dared disobey Mo Jie’s orders.



“You four, go and capture him.” said the lieutenant while turning around to look at the four who had their faces covered. He sounded cold and commanding.

“No, we can’t do that.” said one them. That lieutenant was surprised. His facial expression became even colder.

Lin Feng was also surprised. It seemed like the relationship between them was not that good. But what kind of relationship did they have?

“We are willing to send out three but two of you have to help them to capture him. How does that sound?” continued the man whose face was covered. He sounded like he was the leader of those four.

“Alright.” said the lieutenant after being unable to make up his mind for a brief period. He then nodded and said: “If you don’t fight with all your strength, don’t blame me for being impolite.”

These five people moved towards Lin Feng, two lieutenants and three of the black guards with their faces covered. When these people released Qi and force, Lin Feng felt that he was suffocating.

How strong. These people had all broken through to the seventh Ling Qi layer.

Looking solemn, Lin Feng’s eyes slowly turned dark. His eyes became cold and expressionless.

He gave the impression that he could control everything around him. He could perceive everything clearly, even each individual leaf rustling in the wind.

While facing five strong cultivators of the seventh Ling Qi layer, Lin Feng was completely focused. What seemed like an endless quantity of battle energy was surrounding his body.

The ground beneath Lin Feng was shaking and his armor was emitting metallic clangs. Lin Feng was firmly holding his sword. Even when facing five cultivators at the seventh Ling Qi layer, Lin Feng didn't flinch.

On the path of cultivation, one of the best traits was a strong willpower and unwavering determination. Even if Lin Feng was facing five cultivators at the seventh Ling Qi layer, he wouldn't flinch. The only way out was a battle and everything else was destiny. That was the only path to reaching the clouds.

Fearlessness led to supreme achievements.

They could feel the powerful battle energy that Lin Feng was releasing, so the five cultivators remained vigilant.

He had killed Hu Qiong, who had broken through to the seventh Ling Qi layer, with a single strike. They couldn't let their guards down and give Lin Feng an exploitable opportunity.

“First, injure him severely. You don’t need to be merciful. Just don’t kill him.” said one of the lieutenants coldly. Their horses neighed as they all rushed towards Lin Feng. They were all attacking Lin Feng at the same time.

Lin Feng’s body flickered and just like a shadow moved backwards and avoided the attacks.

These five people continued to move forwards and suddenly, Lin Feng’s silhouette suddenly disappeared without trace.

“Impossible!” these five cultivator were astonished. There was only a blurry, dark light which looked like a specter in his place. At the same time, a sensation of danger rose within their hearts. He has a shadow spirit.

Unable to change the situation, the five people continued rushing towards the spectre with regret in their hearts.

“Dark Shadow, die!” a subtle sound spread through the atmosphere and blood splashed into the air. The shadow passed by two of the black guards and immediately after, Lin Feng became visible again.

These five people had not grouped together effectively. Lin Feng had his back towards two of the black guards who were charging towards him at full speed. However, as they got closer to Lin Feng, their bodies trembled and they fell down from their horses, they were already dead.

That was the second part of the Di level skill Cross Shadow: Dark Shadow. The cultivator could transform into an almost invisible and inaudible shadow. This was also the part which Protector Kong had never managed to master. However, Lin Feng, when releasing his Celestial Spirit, could use it with a small degree of mastery. Even though it wasn't perfect, he could still transform into a shadow which made him look like a transparent spectre, barely visible. Besides, using that skill, he had easily killed two cultivators who had a higher cultivation than him.

Of course, Lin Feng had to pay a huge price to do so.

Lin Feng coughed up a few mouthfuls of blood and blood was dripping from the corner of his mouth. He hadn't mastered Dark Shadow, so he wasn't able to turn into a perfect shadow, which is why Lin Feng had been damaged by the opponents' attacks. However he managed to kill two of them which could be considered a great achievement.

However, Lin Feng felt that his internal organs were badly injured.

“Lin Feng.”

Duan Xin Ye was looking at Lin Feng and her cheeks were rosy. Why was Lin Feng doing all of this to save her? He was fighting so many strong opponents to save her.

“Bastard.” furiously shouted the lieutenant who had not yet got involved. He immediately charged towards Lin Feng while

throwing his most powerful punch.

Lin Feng could perceive everything around him and could see that fist rushing towards him. Lin Feng quickly punched the ground with his right hand and propelled himself away from the attack. However, he was still affected by the power from that punch. Another mouthful of blood was coughed up as he landed. Lin Feng supported himself on the ground with one hand, but his face was incredibly pale.

Eighth Ling Qi layer!

That lieutenant was also the strongest. He surprisingly had the strength of the eighth Ling Qi layer.

“You killed my brothers, you must die!” As before, that lieutenant wasn’t going to give up. He slammed his powerful foot into the ground and jumped through the air. He was launching another punch towards the injured Lin Feng.

“Boom!”

Lin Feng’s body was propelled backwards. His injuries this time were much more severe. A moment before, he had already been severely injured but now he had just received two punches from a cultivator of the eighth Ling Qi layer.

“Lin Feng, today you will die.” piercingly cold, deadly energy emerged from the lieutenant’s body. He was slowly walking

towards Lin Feng.

“The prince wants him alive. If you kill him, you are disobeying the prince’s orders.” said one of the men with the helmet covering his face. The lieutenant was surprised. He then immediately said in a cold way: “He killed two of my brothers, if I cannot kill him, I will cut off his arms.”

“Cut off my arms?” said Lin Feng while raising his head. His dark and expressionless eyes looked even more determined. He stood up and an incredible quantity of battle energy emerged from his body. This battle energy was insanely fluctuating around Lin Feng’s body.

Suddenly a gigantic ice spirit appeared behind Lin Feng and it seemed to reach the sky. It seemed like the entire area was instantly frozen. The temperature immediately dropped.

Sword Qi was whistling through the atmosphere. It was sharp and deadly.

When the others saw that, they were stupefied. Lin Feng was still able to release such incredible battle energy, his willpower and determination was incredible.

He took a step forward looking calm and detached, but after that step, the battle energy around Lin Feng’s body turned into a violent tempest which started to rage in the center of the ice.

The lieutenant was astonished. He narrowed his eyes. Lin Feng was incredibly dangerous. It seemed like his two types of energy had fused together with the energy from heaven and earth. It seemed like Lin Feng could take on anyone, including the lieutenant.

He was showing the traits of a true hero. He had incredible will power and zeal. His heart was fearless, filled with determination and he felt like he could annihilate everything in his path.

“Die!” said Lin Feng with a calm voice. However, he didn’t use his sword. He used his finger and formed it into a sword. It seemed like his finger had become a real sword. More and more force fused together with the other energy, he was using an energy attack.

When Lin Feng raised his finger, it sounded like the air was being pierced by a sword.

“Boom!”

The lieutenant quickly released his Fierce Beast spirit which released an incredible power. It was an extremely strong spirit, a huge fierce beast that looked like a small mountain.

He had the impression that Lin Feng was extremely dangerous. Even though he had broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer, he was sure that he needed to use all his strength against Lin Feng. He used his most powerful attack ‘Oblivion Fist’ and launched himself toward Lin Feng.

“BOOM!!” the ground was shaking. An insanely strong wind rose between them, clouds of dust were fiercely blown in all directions.

“Come back!”

Lin Feng was violently pushed back but ignored the blood coming from his mouth. Besides, as if his energy was inexhaustible, more piercingly-cold Qi, more sword Qi and more battle energy emerged from body in what seemed to be an endless supply.

“BOOM!”

The ground immediately caved in and a huge crater appeared where Lin Feng stood. Lin Feng was blown backwards once again and he unceasingly continued to cough up mouthfuls of blood. Duan Xin Ye couldn't stand watching this scene any longer.

However, it seemed like the quantity of Qi emerging from Lin Feng's body didn't stop increasing. All the energy he released was fusing together.

That fearless battle energy was becoming as powerful and majestic and the earth and the heavens.



## Chapter 214: Broken Bones

---

The lieutenant was looking at Lin Feng's expressionless eyes and at his ever-increasing Qi. His facial expression became even more serious and his fierce beast spirit started to move while roaring loudly.

“Die!” shouted the lieutenant. The palm of his hand rushed towards Lin Feng. It was filled with extreme strength and it suddenly transformed into a huge bestial hand. The palm had become large enough to cover Lin Feng's entire body, this was clearly the strength of his spirit.

“BOOM!”

That incredible force was crashing through the air towards Lin Feng. It felt like even the ground beneath him was shaking under the pressure, he felt like he was suffocating.

However, his battle energy wasn't disappearing, Lin Feng was fearless. Instead of using a single finger, he used his entire fist and started to concentrate all of his energy into it. His entire fist became sharper than a sword. Anything that fist touched would be pierced straight through. The lieutenant's palm and Lin Feng's fist collided with a brutal explosion.

“BOOM!”

Another extremely loud sound filled the air. The ground under Lin Feng's feet had cracked. The lieutenant was like a massive

ferocious beast and he struck like a mountain crashing down onto Lin Feng.

The noises has suddenly stopped and then the extreme power of the lieutenant's hand started oppressing Lin Feng's body. Lin Feng felt like his bones and internal organs were going to explode. He was badly injured but was still standing upright and he wasn't moving back at all which caused everyone to blankly stare at him.

After a moment the atmosphere became silent. Dripping blood was following the lieutenant's hand as it moved. What nobody knew is that a moment before, Lin Feng's fist had pierced the palm of his hand. There was a huge hole in its center. However, he didn't stop because he knew that Lin Feng's injuries were more severe than his own.

At that moment, Lin Feng's fist was still against the lieutenant's palm. They were standing there motionless. Lin Feng's eyes were expressionless and he could clearly feel everything within his surroundings. That was Lin Feng's own world of darkness.

His bones had been broken and his internal organs had been severely damaged. He could collapse at any moment and breathe his last breath but, as before, he was standing tall.

In his own world, ice was blue, sword energy was white and battle energy was golden. Everything, in his world, could be seen within his mind.

He could borrow force from the world and use it to help him to

carry out even more powerful attacks.

Energy attacks were the highest achievement he had for using this method. He could make different types of energy fuse together and become even more powerful. Shockingly, each attack could be much stronger when fused than when using a massive amount of a single force.

However, no matter if it was force or energy attacks, they were all absorbed from the outside world. They didn't belong to Lin Feng and did not count as his own strength. They were just tools that he could use to harness his strength. They required comprehension and represented a limited power.

In the middle of his own world, Lin Feng had to use his own strength.

In Lin Feng's world, the three colors were spinning and fusing together. At the same time, around Lin Feng's body, there was no ice, no sword energy and no burning battle energy. At that moment, he looked like an ordinary person who didn't even practice cultivation. There was absolutely nothing exceptional about him.

However, while looking extremely common, there was still something mysterious, something which seemed like a heavenly mystery.

Lin Feng's body was absorbing the pure Qi from heaven and earth and that pure Qi was being absorbed into every cell of his

body. Lin Feng's bones, flesh, and muscles were constantly strengthening. His entire skeleton was emitting cracking sounds as if it was trying to reassemble itself from the broken state.

The path of cultivation that a person walked could change their entire destiny.

That sort of change wasn't brought about by a person's strength. Cultivation could modify cultivators' bones, flesh and muscles to make the body more suitable and stronger in accordance with a person's will.

The bones could enhance and become a host for a stronger body.

Flesh and muscles could be strengthened and blood vessels could be enhanced.

A person's temperament was the only thing that could strengthen the power of the mind and spirit.

A person's temperament would be affected by the cultivators training method and actions, it was also the subject of constant change. Bones constantly needed to change and become stronger in order to be in perfect harmony with the strengthened body.

That sort of change required damage. The bones had to be broken before they could become stronger. The weak flesh needed to be destroyed before it could become more resilient. When the body was broken it could continue to become stronger, however

this was only meant for within cultivation practice, not battle.

It was as if Lin Feng had changed the rules. He had only broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer and his bones had been broken by external damage. This wasn't done in the process of cultivation, but during battle, however Lin Feng was using the external forces to gain a better understanding of cultivation and to strengthen his body.

He had broken bones yet he was still standing!

The people who were present were astonished. Their hearts were racing. They could feel that Lin Feng had changed but they couldn't say what had changed about him. He still seemed to be the same person as before.

His temperament had completely changed. At that moment, it seemed like Lin Feng, the heavens and the earth were all in perfect harmony. It seemed like his true nature was finally revealed.

Lin Feng seemed incredibly dangerous at that moment. The lieutenant who was fighting against him had a clear advantage, but he couldn't help but feel a terrible premonition as if he was in great danger.

That feeling of insecurity made him quick to act again. He stamped his foot into the ground like a huge ferocious beast. The ground shook and a cloud of dust rose in the air.

The lieutenant raised his head and rushed like a madman toward Lin Feng. The palm of a gigantic hand appeared again and rushed towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng moved his hand slightly and immediately swiped his hand in the direction of the illusionary palm. A bright light filled the air from the collision. When the light disappeared, the scent of blood filled the air. A hand had been cut off and was sent flying through the air.

Immediately after, an extremely loud and painful shriek could be heard.

“AAHHHHHH.... My hand.....”

A short moment after, the lieutenant realized that his hand was missing. He looked at his left forearm but there was no hand attached and only a fountain of blood pouring from his arm. A hideous expression covered his face.

How was this possible? Even most cultivators of the seventh Ling Qi layer who were using weapons would not even scratch his skin. His fierce beast spirit was extremely strong. When using his beast spirit, his offensive and defensive abilities were terrifyingly high. However, at that moment, his hand had easily been sliced off. He didn't even know where that bright and resplendent light came from.

There were absolutely no weapons in Lin Feng's hands.

The other people were also staring at Lin Feng. They were astonished. That bright and resplendent light a moment before was.... Lin Feng's hand.

At that moment, Lin Feng didn't look ordinary any longer, he was standing there and his entire body looked like it had transformed into a sword, an extremely terrifying sword.

His body was a sword and his sword was his body.

That bright and resplendent light had come from his hand because his entire body was a sword.

“Sword fusion!” The crowd was astonished. Indeed, that was one of the sword force layers, sword and body fusion. Lin Feng had broken through to another layer of mastery regarding forces.

Lin Feng only had the strength of the sixth Ling Qi layer but could surprisingly understand some of the mysteries of the Xuan Qi layer... which even some cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer couldn't understand. His natural talent and intelligence was monstrous.

“Cut!” said Lin Feng in a low voice. Lin Feng raised his hand again. The lieutenant was covering the stump on his forearm with his other hand and suddenly started shaking in fear. He wanted to move back but it was already too late. The mysterious bright light rose again and sliced into the lieutenant's throat like a flash. His face suddenly looked rigid and he immediately collapsed.

A cultivator of the eighth Ling Qi layer was dead.

Lin Feng, with his strength, had already killed three cultivators of the seventh Ling Qi layer as well as one of the eighth Ling Qi layer.

From those eight black guards, one lieutenant was left as well as three people whose faces were covered.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at one of the people, whose face was covered, he was next to the princess. That person immediately moved aside and opened the way for Lin Feng. He then said: "The princess is yours."

Lin Feng was stupefied, he moved towards the princess and looked at the man whose face was covered, and he saw him move towards the three remaining survivors.

"You're not going to kill him?" coldly asked the last remaining lieutenant while looking at the man, whose face was covered.

"There are only four of us. Even if we all attacked together, we only have a small chance of winning." said the man whose face was covered while moving towards the lieutenant. He then suddenly transformed into a shadow, jumped off his horse and rushed towards the last remaining lieutenant. An extremely strong wind emanated from his hand and crashed into the lieutenant's chest.

The lieutenant's heart twitched, his internal organs had been



damaged beyond repair by that attack.

“You.....” the lieutenant wanted to speak but he then saw the masked man carrying out a final attack against him. The lieutenant then fell off his horse, dead.

# Chapter 215: Painful Love!

---

Lin Feng looked surprised.

The two others with their helmets covering their faces also looked at Lin Feng. They peculiar look in their eyes.

“Lin Feng, the three of us will not fight against you. You can leave.” said one of them sounding cold. They had all moved out of Lin Feng’s path together.

“You guys are alright with my decision, right?” the two others remained silent and immediately nodded.

“Let’s go.” said the leader of the men. Immediately after, they turned around and left. They saw that Lin Feng didn’t intend to stop them. Their horses neighed and they then started galloping away at full speed fearing that Lin Feng might change his mind.

But when they had both caught up to the leader of the group, a brutal energy crashed into their bodies. The sound of thunder spread through the atmosphere and blood poured from the two black guards mouths.

Immediately after, another strike of that powerful energy hit them from behind, they could only feel their body go rigid. They tried to release their own energy and move away, but it was already too late. At the moment when they tried to move themselves away, a lethal hand strike pierced both of their chests, killing them in an instant.

Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye were astonished. They slowly turned around and looked at the final remaining black guard.

They only saw that he was moving towards them. When he arrived in front of Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye, he said: "Lin Feng, even though you have become stronger at the critical moment, you are now very weak and cannot fight for much longer, I advise that you to avoid future trouble and to find a place to rest."

"Huh?" Lin Feng narrowed his eyes. He knew that he was very weak at that moment.

Indeed, even though Lin Feng's broken bones had started to reassemble themselves and he could fuse with his sword, his bones still hadn't completely recovered. Besides, his internal organs had been severely damaged. Lin Feng perfectly understood that he was in no state to continue fighting.

When he saw that the man wanted to leave without killing him, he felt like he was truly too weak.

Besides, Lin Feng couldn't understand why that person was willing to help him.

Who is that person really? Why was he with the black guards?

"Who are you?" asked Lin Feng.

“You don’t need to know who I am, Lin Feng. You have a strong determination and willpower, you are fearless, these qualities are engraved deep in your heart and they make you the cultivator that you are today. Not everybody can be like that, many people chose to be scared of dying and suffer in silence.” said the man without answering Lin Feng’s question.

“Lin Feng, this war between our two countries is not as simple to understand as you imagine. Behind the curtains, we are just pawns, nobodies. They will sacrifice us at any time to achieve what they desire, like savage animal. This time, you took a risk but it wasn’t worth it because nothing was going to happen to the princess.” Said the man with the helmet still covering his face. His eyes, which were visible, were looking at Lin Feng and looked sincere.

“Don’t forget to not return using the same road you used to come. Not all the Mo Yue army will die during the war or at least, Mo Jie will not die. Wait until they come back to Mo Yue and then you can go back to Xue Yue. Finally, it is my wish that you will make the Yun Hai Sect rise once again.”

When that man finished talking, he turned around and galloped away at full speed. His silhouette gradually disappeared on the horizon.

Lin Feng was looking at that silhouette from behind and lights were flashing in his eyes. A thousand thoughts were flashing through his mind.

“Make the Yun Hai Sect rise once again?!” repeated Lin Feng in a

low voice. That man had said that Lin Feng was determined and fearless, that these values were deeply engraved in his heart and said that many people suffered in silence scared for their lives. Maybe this person was speaking of himself, suffering in silence to save his own life.

That person must have been a former member of the Yun Hai Sect!

Indeed, that person was indeed a former member of the Yun Hai Sect. Besides, he had chosen to take refuge in the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue to save his own life which is why he said those words.

That person, had skills as limpid as water, he was extremely strong and had broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer. In Lin Feng's mind, he could only think of one person, there had been an incredibly strong disciple in the Yun Hai Sect.

“Ling Hu..... He Shan!” That person used to be the first disciple of the Yun Hai Sect Core Disciples, Ling Hu He Shan.

“Lin Feng, this war between our two countries is not as simple to understand as you imagine. Behind the curtains, we are just pawns, nobodies. They will sacrifice us at any time to achieve what they desire, like savage animal. This time, you took a risk but it wasn't worth it because nothing was going to happen to the princess.”

Lin Feng recalled Ling Hu He Shan's words once again. His heart was pounding. Indeed, Ling Hu He Shan had been at the princess'

side, which meant that the four men with helmets covering their faces were all students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

Students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue as well as black guards had been working together to secure the princess.

People who were meant to be absolute enemies had been collaborating.

The leader of the Mo Yue armies was Mo Jie and the leader of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was Duan Tian Lang.

When Lin Feng thought about that, cold killing intent invaded his entire body and penetrated into his heart and even his bones.

This war was like a chess game. Its outcome was planned from the beginning.

The fact that the princess had been kidnapped, the chaos amongst the troops, the lives of a few hundred thousand soldiers, everything had been planned from the beginning and was part of their plan. Everything had been planned so that the people behind the curtains could achieve their goals. These people wanted Lin Feng dead which is why they captured the princess in Lin Feng's presence and had then blamed Liu Cang Lan. That tragedy had led to the death of hundreds of thousands people.

However, Lin Feng had given his best to ruin their plans. He had been unwilling to give up and had made great efforts to find the

princess. Was that really worth it though?

Fortunately, Lin Feng hadn't died. He had gained enlightenment through battle and had learnt how to master sword fusion. He was much stronger now than before.

Lin Feng stood there while remaining silence. Finally, he moved and took a deep breath, all his thoughts vanished like smoke.

Lin Feng had a clear conscience and had stuck to his beliefs. That was enough.

That plot and the conspiracy to take his life had actually helped him to become stronger.

His path of cultivation would allow him to reach the clouds and to destroy any plots or conspiracies that came his way.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at Duan Xin Ye with a cold and indifferent glare. He was absolutely expressionless as if he was looking at a stranger.

"Lin Feng!" said Duan Xin Ye when she saw Lin Feng's expression. Lin Feng's cold expression made her heart start to race.

She just saw Lin Feng raise his hand, and in a flash, the vines constricting her body were cut down.

When he finished, Lin Feng turned around and left, while surprisingly ignoring Duan Xin Ye.

Initially, she was a good person and was safe inside the capital.

But because she decided to come to the battlefield, hundreds of thousands of people had to die. Lin Feng himself had almost died trying to save her.

“Lin Feng, I didn’t know!” said Duan Xin Ye in a low voice. Her eyes were moist. She had heard Ling Hu He Shan and obviously understood everything he said. She also knew what Lin Feng was thinking at that moment.

As a princess, she had played the key role in the conspiracy. How could all these things be unclear to her? She was royalty who could pass the heavy curtains to enter the imperial palace. Besides, Lin Feng had already asked her why she wanted to come to the battlefield even though it wasn’t necessary for her to be there and was even dangerous. That conspiracy was obviously the reason why she had come. She could perfectly understand Lin Feng’s feelings.

Lin Feng continued forward. He didn’t look like he intended to stop. He looked steady and firm.

“Lin Feng, I really didn’t know!” said Duan Xin Ye, tears were flowing from her eyes. She felt a heavy pain gripping her heart.



Only a woman in love could feel such a pain within her heart!

Maybe she had actually fallen in love!

# Chapter 216: Lack of Pure Qi

---

A horse-driven carriage was moving down an ancient road.

Three horses were pulling the carriage. Behind that carriage, there were many people riding horses and acting as guards.

“Neeeiighh...”

The person driving the carriage pulled back on the reins and came to a stop.

Then, guards on the right and left of the carriage continued moving forwards. A person was lying on the ground. That person was wearing the armor of a soldier.

“Fu Bo, his heartbeat is normal, there is no irregularity at all. He’s alive but unconscious.” said one man to the driver of the carriage while checking the person’s body.

“Move him to the side of the road. We have to hurry.” said the driver of the carriage indifferently. The man was about to execute the order, but at that moment, a pair of lily-white hands opened the curtains of the carriage. A delicate face appeared from behind the curtains. It was a beautiful young girl, she was very young. Lights were flashing in her eyes.

“Fu Bo, how could a soldier end up here lying on the road?” asked the young woman whose voice was clear and limpid. Fu Bo shook

his head and said: “I’m not sure, but in our country, Mo Yue, ordinary soldiers are not that strong. Except for soldiers whose rank is lieutenant or above, the others are not considered strong on the battlefield. That person must be extremely weak which would explain why he was abandoned on the road.”

“Oh.” said the young girl while slightly nodding. A light flashed in her eyes and she said: “Take him with us in the carriage.”

“Miss, this is not appropriate.” said Fu Bo who was surprised.

“It doesn’t matter, Fu Bo.” said the young girl while ignoring him and smiling. She then talked to the man who was standing at the soldiers side and said: “Carry him over here and put him inside the carriage.”

That guards glanced at Fu Bo. However, Fu Bo had no choice but to nod. The guards had no other choice but to carry the unconscious soldier into the carriage.

The carriage then slowly continued moving forwards. In the carriage, there was delicate young woman and young girl who was about ten years old. She was also very pretty.

“Zi Ling, why did you bring a stranger into the carriage?” asked the young woman. She was curiously looking at the young soldier lying down in the carriage. She could help but frown.

“Zi Yi, big sister, look, he looks so young, can you guess his age?”

said the young beautiful little girl as if she hadn't heard the original question. She looked very curious as well.

Zi Ling glanced at Zi Yi and slightly shook her head. She then looked at the lying young man and frowned. Suddenly, she looked perplexed.

“What a delicate and handsome young man.” thought Zi Yi while sighing. Even though that young man was unconscious, his face was delicate, he had dashing eyebrows and his cheeks looked extremely delicate. His entire body was covered with dust from the road.

That young man didn't look like a soldier, why was he wearing armor?

“Zi Yi, sister, that young man and you seem to be the same age. He's very handsome. You would be a perfect couple.” said Zi Ling.

“Don't talk nonsense.” said Zi Yi.

“Zi Yi, sister, I'm just joking, I know that your husband would have to be stronger than you. You have already broken through to the third Ling Qi layer, you're a genius. He's very young and he's a soldier, how could he be stronger than you?” said Zi Ling while smiling. Zi Yi was just shaking her head.

“Zi Ling, instead of talking about me, you should be talking about your cultivation, especially your sword skills.”

“Hee hee.” laughed Zi Ling.

Zi Ling then said: “Zi Yi, sister, why does Zi Qiong suddenly want to get married? I didn’t think that he had a girl he liked.”

When Zi Yi heard Zi Ling, she frowned and immediately said: “The day of the offerings for the gods and ancestors is approaching. Zi Qiong needs to be married to gain access to the forbidden area. Therefore, his wedding is a very normal thing. Concerning the girl, I heard that they’ve only known each other for a few days. Otherwise, I don’t much more than you.”

A light flashed in Zi Ling’s eyes and then she shook her head as a sign that she didn’t understand such complicated things.

But at that moment, the young man lying in the carriage moved his finger. Zi Ling was surprised and said: “He’s awake.”

Then, the young man’s hand started to move. Immediately after, he opened his eyes.

The young man’s eyes were big and beautiful but at that moment, his eyes revealed uncertainty.

That young man was Lin Feng.

On that day, after the conversation with Duan Xin Ye, he left her

and walked for a great distance. He didn't get the impression that something was wrong with his body but suddenly, he fainted and did not know what happened after that.

He had no idea what happened. He didn't even know how many days had passed since that moment.

Zi Ling and Zi Yi were surprised when they saw Lin Feng. What a handsome young man! At that moment, his eyes were open as he laid on the floor of the carriage.

"Where am I?" asked Lin Feng while looking at the two girls. He looked perplexed.

"You're awake. My name is Zi Ling. You were lying on the road and we accidentally came across you so we took you into our carriage." said Zi Ling while blinking unceasingly. She then said: "Oh by the way, how did you faint on that road? And are you a soldier? What is your military ranking? How strong are you?" Zi Ling was unceasingly asking questions which cause Lin Feng's mind to spin. He said in a weak voice: "Is it ok if I get up first?"

"Oh, ok." said Zi Ling a bit embarrassed. Immediately after, Lin Feng, who was lying on the floor, stood up and sat down opposite the girl.

"My name is Lin Feng. I fainted because I was injured. I am just an ordinary soldier. My strength is....."

While talking, Lin Feng tried to gather some of his pure Qi but then, he suddenly looked astonished. He just had the feeling that he was empty inside and there wasn't even a trace of pure Qi.

“What’s wrong?”

Lin Feng’s heart was pounding. His eyes were turbulent. He remembered that he had become stronger. He should have become much stronger but at that moment, he surprisingly couldn’t manage to condense any pure Qi. There wasn’t any pure Qi inside of his body any longer.

“What’s wrong” asked Zi Ling when she saw that Lin Feng’s facial expression change so drastically. She then asked: “You were just about to tell us how strong you were?”

Lin Feng glanced at Zi Ling and immediately after, he closed his eyes. He could still clearly perceive everything around him.

Even without releasing the first layer of his Celestial Spirit, he was still able to perceive every part of his body, the muscles, the flesh and the blood vessels. He could perfectly sense everything that was happening within his body.

If Lin Feng wanted, he could perceive everything that was happening around him to a circumference of a thousand kilometres, the whole world would become an image within his mind.

“Indeed, I have become stronger and it even seems that my bones, flesh and muscles are much stronger than before.”

Lin Feng opened his eyes and used one hand to violently punch the palm of his other hand. He had gained impressive strength. Even though there was no pure Qi, while considering his body's strength, he was much stronger than he was before. That meant that he now had a stronger constitution.

However, Lin Feng persistently tried to control pure Qi, but something was wrong, it seemed like there was absolutely no pure Qi within his body.

“What the hell has happened to me?” thought Lin Feng while frowning. He had become stronger but did not have any pure Qi, what was that supposed to mean?

Could it be that, after he became stronger and mastered his sword fusion, something strange happened to his body? Why would his pure Qi have run dry?

Lin Feng tried to absorb pure Qi into his body again but it would only circulate within his body, it wouldn't penetrate inside or be absorbed. It seemed like the external world and the inside of his body were completely separated. Whatever he tried, it seemed like the universe did not agree.

Lin Feng had never heard of such a condition, let alone seen it. He didn't understand what was happening to him.



Lin Feng was firmly frowning for a long time and then tried to relax. His cultivation was unlikely to have been crippled.

Maybe it was something good, maybe he had entered an unknown path on the road to cultivation.

While thinking that, Lin Feng felt a bit relieved. At that moment, there was no amazing energy inside of him but it wasn't a bad thing. He still had the Qi that an ordinary person who did not practice cultivation would have. He even looked even more handsome.

"Why are you not talking?" asked Zi Ling while looking at Lin Feng after seeing that his facial expression didn't stop changing while he remained silent.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at Zi Ling, he then said: "It seems like I have no strength at all."

"No strength?" sighed Zi Ling surprised. She had a strange expression on her face.

"A piece of trash then?" said Zi Yi straightforwardly. She frowned. A person who had no strength was obviously a piece of trash. In the continent, nobody could gain a high place within society if they weren't strong. They would systematically be thrown aside even if they were handsome.

At that moment, she looked at Lin Feng with disdain.

# Chapter 217: The Mysteries of Cultivation

---

When Lin Feng heard the expression “piece of trash”, he raised his head and saw that both girls were looking at him with different looks than before, it made him feel exasperated.

In the world of cultivation, those who were not strong would only be thrown away. However, some people, even though they thought that way, didn't show what they thought to other people, which was much better than how Zi Yi was behaving.

“Zi Ling, let's kick him out of the carriage.” said Zi Yi in a cold and detached way. She sounded calm and unscrupulous. At that moment, she only thought about the fact that the person she was looking at was a piece of trash, even though he was handsome.

“Are you not a soldier? How come you don't practice cultivation? Haven't you at least, broken through to the Qi layer?” asked Zi Ling while looking at Lin Feng. She was looking at him with a strange look.

“I was injured and now it seems like I don't have the slightest bit of strength.” said Lin Feng while shaking his head. He wasn't going to get angry because of Zi Yi's words. Lin Feng had just gone through war. He had gone through a great deal of horrible things and seen oceans of blood flowing on the battlefield. His heart had matured and he realized that his previous actions were childish. His temperament had evolved, it would now be difficult for him to be affected by the words of others.

“Oh.” said Zi Ling while nodding. She was looking at Lin Feng while looking pensive as if she was thinking about a solution for Lin Feng.

“Zi Ling, if the people of the mountain village know that we have a piece of trash inside the carriage, they will make fun of us and laugh, let’s kick him out, ok?” said Zi Yi again. She really had no manners, talking about Lin Feng to his face. A piece of trash was nothing to them, so she didn’t need to speak in a tactful way, even if he felt humiliated, it did not matter.

“Zi Yi, sister, meeting him was fate, there is no need to be so heartless and cruel.” said Zi Ling while shaking her head and then said: “Lin Feng, I will allow you to act as my servant. You will be under my care and you can enter our mountain village.”

“Servant?” Lin Feng was astonished. Become her slave?

In his heart, he was smiling wryly, he wouldn’t have thought that he would be forced into servitude like that but he was still within the borders of Mo Yue while unable to absorb pure Qi. He had no cultivation. If he ventured alone, he would probably encounter a dangerous situation, therefore, it was better for him to act as a servant.

If he regained his strength, who would dare treat him like a servant?

Lin Feng slightly nodded and didn’t express his opinion.

“Very good, then it is settled.” said Zi Ling while smiling. Zi Yi remained silent while shaking her head.

The Zi Wei Mountain Village was surrounded by mountains. It was a quiet and beautiful place. It was situated in the north of Mo Yue. It was a place of great influence and it belonged to the Zi Clan.

It was said that the strongest cultivator of the Zi Clan was at the Xuan Qi layer. Besides, the Zi Clan was extremely old, even older than the Mo Yue Country. However, as time passed, its influence declined.

Zi Ling was the eldest daughter of the Zi Wei Mountain Village Clan. Zi Yi had been adopted and raised by Zi Ling’s father. Therefore, in the Zi Wei Mountain Village, Zi Ling had more authority than Zi Yi which is why even though Zi Yi wanted to make Lin Feng leave the carriage, if Zi Ling didn’t accept, Zi Yi had no choice but to accept it.

The Zi Wei Mountain Village was extremely vast. The place where Zi Ling lived was picturesque, clear water and green gardens. It was surrounded by a huge garden and emerald bamboo trees. It looked particularly peaceful.

At this moment, Lin Feng was holding a broom and was sweeping the courtyard of the garden. However, he wasn’t paying attention to the ground at all, he was lost in his own thoughts.

He was able to sense the pure Qi of heaven and earth, his perception was even clearer and more distinct than before but he

was still unable to absorb it and make it penetrate his body. That strange condition was troubling him so much that his heart started to race as he thought about it.

A single leaf was floating on the wind. Lin Feng looked at that leaf and could distinctly perceive where it was going and where it would land on the ground.

Lin Feng grabbed the broom with his left hand and raised his right hand, like a sword, he moved it towards the leaf in an attempt to cut it. Even though there was no pure Qi and no sword energy, his hand still moved like a sword with incredible strength.

However, when Lin Feng's hand got close to the leaf, it just moved away and continued floating through the air. He couldn't touch it and couldn't catch it. It would move away from him every time. Lin Feng could only slice through the air, but not cut the leaf.

"I cannot cut it!" Lin Feng was a bit surprised. The leaf fell onto the ground. A tree leaf was simple but Lin Feng couldn't touch it. Even though the position of the leaf was perfectly clear in his mind, he was unable to predict its next movements. If he tried to touch the leaf, its trajectory would change.

If Lin Feng could control pure Qi, it would have been very easy for him to cut a leaf but at that moment, even though his hand was still like a sword, he was unable to cut the leaf.

"Even though I am fused with my sword, it seems that it's not enough as if something is missing." whispered Lin Feng. Even

though he was, indeed, stronger than before, Lin Feng had the impression he was in front of a locked door and was only single step away from unlocking it.

He was in a complex situation and if he didn't take the next step, he wouldn't be able to absorb pure Qi.

"I remember on the day when I became stronger, my bones had been broken, my internal organs were severely wounded, my determination had allowed me to make battle energy, sword energy, and ice energy fuse altogether. Like that, I had transformed into a sharp sword, what I was thinking about at that moment was my sword more than the energy attack, I had managed to carry out sword fusion. My determination is what played the decisive role in me becoming stronger." whispered Lin Feng trying to recall the moment when he gained his strength.

"I managed to carry out my sword fusion by relying on my spirit, on the first layer of my celestial spirit. It helped become physically stronger and become more aware of the world surrounding me. My spirit enabled me to understand my sword in a much greater detail and allowed me to fuse with my sword. It seems like amongst all the things I understood, there is something that I am missing, as if I do not yet have the requirements to use my current strength." thought Lin Feng while his heart was pounding as if he had just received a glimpse of enlightenment. His spirit was extremely strong and had enabled him to become stronger and reach this unique situation. However, it seemed like that without using the power of his spirit, he wasn't strong enough to use the power. Therefore, because of his special condition, he was unable to absorb pure Qi.

“I use battle energy, ice energy, sword energy, and fuse them together as a sword. It’s not battle energy and it’s not ice energy.”

“Even though it is a leaf, it follows the force of the wind without being cut, could I make the energy of heaven and earth fuse with the leaf?” Lin Feng was holding the broom and was lost in thought. He was standing in the huge garden facing the bamboo forest while remaining completely motionless.

A middle-aged man and Zi Yi stopped walking when they saw Lin Feng in the garden.

“Father, this is the piece of trash that we came across last time. Zi Ling insisted on him coming to the village mountain, to let him take care of the garden and let him live here.” explained Zi Yi to the middle-aged man while looking at Lin Feng.

At that moment, the middle-aged man was fixedly staring at Lin Feng looking pensive.

“Father, don’t you want to kick him out?” said Zi Yi when she saw that the middle-aged man remained silent.

“Stop talking.” said the middle-aged man while staring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was standing there remaining motionless but dust was flowing around him as if there was a vortex created around Lin Feng.

It was very subtle, it was impossible to notice it without paying

extreme attention.

Zi Yi glanced at Lin Feng and didn't know what her father was looking at. Her eyes were filled with disdain and then she didn't look at Lin Feng again, a piece of trash wasn't worth her attention.

“Father, I'm going to call Zi Ling.” said Zi Yi to the middle-aged man. Her father ignored her. She shook her head and moved towards the house in the middle of the garden.

After she left, something strange happened. The vortex surrounding Lin Feng was becoming faster and more violent. Besides, Lin Feng had a marvelous expression on his face. At that moment, Lin Feng, seemed to be fusing with heaven and earth. The middle-aged man was amazed.



## Chapter 218: Earth Fusion

---

“How strange.” whispered the middle-aged man. At that moment, Lin Feng was giving him an extraordinary impression.

When looking at Lin Feng’s back, he had the feeling he was looking at a celestial being, Lin Feng made his heartbeat race. Was Lin Feng really the person Zi Yi was talking about?

“Has he come to the Zi Wei Mountain Village to become a servant or is it because he doesn’t care about what we think of him and seeks to advance his cultivation?” thought the middle-aged man. On the continent, it wasn’t uncommon for disciples belonging to powerful clans to practice cultivation on a journey. Some of them went to war and gained experience on the battlefield while others degraded themselves to become slaves to test their determination, to change their state of mind. The middle-aged man thought that Lin Feng probably belonged to the second category.

Otherwise, that young man would unlikely be standing there while controlling the Qi of heaven and earth. How could he become a servant and clean the garden in a small mountain village?

The middle-aged man took a step and then started walking slowly towards Lin Feng. However, he was walking very carefully trying not to make any sound, he was afraid that he would interrupt Lin Feng.

At that moment, Lin Feng’s state of mind was as limpid as water.

He was absolutely lost in his thoughts not paying attention to his surroundings.

“On that day, when I reached my current state, around my body was battle energy, ice energy and sword energy... before I made all the energy fuse together. Why did it become sword energy, why didn't it become ice energy or battle energy?” Lin Feng kept asking himself thousands of questions.

“A sword can have sword force, a blade can have blade force, a sword can be used to carry out an energy attack just like a blade. When a cultivator masters the sword, they can fuse with their sword, when they master the blade, they can fuse together with their blade: well, what about the other types of energy?”

“For example, a moment ago, the leaf was floating on the wind, however a leaf has leaf force; when the wind controlling the leaf has wind force. Force is present in all things and can be used for energy attacks and fused. Swords and blades are not the only things which produce force, it should be possible to fuse with all of the ten thousand things of creation.” Lin Feng felt like he had realized something. He suddenly gained enlightenment.

Lin Feng raised his hand in the air and slashed it through the air, like a shadow, his movement was invisible. Suddenly, a leaf was cut into hundreds of pieces which floated through the air.

Even though Lin Feng was closing his eyes, he had a feeling of absolute control, as if he could control everything around him. He had the same feeling as when he was using his spirit, but it was different to some extent.

When he used his spirit, his entire world became darkness but at that moment, it seemed like he had fused together with the earth. He could clearly perceive everything that was happening around him.

In the manuals of cultivation, it was said that cultivation depended on your awareness level and your advancement. As far as awareness is concerned, if you wanted to open the door which lead to the truth of the universe, first, you had to become one with the earth.

“Become one with the earth!” thought Lin Feng. He opened his eyes and a faint smile appeared on his face. He wasn’t overjoyed and didn’t look arrogant either. At that moment, Lin Feng looked ordinary yet magnificent.

He had reached another dimension of cultivation, which was in perfect harmony with his path of cultivation.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at the middle-aged man who wasn’t standing very far from him, Lin Feng smiled at him. That smile made the middle-aged man feel unworthy.

“Young cultivator!” said the middle-aged man. His voice was filled with respect.

Lin Feng looked at the middle-aged man and nodded as a sign of politeness.

“Young cultivator, my daughters are extremely rash and immature. I, Zi Nan, have come here to apologize. I hope that you can forgive my daughters.” said the middle-aged man while slightly bowing. How could his daughters call this young man a nobody? Even though his adopted daughter had talent, her behaviour was unacceptable in front of such a talented young man.

“My name is Lin Feng. I do not blame them, but the world we live in. Coming to this village was my own decision.” replied Lin Feng indifferently. For having been able to penetrate into the dimension earth fusion, Lin Feng should be thankful to Zi Ling and Zi Yi for having brought him to the Zi Wei Mountain Village. He was a servant there for a few days, while sweeping the garden, his heart felt peaceful and serene. He could calmly occupy himself with his current cultivation problems which enabled him to break through the final barrier.

If Zi Ling hadn't picked him up on the roadside, Lin Feng didn't know what might have happened.

Penetrating into the earth fusion dimension was an extremely rare thing. If Lin Feng had really penetrated into it, it was by relying on luck.

When Zi Nan heard Lin Feng, he was sure that he had guessed correctly. Lin Feng was certainly the disciple of a powerful clan who had left home to practice cultivation. There was absolutely no doubt about it.

“Is there a cultivation room in the village? If you have one, please let me use it.” Said Lin Feng.

“Of course.” immediately replied Zi Nan and then added: “Young cultivator, please follow me.”

While talking, the middle-aged man started walking and leading the way. He and Lin Feng was walking towards the bamboo forest. It was a very mysterious place. The pure Qi of heaven and earth was in a dense fog floating above the ground. The Qi was very thick and powerful here.

Zi Nan said: “Young cultivator, this is the best cultivation location of the Zi Wei Mountain which is why we built the village here. Young cultivator, you can immediately go inside. Besides, there are many purity stones inside, you can use however many you need.”

Zi Nan was very generous. Having the opportunity to get acquainted with a such a rare young genius was a once in a lifetime opportunity.

Lin Feng slightly nodded and went into the room. The pure Qi of heaven and earth condensed into a white fog. Lin Feng wouldn't have thought that a place like Zi Wei would have such a great place for cultivation.

When Lin Feng arrived inside, he saw a myriad of purity stones on the ground. He sat crossed-legged and entered into a tranquil state of mind. Suddenly, Lin Feng fused with the earth and a

colossal amount of pure Qi started penetrating into his body at a shocking speed.

With eagerness, Lin Feng absorbed as much of the pure Qi that was rushing into him as possible.

Lin Feng didn't spend too much time in the cultivation room, one hour later, he left the room. When he came out, Zi Nan was sitting on the ground waiting for Lin Feng.

"Young cultivator." said Zi Nan while standing up. He had a smile on his face. At that moment, there was nothing strange about Lin Feng as if he was the exact same person that entered the room. However, Lin Feng was shrouded in mystery.

"Let's go." said Lin Feng. The two of them left and went back towards the garden.

Zi Yi and Zi Ling were looking for their father everywhere. At that moment, by coincidence, they turned around and saw their father. When they saw that he was with Lin Feng, they couldn't help but be surprised.

Zi Yi shouted: "Father! Zi Ling and I have been looking for you everywhere!"

"Dad, we are getting ready to leave." said Zi Ling while smiling. She then looking at Lin Feng and said: "Lin Feng, you can tidy this place and then make preparations for our departure."

“How dare you!” shouted Zi Nan. Zi Ling was slightly surprised. She then saw that Zi Nan was staring at her and was about to add something, but Lin Feng spoke first: “Miss, where are you going?”

“Our clan also controls the government of the Zi Wei. In a few days, the young master Zi Qiong will get married and because we are related, we obviously have to go and congratulate him. This is why I asked Zi Ling and Zi Yi to prepare to leave for the Zi Government.” replied Zi Nan before either of the girls could respond. Lin Feng nodded to indicate that he understood. Lin Feng understood that the young master of their clan was going to get married and they had to go pay respects.

“Daddy, we’ve heard that Zi Qiong’s wife is very beautiful, much more beautiful than all the women in the clan. Besides, she’s from Xue Yue. I also heard that she did not want to marry him, is this really true?” said Zi Ling while shaking her head. Her eyes were filled with curiosity while looking towards Zi Nan.

“Don’t talk nonsense!” said Zi Nan while frowning. Immediately after, he said in a low voice: “There are some rumors which say that the beautiful woman is the princess of Xue Yue, but it is not confirmed, we cannot talk about this on the outside.”

“Oh, I see.” said Zi Ling while blinking.

As far as Lin Feng was concerned, he was shaking.

The princess of Xue Yue?

Lin Feng knew that there was only one princess in Xue Yue and that was Duan Xin Ye!

“Could it be her?” Lin Feng frowned. On that day, Lin Feng had stormed away from Duan Xin Ye and didn’t know what had happened to her. Besides, from what Zi Nan was saying, that woman was the princess of Xue Yue. She was beautiful and besides, it seemed like she was being forced into the marriage. The chances of her being Duan Xin Ye were high.

“Master, I will come with you.” said Lin Feng to Zi Nan. Zi Nan was surprised. He looked at Lin Feng with a serious look, he was obviously not going to refuse.

“Could it be that you want to go because you heard that the woman was very beautiful? Is it why you are so impatient to leave?” said Zi Yi with a smile on her face while looking at Lin Feng before adding: “But the future husband is Zi Qiong, you are only a servant. Your social status is way too low. Don’t even have such thoughts or you might die, the best thing you can do is continue your life as a lowly servant.”

“Shut up!” shouted Zi Nan and immediately looked at Lin Feng: “Lin Feng, young cultivator, if you want to go then you can take my place. I hope that you will look after my two girls until they arrive.”



# Chapter 219: Foot of the Golden Zi Mountain

---

Zi Nan's logic was simple. He was hoping that, by spending some time alone with his girls, Lin Feng would get along with them.

Zi Ling was a few years younger than Lin Feng. Zi Yi and Lin Feng were about the same age. Even though they couldn't be considered as very beautiful, they were cute, besides, they were quite strong. If Lin Feng could get along with them, that would be a nice thing.

Of course, even if he didn't manage to get along with them, he could still ensure their protection, what could he have against them travelling together?

However, at that moment, Zi Yi and Zi Ling were surprised. They were looking at their father, Zi Nan, in a strange way, their father was calling Lin Feng "Young Cultivator"?

"Dad, what did you call him?" asked Zi Ling who was very surprised. Usually, her father almost never scolded her and at that moment, he had already scolded her twice because of Lin Feng.

"Zi Ling, Zi Yi, your behaviour is inadmissible. Lin Feng's cultivation level is much more advanced than yours. The fact that he is patient and accommodating with you is just due to his kind and magnanimous personality. You just don't know how to distinguish good from bad. Daring to treat him as a servant, you are really shameless." Zi Nan scolded his two daughters again. His words were profound and meaningful.

He then said: “This time, I will let Lin Feng go with you, you two should ask Lin Feng for advice and listen to what he tells you. You should make sure to stay friendly with him.”

“His cultivation level is much more advanced than ours?” said Zi Ling while staring at Lin Feng. She was extremely curious. She then said: “Father, are really not mistaken?”

“Father, you shouldn’t trust him. He is a nobody.” said Zi Yi who didn’t believe her father’s words. She was a genius and had already broken through to the third Ling Qi layer. Besides, she was about the same age as Lin Feng so it was impossible for him to be stronger than her.

“Shut up! How dare you doubt my words!” shouted Zi Nan who had no alternative but to shout. He then continued: “Hurry up and go pack your things, get ready to leave!”

“Hmph!” Zi Yi poked out her tongue and immediately dragged Zi Ling to leave.

While looking at the two girls leave, Zi Nan shook his head and he then looked at Lin Feng with a wry smile on his face: “Young cultivator, my daughters are naughty and mischievous, I hope that you will not take offense.”

Lin Feng slightly smiled and shook his head indicating that he wasn’t offended. Zi Nan didn’t seem to feel at ease. Could it be that Lin Feng’s cultivation level is so high that he does not care about

status and doesn't care about the words of normal people?

Zi Ling and Zi Yi just packed a few clothes and the necessities of travel.

Outside of the Zi Wei Mountain Village, Zi Ling, Zi Yi and Lin Feng were riding on three Qian Li Xue horses. As Zi Nan had said, only the three of them were going to the Zi Government.

Initially, he thought he had to go to pay his respects but then he thought that the people of Zi Government would understand if they saw a talented young cultivator with his two daughters.

“Lin Feng, young cultivator, I must inconvenience you to look after my two girls.” said Zi Nan in a low voice. Lin Feng slightly nodded and said: “I will ensure their safety until we arrive at the Zi Government.”

Lin Feng didn't mention anything about a return journey and Zi Nan noticed, but he said nothing. He just nodded. If Lin Feng got along with his daughters on the journey, he would come back with them, if he didn't get along with them, he wouldn't.

“Daddy, Zi Yi and I are together, could anything bad happen? We're going now.” said Zi Ling while turning her head around. Immediately after, the horses started galloping.

Zi Yi and Lin Feng were in the front, Zi Ling was behind them.

“Lin Feng, what did you tell my father for him to trust you so much?” asked Zi Yi while galloping right next to Lin Feng.

“I didn’t say anything.” said Lin Feng indifferently. He didn’t even glance at her which made Zi Yi groan coldly.

“Sister, I can see that daddy thinks highly of him, he’s trying to make you guys into a couple.” said Zi Ling from behind while smiling.

“I will not get married to a piece of trash.” said Zi Yi while whipping her horse to move ahead of Lin Feng.

Lin Feng, as before, looked calm and indifferent. At that moment, he was still wondering if the woman who was going to marry Zi Qiong was really Duan Xin Ye.

The Zi Wei Village Mountain was a two day journey from the Zi Government and Zi Qiong’s wedding ceremony was taking place in three days.

“BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!!”

Lightning illuminated the entire atmosphere as it started raining heavily. The road of the Golden Zi Mountain was becoming wet and muddy.

The Zi Government was situated on the Golden Zi Mountain which was part of a chain of mountains.

At that moment, at the foot of the Golden Zi Mountain, there was a thatched hut. The three people on their Qian Li Xue horses rushed over to the hut, jumped off their horses and rushed into the thatched hut which turned out to be very spacious.

“That damned weather! We arrive at the foot of the mountain and it starts raining heavily. Initially, we should have been able to arrive at the Zi Government and would have been able to sleep in comfortable beds before the wedding.” cursed Zi Yi who was wet from head to foot. Her clothes were sticking close to her skin which revealed her already developed figure. One could clearly see her alluring figure.

At that moment, Zi Yi suddenly had the impression that she was being observed. She frowned and looked inside the thatched hut. Three people were sitting on the ground. These people, when they saw her enter, started staring at her in an evil way.

At that moment, Zi Ling and Lin Feng entered the room as well. They were, just like Zi Yi, completely soaked. Besides, Lin Feng was wearing a silver mask to cover his face.

Zi Ling was feeling cold and remained silent. When she saw the evil expression on the face of the three people, she felt a bit scared.

Zi Yi also noticed that these three people were staring at them. She coldly looked at them and even released some cold Qi. These people were certainly not good people.

But she remained vigilant, after all, they were not in the Zi Wei Village Mountain anymore and had to be careful. She dragged Zi Ling to the other side of the hut and sat down.

Lin Feng picked up some wood in the thatched hut and piled it up in front of Zi Yi and Zi Ling. He immediately lit a fire. That would be a good way to get dry and warm. He was unceasingly putting wood in the fire to maintain it.

These three people looked at Lin Feng who was lowering his head taking care of the fire, he seemed like he hadn't even seen these three people.

“So useless, I really don't understand what daddy was thinking when he decided not to come and to let that piece of trash come with us.” said Zi Yi thinking that Lin Feng could do nothing but simple chores. Instead of thanking him for tending the fire, she was just making fun of him while her eyes were filled with disdain.

She had an unfavourable opinion of Lin Feng and it wasn't going to change, no matter what he did. Ultimately, she despised Lin Feng because she thought that Lin Feng was weak but if she had known that Lin Feng was stronger than her own father, how would have she reacted?

Zi Yi didn't know that all the things she said didn't affect Lin Feng because Lin Feng did not put her in his eyes and did not care about her at all. He was, of course, not going to pay attention to her words.

Of course, he also didn't have a favourable opinion of Zi Yi.

“Big brother, what do you think about these two girls?” said one of the three people while looking at Zi Yi and Zi Ling. His evil smile resonated in the area.

“I like the one who's acting coldly. Nice chest, nice bottom. She looks mature enough. It would be a real pleasure to sleep with her. I just don't know if she'll keep acting so cold while in bed.”

The man looked fascinating, he was staring at Zi Yi whose clothes were completely wet. Her clothes were so wet and sticking to her skin that that her nipples were erect. That was, indeed, an alluring sight for this man.

When Zi Yi heard what the men were saying, her face turned even colder. She was staring at them and released a cold energy.

“Big brother, that one doesn't seem to be any fun, I still prefer the small one, not only is she cute but her figure is also not bad.” said the one who hadn't talked yet. Lust was flashing in his eyes while staring at Zi Ling.

These three people were loudly chatting as if they had no restraint. They were staring at Zi Yi and Zi Ling like a starving man would look at food.

As far as Lin Feng was concerned, nobody paid any attention to him.

Zi Ling and Zi Yi got closer to each other. Even though they were quite aggressive, in such a situation, they were still feeling a bit scared.

“How shameless, try and speak that way again!”

Zi Yi was releasing her Qi, she stood up and looked at the three people.

“Hmm, hmmm, nice figure, we can even see the shape of her breasts.”

The man who was being called “big brother” by the two others was staring at Zi Yi’s body as if he was looking at a naked woman.



## Chapter 220: Golden Rain fills the sky

---

“Three Evil Alpacas, you really are extremely perverted, your reputation is well justified.” At the moment when Zi Yi was getting angry, a cold and detached voice interrupted them. Immediately, they saw a young man wearing golden clothes enter the thatched hut.

Even though it was raining heavily outside, that young man's clothes were magnificent and completely dry. He looked clean and handsome. He was holding a fan in his hand, he looked elegant and had just come from a luxurious carriage.

“The Three Evil Alpacas...”

When Zi Yi and Zi Ling heard that name, their facial expressions immediately changed. These three bastards surprisingly were the Three Evil Alpacas. No wonder that they looked so evil. In the region surrounding the Golden Zi Mountain, these three disgusting brothers were known for their extreme perversion. They were known for cruelly and violently molesting young girls.

If Zi Yi and Zi Ling had been their target, the outcome would have been unimaginable.

“Who are you?” coldly asked the Three Evil Alpacas while looking at that young man.

“While Zi Qiong's big ceremony is close, you go out and hunt young girls right?” said the young man while raising his head and

smiling coldly. He then moved towards Lin Feng's side, bent down and shook his fan above the fire grow fierce.

“You are a man too, how come you are not helping these two girls when they are being humiliated?” coldly said the young man in golden clothes to Lin Feng while smiling. He sounded arrogant and conceited.

Lin Feng raised his head and glanced at the young man. He was about as old as Lin Feng. He looked quite handsome. He seemed to come from a wealthy family. It was obvious at first glance that he was wealthy and considered everyone beneath his notice.

The young man in golden clothes was smiling warmly but looked arrogant and had a mocking attitude.

Lin Feng didn't reply to him, he continued feeding the fire. However, he didn't have a favourable opinion of that young man. If he wanted to be in the limelight, why did he need to go out of his way to humiliate Lin Feng?

“Why would you care about what the three of us are doing? If you don't want us to hurt you, it's best for you is to leave now.” said the Three Evil Alpacas coldly while staring at the young man. The young man didn't even look at them. They still felt a bit wary when seeing the young man disregard them.

The young man in golden clothes glanced at them and a mocking smile appeared on his face.

“The Three Evil Alpacas are vile, they are thirty years old and don’t practice their cultivation. They just spend their time with young girls all day. The elder brother has broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer while the two others brothers have broken through to the third Ling Qi layer. In their current life, all they can amount to is bandits.”

The Three Evil Alpacas narrowed their eyes and evilly looked at that young man.

“By meddling in our business, your intention is to show these two pretty girls that you are hero, right?”

“Who doesn’t love beautiful women? I am no exception but I also cannot ignore people in distress. Besides, if I have the opportunity to rescue some beautiful girls, of course, I will seize that opportunity.” said the young man while looking at Zi Yi and Zi Ling in a charming way. He had a warm and tender smile on his face.

He slightly nodded towards them, Zi Yi and Zi Ling’s hearts started beating faster. That young man was so handsome. They were wondering how strong he was.

“Since it was your decision, don’t blame us for being cold-blooded.” Two of the Three Evil Alpacas stood up and slowly walked towards the young man. Suddenly, a violent energy emerged from them and moved straight towards the young man.

Zi Yi and Zi Ling were staring at the two brothers and then

looked at the young man to see how he was going to react.

At that moment, the third brother suddenly threw himself at Zi Ling looking like he had planned this surprise attack much earlier. He was very quickly approaching Zi Ling.

“Be careful!” said Zi Yi when she saw the third brother move towards Zi Ling and grab her. Her facial expression drastically changed. Zi Ling had only broken through to the Ling Qi Layer, she couldn’t compete with the three brothers.

Besides, at that moment, Lin Feng, who was calmly sitting on the ground, raised his head. There was an extremely sharp and cold expression in his eyes. At that moment, Lin Feng raised his hand.

However, at the same time, a magnificent golden sword twinkled in the atmosphere. The light it diffused made it look like it was raining gold. It was dazzling and full of splendour.

That sword light was gorgeous. That light then suddenly enveloped the third brother’s body. Immediately after, a horrible shriek spread through the atmosphere. The third brother’s body fell down onto the ground. He hadn’t paid attention for a brief moment and ended up being struck by the attack. A myriad of injuries, caused by the golden light, appeared on his body.

Zi Ling’s eyes were wide open, she was still nervous. How dangerous.

But that sword, how gorgeous!

Zi Yi was stupefied as well. She was blankly staring at the corpse lying on the floor. It wasn't only the third brother who had fallen down onto the floor. The second brother had also collapsed and a myriad of wounds had appeared on his body.

The young man was way too quick. They hadn't even seen him attack, but two people were already dead.

"How strong! And that sword skill..." Zi Yi was looking at the young man and her eyes were filled with admiration. That young man was extraordinary and extremely strong. She adored him already.

"Golden Rain Sword, the golden rain that fills the sky... you are Lin Hao Jie!" The big brother of the Three Evil Alpacas was astonished. He also looked slightly scared.

"Lin Hao Jie, also known as Golden Rain Lin Hao Jie....surprisingly, it's him." Zi Yi and Zi Ling were surprised when they heard that name.

Lin Hao Jie was very famous in that region. Zi Qiong, of the Zi Government, was his good friend. Even though he was young, he had already broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer. Besides, because he was a sword master, he easily killed cultivators of the fourth Ling Qi layer. Outstanding young men like him were rare.

“You taught us a good lesson, I’m off!” the big brother of the Three Evil Alpacas was shaking and rushed towards the exit of the thatched hut. He was extremely quick.

But Lin Hao Jie’s sword was even faster.

The sword rain fell down and the body of the big brother collapsed before it reached the exit. He was motionless on the floor.

When Lin Hao Jie saw the body on the floor, a smile filled with satisfaction appeared on his face. He then put back his sword in its sheath with grace and elegance.

“Do you two beautiful girls plan to go to Golden Zi Mountain as well?” asked Lin Hao Jie while looking at Zi Yi and Zi Ling with a warm and soft smile on his face. He was looking at them in a very seductive way.

“Yes.” said Zi Yi while nodding in a delicate way. Her voice was soft as well.

“Coming across each other today was fate. I am lucky to have met such beautiful girls today. However, it is now late and getting dark, the rain has stopped as well. I will not disturb you, have a good rest.” said Lin Hao Jie while smiling. Immediately after, he turned around and left as elegantly and gracefully as he entered.

But when he arrived at the door, he started walking slower and

said: “Considering that two beautiful girls like you are staying overnight in here, don’t let useless cowards near you as they might try something.”

While talking, Lin Hao Jie continued walking towards the exit. Immediately after, they heard his horse neigh, he had already left.

As far as the useless coward was concerned, Lin Hao Jie obviously meant Lin Feng.

When they saw him leave, Zi Yi and Zi Ling looked like they were disappointed.

“Zi Yi, sister, we haven’t thanked him yet.” Zi Ling suddenly sighed and Zi Yi slightly shook her head while saying: “Do you think that Lin Hao Jie is that kind of person who expects something like a thanks?”

“You’re right.” said Zi Ling while slightly nodding.

“He’s a really outstanding young man. It’s nothing like him, surprisingly he wears a mask because he doesn’t dare let people see his fear.” said Zi Yi mockingly while glancing at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng continued feeding the fire with wood and said in a cold tone: “He’s not as good as you two think.”

“What gives you the right to speak about other people? If he hadn’t been here, some bad things could have happened to us. You

think that you could have escaped unharmed? I really don't understand why our father made you come with us."

When Zi Yi heard Lin Feng criticize Lin Hao Jie, she couldn't help but be disgusted. She already had a crush on Lin Hao Jie.

"Absolutely, Lin Feng, you should be thankful to Lin Hao Jie!" said Zi Ling. Swords were also her specialty.

"I owe him nothing, he hasn't done anything for me. Besides, you owe him nothing either. He hasn't done anything which deserves gratitude." said Lin Feng as calm as always.

As far as Lin Hao Jie is concerned, maybe what he had done looked great in the eyes of the two girls, but in Lin Feng's opinion, that young man was too arrogant, he attempted to humiliate Lin Feng and considered everyone else beneath his notice. Not only that but he also thought he was better than everyone else.

"You're really hideous, Lin Hao Jie and you have the same family name but you have nothing in common. Now, get out of the hut." said Zi Yi while following what Lin Hao Jie said before he left the hut.

"If you want me to go, I don't care but I would like to warn you that things are not always as they appear. I will prove that before I leave."

Lin Feng stood up, looked at the "big brother" of the Evil Alpacas,



who was lying on the floor, and said: “Hey you, how much longer are you going to play dead?”

# Chapter 221: The Zi Government

---

Zi Yi and Zi Ling were astonished when they heard Lin Feng.

Lin Feng could talk to the dead?

But a second later, the two girls were dumbstruck. They saw that the big brother, who was lying on the floor suddenly moved and started crawling. He turned his head around and looked at Lin Feng in a cold and evil way.

The Evil Alpacas' big brother hadn't died at all. He had just been injured, nothing more. A moment before, he hadn't released the slightest bit of Qi and had been holding his breath, feigning death.

"That little boy is right. Lin Hao Jie is strong, but way too arrogant. He thinks that everything will go as he plans it. He didn't even notice that he hadn't killed me. His opinion of himself is way too high." said the big brother sounding cold and detached. He agreed with Lin Feng.

"You are lucky that I was pretending to be dead." said the big brother and then looked at Lin Feng while saying coldly: "But, Lin Hao Jie has left now. You three are now my toys, you, the little boy, I'm not interested in you, but these two girls will accompany to console me after my brothers' deaths."

Zi Yi and Zi Ling's expression changed. The big brother had broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer. Even if he was injured, they still couldn't compete with him.

“Die boy!” said the big brother while immediately attacking. He raised his fist and his fist bombarded the atmosphere, moving straight towards Lin Feng. At that moment, Lin Feng slowly raised his hand, then rapidly pierced through the air like a meteor.

When the glow from his strike disappeared, the big brother’s forehead was covered with blood. He looked at Lin Feng, his eyes were filled with resentment before he died.

Was Lin Feng really lucky that he was playing dead?

“You and Lin Hao Jie are equally as arrogant.” said Lin Feng indifferently. While standing at the same place, he said slowly: “If Lin Hao Jie hadn’t stepped in, nothing would have happened to you girls anyway. Therefore, you don’t owe him anything. Remember that, things are not always as they seem. It’s exactly the same for him, he was pretending to be dead, but was actually waiting for his opportunity.” When Lin Feng finished talking, he immediately started walking towards the exit of the thatched hut. In the blink of an eye, his silhouette disappeared like a ghost.

When Zi Yi and Zi Ling saw Lin Feng disappear, they were astonished. Lin Feng had just killed the big brother, he had proved that he could protect them. Even if Lin Hao Jie hadn’t attacked, nothing would have happened to them.

As far as what Lin Feng’s last words, they were deep and profound. Things were not always as they seemed just like Lin Hao Jie, who was showing a certain aspect of his personality, but in the

end wasn't showing his true colors. The same was true for Lin Feng. The two girls despised him, thought that he was weak. But in the end, with a simple attack, he could kill a cultivator of the fourth Ling Qi layer.

“Zi Yi sister, Lin Feng seems extremely strong.” whispered Zi Ling after remaining silent for a moment while staring at the corpses on the floor.

“He's just extremely arrogant. If he was as strong as he said, a moment ago, why did he wait for Lin Hao Jie to stop them? Why didn't he take the initiative? Besides, when Lin Hao Jie was here, Lin Feng didn't dare say a word against him. Lin Hao Jie is much stronger than him and Lin Feng was clearly afraid of him. His heart is just filled with jealousy.” said Zi Yi in a bad mood. She remembered Lin Hao Jie's softness and tenderness, her heart was still beating faster when thinking about that. Lin Feng certainly had nothing to do with Lin Hao Jie.

“But he just attacked once with his hand and killed a cultivator of the fourth Ling Qi layer. Besides, that resplendent glow looked like it came from a sword.” said Zi Ling with lights unceasingly flashing in her eyes. She was making great efforts to try and remember Lin Feng's attack.

“It's only because the big brother was too negligent. The big brother was pretending to be dead in front of Lin Hao Jie but didn't care when in front of Lin Feng. It is obvious at a glance who is strong and who is weak. Besides, do you think that glow looked more majestic and more powerful than Lin Hao Jie's Golden Rain Sword?” said Zi Yi as stubborn as before. However, all her

reasoning seemed to be flawed.

Outside of the hut, a strong wind was blowing and penetrated into the hut. The fire that Lin Feng lit went out because of the strong wind. In a flash, the thatched hut became dark and cold.

Zi Yi and Zi Ling's hearts started pounding. Immediately after, they firmly grabbed each other's hands. They realized that there was cold sweat on the palms of both of their hands.

"Zi Yi, sister, actually, if Lin Feng was here, it would be much better." said Zi Ling in a small voice. She had just realized that she had underestimated Lin Feng. Zi Yi had criticized Lin Feng for having lit a fire and they both now realized that without it, it was very cold....

"Zi Ling, we can go up the mountain tonight." said Zi Yi surprising Zi Ling. Zi Yi then continued: "Lin Hao Jie is also going up now, isn't he? If we leave now, we may have a chance of catching up with him."

"What about Lin Feng?"

"What, do you care about him?" said Zi Yi coldly.

"Alright, let's go." said Zi Ling. Immediately after, the two girls left the hut and immediately jumped on their Qian Li Xue horses. They immediately started galloping up the Golden Zi Mountain.

A short time after they left the hut, Lin Feng appeared on a horse and followed them.

On the top of the Golden Zi Mountain, there was a majestic palace, which was famous within that region. It was the location of the Zi Government.

In the Zi Government, there was someone who had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer. In Mo Yue and Xue Yue, people had the same opinion, a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer could be defined as an extremely strong cultivator. Even members of the monarchy would consider them as cultivators worthy of respect. Cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer were rare.

Outside of the Zi Government Palace, there were two huge pillars which had a huge wooden board across with an inscription. The two words “Zi Government” was engraved in huge letters on this wooden board.

At that moment, Zi Yi and Zi Ling were approaching these two huge pillars. Lin Feng was calmly following them. The three of them were galloping at full speed on the mountain road, but it was pitch black outside. They had needed two hours to climb the mountain.

“We are from the Zi Wei Mountain, here are our invitation cards.” said Zi Yi while taking out invitation cards and handing them over to the guards.

The guards opened the cards and saw that, they were from Zi Wei

Village, they then nodded and let them pass.

The three of them entered the vast and immense palace. It was so huge that they didn't know where to go."

Zi Yi and Zi Ling, even though they were blood-related to the people of the Zi Government, had never gone there before. It was their first time. Being blood-related to the Zi Government was nothing special, the really strong and powerful family members were all disciples of the main clan.

Besides, even though people were passing them, Zi Yi and Zi Ling knew nobody. Besides, as it was still late at night, they didn't have a place to rest and had no choice but to aimlessly wander around the palace.

"Master Lin, please come this way." At that moment, in the distance, two silhouetted were speaking as they walked through the palace.

Zi Yi and Zi Ling raised their heads and looked in that direction. The person who had just been called "Master Lin" was Lin Hao Jie.

"Master Lin." shouted Zi Yi while looking at him. Her voice was filled with joy and surprise.

Lin Hao Jie looked in their direction and immediately saw Zi Yi and Zi Ling. A tender and soft smile appeared on his handsome and delicate face. He walked over to them and said: "It seems like I Lin

Hao Jie, am very lucky to meet you girls again.”

“Master Lin, my name is Zi Yi.” said Zi Yi while pretending to be shy.

“Master Lin, is that your friend?” when the girl who was leading Lin Hao Jie saw that he knew Zi Yi, she couldn’t help but ask.

“Yes, she is” replied Lin Hao Jie while nodding.

“So that’s how it is, Miss Zi Yi, may I ask you where you are staying?” asked the girl, when she heard that she was Lin Hao Jie’s friend. She remained polite as she was one of the maids of the palace. Lin Hao Jie was Zi Qiong’s good friend and Zi Qiong was the heir to the Zi Government. Besides, Lin Hao Jie was also very strong and came from a wealthy family. Since he knew the people from the Zi Government, he was respected by the servants.

“Where....?” Zi Yi felt awkward. She saw that Zi Ling was getting angry and said: “We are related to the Zi Government, we are from the Zi Wei Mountain Village. We have come to pay our respects to Zi Qiong. We don’t know where exactly we’re going to stay yet.”

“Zi Wei Mountain Village.” whispered the maid. Immediately after, she smiled as if she understood. She said: “Since you are friends of Lin Hao Jie, I will help you with your accommodation issue.”

If they had just come to pay respects to Zi Qiong, the maid



wouldn't have helped them find accommodation. The three of them had arrived so late in the night. Whether they were blood-related to the Zi Government or not didn't matter.

Besides, she had also ignored the fact that they were from the Zi Wei Mountain Village. That didn't give them a high status. Them being friends with Lin Hao Jie was much more important than them being from the Zi Wei Mountain Village, it granted them a much higher status. She also had to give Lin Hao Jie face and help his friends.

“No need. Tomorrow is the big wedding ceremony, which we will both be attending. There is space in my room. I would have nothing against letting two beautiful girls sleep in my room tonight.” said Lin Hao Jie with a big smile on his face. He, once again, ignored Lin Feng.

## Chapter 222: The Day of the Wedding

---

“It is not very convenient.” said Zi Yi in a soft voice. She didn’t sound like she was refusing, it sounded more like she wanted to accept his offer. Lin Hao Jie was surprised. When he saw that she was acting shy, a smile appeared on his face.

“If Miss Zi Yi doesn’t like it or has doubts in regard to my personality, I can also give you the entire mansion and I will spend the night outside. That is absolutely no problem.” said Mo Hao Jie sounding righteous and awe-inspiring.

“No, of course not, what you proposed is perfect.” hastily replied Zi Yi. Zi Ling and Lin Feng were stupefied. But Lin Hao Jie immediately smiled and said: “So I understand that you’re accepting my offer.”

“If it is too inconvenient for you, please tell me.” said Zi Yi while lowering her head in a shy fashion.

“What are you talking about? It is a great pleasure for me.” said Lin Hao Jie while smiling.

“Zi Yi, sister, how could accept to spend the night in a stranger’s room?” said Zi Ling in a low voice while firmly shaking her sister’s hand.

“Zi Ling, young men like Master Lin are rare. Do you think that he is not trustworthy? Let’s go together!” said Zi Yi.

“Ignorant!” said a cold and detached voice. It came from Lin Feng.

At that moment, Lin Feng was looking at Lin Hao Jie, he said in a cold and detached way: “At the foot of the mountain, you said that they shouldn’t let me stay in the thatched hut because I might try something and now you’re inviting them to go to your place? Don’t you think that you might try something? Isn’t that what outstanding and handsome young men of high status do?”

Lin Hao Jie was stupefied. He coldly looked at Lin Feng. Immediately after, he smiled and said: “Could it be that you think that you could be compared with the likes of me?”

“Ridiculous.” said Lin Feng. “As if having a high social status could give you the right to mislead young girls.”

“Hmph!” Lin Hao Jie groaned coldly. He looked at Zi Yi and said: “Miss Zi Yi, since that is the case, you can forget my offer, goodbye!” When he finished talking, Lin Hao Jie started to leave.

“Master Lin, wait, wait!” shouted Zi Yi while running after him. She said: “I obviously don’t agree with him!”

Zi Yi turned her head around and coldly looked at Lin Feng. She then immediately said to Zi Ling: “Sister, let’s go together!”

“I’m not going.” said Zi Ling while shaking her head.

“Alright. Then be careful that he does not try anything.” replied Zi Yi while looking at Lin Feng and then ran after Lin Hao Jie.

Lin Feng looked at Zi Yi’s disappearing silhouette. He was exasperated. He had warned her over and over again, but since Zi Yi was stubborn, Lin Feng had no other solution. He was also done with the task which Zi Nan had given. He promised to make sure the girls would be safe until they reached the Zi Governmental Palace.

“Why are you not going with her?” asked Lin Feng.

“Maybe you are right. Things are not always as they appear to be. Even though Lin Hao Jie is handsome, extraordinary and very strong, he might be very hypocritical.” said Zi Ling in a low voice while pouting and gazing into the distance.

“Well then, are you not going to listen to your sister’s words and be careful of me?” asked Lin Feng while slightly laughing. Lin Hao Jie was, indeed, very hypocritical.

Zi Ling turned her head and looked at Lin Feng. She chuckled and said: “But if you meant us harm, you had an opportunity down there in the thatched hut, why would you wait for us to arrive at the Zi Government palace?”

Lin Feng was surprised by her pure smile. The corner of her mouth had curved into a gentle smile. Things were not always as they appeared, especially when it came to her. She had a cold and

standoffish personality which actually hid a soft and innocent heart. Her smile was quite marvelous to behold.

Even though it was a simple invitation, Zi Yi was really too innocent and naïve, she didn't understand that it was a trap.

“But don't misunderstand me, even though you are not that weak, I, Zi Ling, will only marry with an extremely strong sword cultivator. I will never be interested in someone like you.” said Zi Ling while laughing. Immediately after, she started walking away to find a place to rest.

“Sword cultivator?” thought Lin Feng. He smiled and shook his head. He then followed her.

.....

In another part of the palace, in a manor, someone was knocking at a door.

“Come in.” said Zi Yi from inside the room. Immediately after, the door of the room opened and Lin Hao Jie was in the doorway.

“Miss Zi Yi, can I come in?” said Lin Hao Jie while waiting outside of the room.

“Of course you can. Please come in, Master Lin.” replied Zi Yi.

Lin Hao Jie was firmly staring at Zi Yi. He noticed that her clothes hadn't dried off. He could see her delicate young body through her clothes which gave birth to flames of desire in his heart.

"Zi Yi, you're really beautiful." said Lin Hao Jie softly.

Zi Yi slightly lowered her head, remaining silent for a second out of shyness. Then, her lips moved: "I'm not."

"You are, you are beautiful from head to toe." said Lin Hao Jie in a soft voice and then continued: "Zi Yi, since the first time when we met in the thatched hut, I feel my head gets light whenever I see you, I feel like we are perfect for each other. I wouldn't have thought that we would meet again so quickly."

Zi Yi remained silent and lowered her head. Her face slightly turned red.

"Zi Yi, why are you not talking? If you think that I am playing some game, I can leave now." said Lin Hao Jie. Zi Yi immediately raised her head and didn't stop shaking her head. At that moment, Lin Hao Jie had already arrived at her side. They were now very close.

"Zi Yi!" Lin Hao Jie's voice was filled with softness and tenderness.

"Hm!"

Zi Yi's face was becoming redder and redder. She was looking at Lin Hao Jie, her eyes revealed that she had some feelings for him.

She hadn't thought that everything would happen so quickly, but Lin Hao Jie was her perfect husband, he was outstanding, had a high social status and had high natural talent. Men like him were rare. He was interested in Zi Yi, an adopted girl from the Zi Wei Mountain. With his high status, it was obviously a once in a lifetime opportunity for her. Besides, she had feelings for him so she couldn't just reject him, even if they hadn't known each other for a long time.

"Would you like to become my wife in the future? I want to keep you by my side forever." said Lin Hao Jie in a soft and tender voice while getting even closer to her.

Zi Yi's heart was pounding, her face was red; but she was happy, it was so sudden though.

"Yes!" said Zi Yi while slightly nodding. Immediately after, she just felt two big hands embrace her. While hugging her, Lin Hao Jie became even more enthusiastic, he immediately started kissing her.

Zi Yi was shaking, she had the sensation that she had been struck by a lightning. She could feel Lin Hao Jie's warmth, immediately after, she also put her hands around him and kissed him back.

Lin Hao Jie then started touching her body, a short time after, he

started caressing her young body, which was soft and warm. Zi Yi started feeling restless and let out a small moan.

The two of them threw themselves onto the bed. They threw their clothes to the side, after a short time, they were moaning from pain, pleasure and heat. Their bodies were in fusion in the middle of that room.

.....

In the sky, the sun had started to rise, the Zi Government was starting to get lively. On that day, Zi Qiong's wedding ceremony was going to happen.

There were two silhouettes sitting on the edge of a cliff watching the sunrise. They were sitting on the overhanging cliff with their legs above the precipice. They were gazing into the distance and looking at the sunrise. It looked particularly beautiful.

"How beautiful!" said Zi Ling amazed at such a wonderful scenery. It was a glowing red above the sea of clouds.

"It's very beautiful indeed." replied Lin Feng. In his previous life, it was one of Lin Feng's dreams to watch the sunrise from the top of a mountain. At that moment, that dream had come true. He finally knew what it felt like to appreciate such natural beauty.

Besides, as he was able to use earth fusion, his perception was much stronger than that of Zi Ling. It was as if the beauty of



watching that sunrise was enhanced.

“I would have never thought that the first time I would watch the sunrise would be with you on my side. Too bad that you are not the kind of man that I am looking for.” said Zi Ling while laughing. She immediately stood up and said: “Let’s go back. Daddy said that Zi Qiong’s future spouse is the most beautiful in the region, today, I want to see if the rumors are true.”

Lin Feng stood up as well with a strange expression on his face. He wanted to see the bride, but not because he wanted to see if she was beautiful or not, but because he wanted to see if it was Duan Xin Ye.

If it was really Duan Xin Ye, how could she get married to Zi Qiong? What if the rumors were true though? If that was the case, what would Lin Feng do....?

## Chapter 223: The Forbidden Area

---

In the Zi Government area, in a mansion filled with golden decorations, only one floor was illuminated with a purple light.

On the top of the mountain, there was a huge palace, which seemed like it had been entirely transformed. There was one corridor inside which was extremely spacious and much higher than the others.

At that moment, at the front end of the long covered corridor in the palace, there was a huge Golden Zi statue which looked majestic. That was the statue of the ancestors of the Zi Government. This was a statue, which meant something to all the people who were blood-related to the Zi Government. They had to bow to the ancestors as a sign of respect. Behind the statue was the forbidden area of the palace, which was a huge stone door. Only those who were blood related Zi Government would be allowed into this area.

In the central district of the mountain, many people were walking towards that palace. The huge statue and the vast palace were there to welcome them.

In normal times, the forbidden area was always closed off, they couldn't gain access no matter what their status.

At that moment, a group of people were walking down the long covered corridor and arrived in front of the statue. They knelt three times and kowtowed nine times in front of the statue and

immediately after, lined up at the side of the statue.

The silhouettes were getting more and more numerous. They were almost all blood-related to the Zi Government, but there were some who were friends of the Zi Government as well. The ceremony was a major event. However, the people related to the Zi Government and those unrelated were different. Those who were blood-related had to carry out the sacrificial rite before they could enter the forbidden area. They couldn't be interrupted, so very few people would bring outsiders.

At that moment, Zi Ling and Ling Feng had also arrived. Lin Feng was still wearing a silver mask and Zi Ling didn't understand why.

"Zi Yi has arrived." Zi Ling was looking at the distance and saw Zi Yi and Lin Hao Jie arrive together. A short moment after, they arrived next to Zi Ling.

"Zi Ling, how come you are still hanging out with the likes of him?" said Zi Yi coldly while frowning.

Lin Feng looked at Zi Yi and used his earth fusion. His senses became extremely acute. He could clearly perceive that there something different about Zi Yi.

Zi Yi had lost her innocence!

"What an ignorant girl!"

Lin Feng was shaking his head. Lin Hao Jie and Zi Yi had known each other for less than a day and Zi Yi had offered herself to Lin Hao Jie. Lin Feng didn't know what to say, but since it was Zi Yi's own will, he also could not interfere. He had already fulfilled his duty, he gave her advice and protected her on the journey.

Maybe Zi Yi really thought that she and Lin Hao Jie were going to be together forever.

"Sister." said Zi Ling while pouting. "We came with Lin Feng, we obviously have to stay with him."

"Zi Ling, you shouldn't trust such an ignorant and evil person. He is tricking you. How did he treat you yesterday evening?"

Zi Yi's tone was more imposing and more domineering than before, she also sounded slightly arrogant. When Lin Feng noticed that, he felt even more exasperated.

Before, Zi Yi used to be docile when facing Zi Ling, after all, she was an adopted daughter. But at that moment, she sounded like she was talking down to Zi Ling. Maybe she thought that because she was in a relationship with Lin Hao Jie, her social status was now higher than Zi Ling's.

"Sister, what are you saying?" Zi Ling was speechless.

Then, Lin Feng coldly groaned and said in a cold tone: "Zi Ling, Zi Yi, your father assigned me to bring you to the Zi Government

and ensure your safety. I have now fulfilled my duty. From this point on, we no longer have any ties between us. If you see me, act as if you do not know me and I will do the same.”

“As far as you are concerned, Zi Yi, what you do and what you have done were all your own choices and you will have to bear the responsibility on your own. I already warned you enough times.”

These were Lin Feng’s last words, immediately after, he abruptly turned around and disappeared into the middle of the crowd. Zi Yi and Zi Ling were absolutely dumbstruck.

Lin Feng had left and cut the ties between them.

“Sister, look what you have done, Lin Feng left out of rage.” said Zi Ling, who was angry, but Zi Yi groaned coldly and said: “Good, he would have tried to trick you sooner or later.”

At that moment, people in the queue started to get livelier. At the end of the corridor, a group of people had appeared and leading them was an old man of the Zi Government. He was the Patriarch of the Zi Governmental: Zi Ying.

Behind Zi Ying were two people. One of them was wearing golden clothes. He looked elegant and majestic and diffused a dazzling aura. That was the future husband, Zi Qiong.

Besides, on Zi Qiong’s side, there was an incredibly delicate and pretty woman. She was wearing a long purple dress. She had an

ornamental wedding crown on her head, she was incredibly beautiful.

“What a beautiful woman! It looks like the rumors are true, the bride is the most beautiful girl in the region. Even Zi Xia of the Zi Government, isn’t as beautiful as her.”

“How beautiful. She looks so elegant. Her clothes make her even more beautiful. Zi Qiong really has good eyes. If only I could find such a beautiful wife, I would be so happy. Even if she wanted me to give up practicing cultivation, I would instantly agree.”

Various comments were spreading through the crowd while looking at the beautiful bride. He really deserved his status as the young master of the Zi Government, finding such a beautiful wife was difficult.

Initially, they couldn’t imagine what kind of girl would have the luck to marry Zi Qiong but at that moment they had no doubts anymore. That woman was definitely a good match for Zi Qiong and his social status.

“What a beautiful woman! Zi Yi, sister, the rumors were entirely true, there is no woman more beautiful than her in the region.” said Zi Ling in a low voice. At that moment, she was also looking at the woman’s beautiful and delicate face. When looking at the woman, she had the feeling that she wasn’t beautiful at all.

Zi Yi’s heart was also beating faster, but she remained silent. She turned around and looked at Lin Hao Jie. Lin Hao Jie was fixedly

staring at the silhouette. He had a strange expression on his face. He couldn't help but sigh and say: "Zi Qiong, brother, you're really extremely lucky."

When Zi Yi saw Lin Hao Jie narrowing his eyes, jealousy invaded her heart, she then grabbed Lin Hao Jie's hand.

Lin Hao Jie turned his head and calmly looked at Zi Yi. In comparison with that beautiful woman, Zi Yi was extremely vulgar when compared to the beautiful bride.

"Zi Qiong and I are good friends. His wife is very beautiful. If I marry Zi Yi, people will laugh at me. I will make myself a laughing stock." thought Lin Hao Jie feeling depressed. He looked at Zi Yi in a cold way. He had already had his fun with Zi Yi, he didn't need her anymore.

When Zi Yi saw Lin Hao Jie's facial expression, a piercing coldness gradually invaded her heart.

"Alright, everybody, calm down!" At that moment, a cold and detached voice spread through the atmosphere. The crowd gradually calmed down and everybody looked at Zi Ying in the middle of the huge covered corridor.

"Zi Xia, come here." said Zi Ying while turning around. A beautiful young woman arrived. She raised her head and moved to Zi Ying's side.

Zi Xia was Zi Qiong's sister. She was the precious daughter of the Zi Government. Even though she wasn't as beautiful as the bride, she still had the power to drive men wild. A beautiful woman such as she could not easily be found.

"Zi Xia's is also very beautiful." whispered Lin Hao Jie. At least, she was much better than Zi Yi.

Zi Yi's face turned deathly pale. She was staring at Lin Hao Jie but he wasn't even looking at her.

"Sister! What's wrong?" said Zi Ling as if she had noticed something wrong. She started pulling on Zi Yi's hand, but Zi Yi remained frozen in place. She was just staring at Lin Hao Jie. On the day before, he had been so sweet to her and had kept whispering honeyed phrases. He had promised that they would be together forever. Why was he so cold at that moment?

"Today is the day of my son's wedding ceremony!" said Zi Ying from the corridor. He then continued: "At the same time, I would like to find a husband for my daughter, Zi Xia. This will be a simultaneous happy occasion for our family. If a young and outstanding young man is interested in marrying my daughter, come into the corridor and battle for her hand. The last one standing will be able to marry my daughter and become my new son-in-law. Besides, you will be able to enter the forbidden area with Zi Qiong."

The wedding tradition of the Zi Government was particularly strange. The crowd first congratulated them, then they could proceed with the ritual of the ancestors, and only then could they



enter the forbidden area. When they came out of the forbidden area, they were officially husband and wife.

Besides, it was said that people could gain great benefits from entering the forbidden area.

Therefore, when Zi Ying finished talking, many people were astonished: enter the forbidden area?

The rule of the Zi Government was that, in order to enter the forbidden area, a young man had to be a direct descendent of the Zi Government. Therefore, daughters of the government and son-in-laws couldn't go into the forbidden area. That was the continued tradition. However, this time, they were not respecting the rules which stupefied many people.

Amongst the young men who were present, many of them looked excited and were eager to give it a try. Lin Hao Jie was one of them!

At that moment, nobody had noticed that, in the middle of the crowd, there was a young man wearing a silver mask who was also looking at that young bride. The expression in his eyes was sharp. He raised his hands to his silver mask and then slowly took it off. Immediately after, he slowly walked forwards.

The beautiful bride who was next to Zi Qiong was actually Duan Xin Ye, the princess of Xue Yue.

The Zi Government must be forcing her to marry Zi Qiong. If she

had refused to marry him and enter the forbidden area, they would have forced Zi Qiong to take her innocence and then arrange her marriage, after the humiliation. Instead, she had accepted in order to preserve her honour and integrity. She had always kept her innocence and had never been with a man. However, if she entered the forbidden area with Zi Qiong, she didn't know what would happen to her.

This was her current situation, what would Duan Xin Ye do?"

## Chapter 224: The Princess' Tears

---

When Zi Ying saw that so many young men were eager to give it a try, a smile appeared on his face and he said: “I will add one more thing, my daughter, Zi Xia, is eighteen years old. The young man who will marry her cannot be older than twenty two years old.

“Oh, I cannot compete. There’s nothing I can do.”

When Zi Ying finished talking, disappointment appeared on the faces of a myriad of young men. As expected the Zi Government was selecting the most outstanding young talents, those older than twenty two years old couldn’t join in.

“Alright now, those who would like to become my son-in-law can come into the covered corridor for the battle.” said Zi Ying. When he finished talking, two silhouettes immediately started walking in the covered corridor and when they arrived in front of Zi Ying, they looked at each other.

“No need to exchange greetings, you can immediately start fighting.” said Zi Ying while waving his hand. The two people slightly nodded. One of them had broken through to the first Ling Qi layer while the other one had broken through to the second Ling Qi layer. No need to say that the result of the battle was no surprise, the one at the second Ling Qi layer would win.

At the bottom of the corridor, many young men were indignant, the young man at the first Ling Qi layer had no chance against the young man at the second Ling Qi layer.

At that moment within the crowd, Lin Hao Jie surprisingly remained silent. While waiting for his turn to fight, he couldn't help but smile coldly. He then said coldly: "Uncle, Hao Jie has feelings for Zi Xia which have been growing for a long time, if I manage to become her husband that would be my greatest wish."

While talking, Lin Hao Jie started walking through the crowd and arrived in the covered corridor.

"ARRRGHHH!" groaned Zi Yi while feeling depressed. Her face turned deathly pale, a streak of blood ran down the side of her mouth.

She had thought that Lin Hao Jie was strange a moment before. Zi Yi was badly affected, her chest felt oppressed. At the moment, Lin Hao Jie spoke, she couldn't bear it anymore. That pressure is what led blood to spill from her mouth. She felt extremely depressed.

Lin Hao Jie had told her during the previous night that he wanted to be with her forever. After having a one-night-stand with her, he dared try to find another woman to marry while she was forced to watch. Why was he being so cruel?

"Zi Yi what's wrong?" asked Zi Ling when she saw that blood was spilling out of Zi Yi's mouth. She was very surprised.

"Cough, cough." For a moment, Zi Yi felt dizzy and blacked out. She had no energy in her body any longer, there was absolutely no

color remaining on her face.

“As far as you are concerned, Zi Yi what you do and what you have done were all your own choices and you will have to bear the responsibility on your own. I already warned you enough times.”

Lin Feng's words were still resonating in her mind. At that moment, these words were full of meaning for her. She realized how ridiculous she had been for warning Zi Ling about Lin Feng. She hadn't even managed to protect herself.

Zi Yi slowly raised her head and saw the handsome silhouette in the covered corridor. On Zi Yi's extremely pale face appeared a particularly strange smile.

“Zi Yi what a foolish girl, and yet she thought that she was a dragon amongst humans.” said Zi Yi while mocking herself and wiping off the blood on her mouth.

In a distant place, Lin Feng was looking at Lin Hao Jie go into the covered corridor, then he looked at Zi Yi and saw that she was smiling. He slightly shook his head. Zi Yi could only blame herself for what was happening.

“Zi Xia, please understand that I've had feelings for you, for a long time. Today, I want to marry you, I want you to become my wife.” said Lin Hao Jie to Zi Xia. He sounded just as soft as when he was talking to Zi Yi. Zi Xia felt embarrassed and just slightly nodded.

Lin Hao Jie smiled satisfyingly. Immediately after, he turned around, looked at the young man in the corridor and said: “You can get down by yourself.”

When the young man saw Lin Hao Jie, a light flashed in his eyes and he said, while gnashing his teeth: “I’ve already heard your reputation, the Golden Rain Sword. Today, I ask for you to exchange pointers with me.”

Immediately after, the young man’s body flickered and he threw himself towards Lin Hao Jie.

Lin Hao Jie smiled coldly. He raised his sword which then the sky filled with a golden rain. Its resplendent brightness was magnificent.

When the golden rain disappeared, Lin Hao Jie’s sword was just as resplendent as before. However, the golden rain had fallen on his opponent. Lin Hao Jie had killed his opponent without mercy.

“How cruel.” thought the people in the crowd. He had wanted to exchange pointers, that’s all. Surprisingly, Lin Hao Jie decided to kill him.

Lin Hao Jie glanced at the crowd, his eyes were filled with vigour. He then said coldly: “Zi Xia is the woman I love. Who will try and prevent me from marrying her? If someone dares try to stand between our love. I will show no mercy when cutting them down with my sword.”

Everybody in the crowd was astonished. Lin Hao Jie was extremely cruel. That way, nobody would dare to go into the covered corridor anymore.

“Zi Yi, Lin Hao Jie is a good husband for you.” said Zi Ying while smiling. The crowd was astonished again, Zi Ying was dropping a hint, and he hoped that Lin Hao Jie would become his next son-in-law.

As expected, nobody dared to go into the covered corridor. When Zi Ying saw that, he smiled.

“Obviously, if nobody dares to fight anymore, the competition had ended. Zi Qiong, Zi Xia.”

“Father.”

Zi Qiong and Zi Xia started walking while looking solemn and respectful.

“You two can proceed to the ritual of our ancestors.”

“Understood.” said Zi Qiong while slightly nodding. He then said: “For the ritual, the husband and the wife must kneel three times and kowtow nine times as well as make an oath to each other.”

When he finished talking, Zi Qiong looked at Duan Xin Ye. She looked expressionless and remained silent.

“No need you and Zi Xia can kneel three times and kowtow nine times for the ritual, that’s enough.” said Zi Ying calmly. He also understood that Duan Xin Ye wasn’t willing to marry Zi Qiong. Since it was that way, the ritual of the ancestors wasn’t necessary. The most important thing was what was going to happen after they entered the forbidden area.

Zi Qiong and Zi Xia looked at each other and then walked towards the gigantic statue. They then knelt three times and kowtowed nine times.

When they finished this, they both stood up and muttered some incantations. Immediately after, they cut the tip of their finger and let some blood flow out. They then put their fingers into a hole within the statue. They let the blood spill into the hole and enter the statue.

“Boom!”

At that moment, a rumbling noise spread through the air. The statue slowly rotated and fully revealed the stone gate which started to open, it was the entrance to the forbidden area.

That gate was the only entrance into the forbidden area. Only those who were blood-related to the Zi Government could make that gate open.

When Zi Qiong saw the gate open itself, he looked excited.



“Alright, Xin Ye and Hao Jie, you can follow Zi Qiong and Zi Xia inside.”

“Alright.” replied Lin Hao Jie moving towards the entrance. He looked excited. Duan Xin Ye was just standing in the same place remaining motionless.

“Xin Ye, didn’t you hear me?” said Zi Yi in a cold tone.

“I will not go inside.”

Finally, Duan Xin Ye, who had remained uncommunicative until that moment, opened her mouth. What she said stupefied many people.

Duan Xin Ye sounded like she wasn’t willing to marry Zi Qiong.

Zi Ying and Zi Qiong were stupefied and looked ice-cold.

“Have you thought about the consequences?” said Zi Yi with an evil tone, his voice sounded majestic yet cruel.

“I will not go in with him.” said Duan Xin Ye. Immediately after, she removed the purple wedding attire that she was wearing and threw them onto the floor. She wasn’t wearing anything related to the wedding anymore. She had thrown all the wedding clothing onto the floor.

Her long hair looked like a black waterfall. Even though she wasn't wearing her purple wedding clothes, she was still as beautiful as before in the simple unadorned clothes. She looked soft and tender. She was morally elevated.

"You seem to be forgetting our agreement." said Zi Ying in a piercingly cold way. He would have never thought that Duan Xin Ye would cancel their agreement.

"An agreement? I have been forced, do you call that an agreement?" said Duan Xin Ye while smiling. She then continued: "No need to keep threatening me, I will not let him have my body. I will not marry him even if that was not the case. I already have someone I love." when Duan Xin Ye finished talking, she took out a dagger stupefying the crowd, she then pressed it against her throat.

The hearts of the people in the crowd were pounding. Duan Xin Ye, that extremely beautiful woman wanted to kill herself, did she really want to die rather than get married?

"Stop!" said Zi Ying and Zi Qiong whose facial expression drastically changed. But they just saw that Duan Xin Ye had a natural smile on her face.

"I just hope that once I'm dead, I'll still be able to find a way to let Lin Feng know that I really didn't know." said Duan Xin Ye while looking towards the sky. It seemed like she had changed completely and was finally revealing her true self.

Tears were flowing down her cheeks.

“Lin Feng, I really didn’t know!”

## Chapter 225: Allowed to Hold a Sword

---

“Lin Feng.”

“Lin Feng must be the man she loves.” guessed the crowd when hearing that beautiful woman’s plea. The fact that she hoped that he could understand after her death proved that she cared for him.

The crowd was feeling gloomy, if only that beautiful woman could have had those feelings for them that would be such an auspicious occasion.

“She’s calling Lin Feng.” Zi Ling was stupefied, she was blankly staring at Duan Xin Ye, but it couldn’t be the same person, the Lin Feng that Duan Xin Ye was talking about was definitely not the one she knew.

How could such a beautiful woman fall in love with the Lin Feng that she knew?

At that moment, Lin Feng in the middle of the crowd, was violently shaking.

“Lin Feng I really didn’t know.” why would she think about Lin Feng in her last moments?

“I have greatly misunderstood her.” Suddenly, Lin Feng’s heart felt painful.

He was the one who had killed the black guards to save her, he had saved Duan Xin Ye, but after figuring out the plot, he misjudged and abandoned Duan Xin Ye. It was because of him that she had ended up in this situation and was being forced to marry Zi Qiong.

Why would she need to explain anything to him? It was him who should have believed in her.

“Wait, wait.” said Lin Feng. He took a step and threw himself through the air. He immediately landed within the covered corridor.

Lin Feng’s silhouette drew people’s attention. The crowd all looked at him. His clothes were white, clean and simple. His face was delicate and handsome.

Besides, when Duan Xin Ye saw Lin Feng, her heart started pounding.

It was Lin Feng, he was here.

Looking natural and unrestrained, it was really him, he was really in front of her and it wasn’t an illusion.

At the bottom of the covered corridor, Zi Ling and Zi Yi were staring at Lin Feng. They were shivering. Could it be that that Lin Feng was really the one Duan Xin Ye was talking about?

Why did he take his silver mask off?

“Zi Yi, sister, the man she was speaking of is Lin Feng?” whispered Zi Ling. She couldn’t believe it.

At that moment, Zi Yi had hopelessly stopped looking towards Lin Hao Jie. Her heart was filled with hatred. She then looked at Lin Feng said coldly: “How could it be Lin Feng? It’s impossible!”

In the covered corridor, Lin Hao Jie also saw Lin Feng. A light flashed in his eyes. It seemed like he knew that young man from somewhere. He had the impression that he had seen Lin Feng before, but he rejected the idea since he could not remember seeing Lin Feng’s face before.

Duan Xin Ye was looking at Lin Feng while remaining completely silent. She was also starting to put less pressure on the dagger.

“Lin Feng.”

Duan Xin Ye couldn’t believe her eyes. She just whispered Lin Feng’s name.

“It’s really me, I’m sorry for having made you suffer.” said Lin Feng while sighing. His apology sounded sincere.

When Duan Xin Ye heard Lin Feng, she started weeping and heavily sobbing. Immediately tears started to unceasingly slide down her beautiful cheeks. However, a smile was on her face. At

that moment, it seemed like everything had lost its splendor compared to this beautiful moment, the crowd was extremely moved.

A metallic sound spread through the air. Duan Xin Ye dropped the dagger on the ground. She then started walking slowly towards Lin Feng. When she arrived in front of him, she said: “Lin Feng, I do not blame you, I really do not blame you!”

Lin Feng was looking at Duan Xin Ye, a deep and profound expression appeared in his eyes. He looked perplexed. In the Imperial Clan, there was the crown prince, Duan Wu Dao, who was extremely aggressive, and the second prince, Duan Wu Ya, who was mysterious and extremely strong. However, Duan Xin Ye, their sister, was pure, innocent and kind-hearted.

Even though she had an extremely high status of a princess, she was also just an inexperienced beautiful young girl.

When the crowd saw that, they were moved. Maybe this sweet couple were soul-mates.

Zi Ling and Zi Yi were astonished. It was really him, it was really Lin Feng.

It was the Lin Feng whom they had been looking down on the whole time. Surprisingly, that Lin Feng was really the one the princess loved. Zi Yi had been really ridiculous to think that Lin Feng would try anything with them, in comparison with Duan Xin Ye, they were nothing.

Lin Hao Jie had dumped Zi Yi for Zi Xia in a heartbeat. In his eyes, Zi Yi was nothing. He hadn't even given her an explanation.

In fact, it was so cruel that she couldn't accept it.

Besides, it must be an illusion.

Why did she love Lin Feng? What the hell is so good about that guy?

Hideous expressions also appeared on the faces of the people from the Zi Government.

Duan Xin Ye was supposed to be Zi Qiong's wife. However, at that moment, on the day of her wedding, she surprisingly said that she loved someone else, the Zi Government couldn't accept that.

The Zi Government was losing face. Everybody was going to ridicule them.

Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye were humiliating the Zi Government in the presence of the entire crowd.

"Are you done flirting now?" said Zi Qiong extremely coldly. He looked angrier than anyone else. He had played the most important role in that story, he was the one who wanted to marry Duan Xin Ye but at that moment, she didn't accept him and



damaged his reputation.

Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye looked at Zi Qiong. Lin Feng moved Duan Xin Ye behind him. She liked the feeling of Lin Feng protecting her again. On that day when Lin Feng was chasing the black guards even though his life was at stake, she had had a similar feeling like he would give his life for her.

“Duan Xin Ye, I have never mistreated you, I am generous, I have never touched you. In the future, if you had had asked anything of me, I would have given you anything, but today you decide to flirt with another man, I will not show any mercy, and your body is mine.”

Zi Qiong was staring at Duan Xin Ye and his voice was piercingly-cold.

“The people of the Zi Government are so shameless?” Lin Feng found Zi Qiong’s logic ridiculous. He had forced Duan Xin Ye to accept the marriage and he expected her to be thankful to him?

“If I understand your logic, if someone forces your sister to become his wife, but doesn’t touch her. She has to give herself to him, be thankful and willingly become his wife? Is that the logic of the people within the Zi Government?” said Lin Feng coldly. The people of the Zi Government were coldly staring at Lin Feng.

“Your name is Lin Feng, you are extremely audacious to dare criticize my Zi Government. I will slaughter you.” Zi Qiong looked at Lin Feng with killing intent. Lin Feng was younger than him and

still dared to slander the Zi Government. Lin Feng had a death wish.

“You can try.” said Lin Feng calmly. He was standing there, in his white clothes, with his sword on still his back. He was expressionless and fearless.

A gentle breeze blew through the large covered corridor. Lin Feng’s white clothes were fluttering in the wind. At that moment, he looked frivolous, natural and unrestrained.

Zi Ling and Zi Yi were absolutely dumbstruck and blankly stared at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng wasn’t the same person anymore. He seemed like he was a completely different person. He wasn’t quite, patient and accommodating anymore. His voice was filled with ardor. He was standing tall and upright while facing the Zi Government alone.

At that moment, Lin Feng looked unique and exceptionally strong as if he was going to unsheathe a terrifyingly powerful sword.

“What an insane guy. Zi Qiong, brother, let me take care of him.” said Lin Hao Jie while taking a step. This was a chance for him to show off his strength.

“Alright, brother.” said Zi Qiong while slightly nodding. Immediately after, Lin Hao Jie started running, in a flash, he

arrived in front of Lin Feng, his golden clothes were dazzling and magnificent.

“Why do I have the impression that we know each other?” asked Lin Hao Jie while frowning.

Lin Feng smiled and said: “Just attack me already.”

“Since you’re so impatient to die, I will grant your wish. Remember the name of the person who is going to kill you, my name is Lin Hao Jie also known as the Golden Rain Sword.” said Lin Hao Jie arrogantly.

He then started walking again. His golden rain invaded the atmosphere and filled the sky. The golden rain turned into a dazzling light. It was resplendent.

When the golden rain fell down, the golden light enveloped Lin Feng’s body.

Lin Feng was standing completely motionless. He raised his hand. Some sword Qi spread through the air. A bright and resplendent light flashed for a second and then disappeared without trace.

However, at that moment, Lin Hao Jie let out a horrible shriek. His long sword had fallen onto the ground. The hand was still holding the sword and had been cut off from the elbow.

The crowd was absolutely dumbstruck. Their eyes were wide open. They hadn't seen what Lin Feng had done and how he achieved such a result.

At that moment, Lin Feng was still standing in the same place. It seemed like he hadn't moved at all. However, Lin Hao Jie's hand had really been cut off and was on the ground.

"The Golden Rain Sword, you are humiliation for anyone who uses a sword, you shouldn't even be allowed to hold a sword." said Lin Feng coldly. The hearts of the people in the crowd were pounding.

Especially Zi Ling and Zi Yi, they couldn't stop shaking. They were completely stunned.

"Lin Hao Jie, a sword master?"

"Lin Feng, a coward and a piece of trash?"

In front of Lin Feng, Lin Hao Jie was a piece of trash and shouldn't have been allowed to hold a sword.

## Chapter 226: Lin Feng's Sword

---

Lin Feng had cut off Lin Hao Jie's forearm in a single strike.

On top of that, he hadn't used his sword but had only waved his hand through the air. It released a resplendent light which had made the golden rain attack look like a joke.

The name "Golden Rain Sword" had become a joke.

Exactly like Lin Feng had said, Lin Hao Jie shouldn't have been allowed to hold a sword, it was a humiliation for all sword users. Lin Hao Jie was far from being talented, especially when compared to Lin Feng.

Zi Yi had been really ridiculous to consider Lin Feng as a piece of trash and to think of Lin Hao Jie as a good person. Thinking that she would become a dragon amongst the people, she had offered the purity of her body to him and been humiliated. She had completely ignored Lin Feng's advice.

"He.. hee.. heee..." at that moment, Zi Yi's laughter was strange. At that moment, Lin Hao Jie, with his missing arm, looked incredibly pitiful. Lin Feng, who was protecting Duan Xin Ye, looked heroic, natural and unrestrained.

Lin Feng was really a dragon amongst the people. He was open-minded, even though Zi Yi had humiliated him over and over again, he had never lost his temper. He had never been aggressive because he didn't care, and he also thought that it wasn't worth

letting her words bother him. Lin Feng was really an amazing person.

Zi Ling was also looking at the confident Lin Feng as if it was the first time she had laid eyes on him. The Lin Feng, who was standing in the covered corridor, was natural and unrestrained. He had cut off Lin Hao Jie's arm from the elbow without restraint. Was it really the same young man as the one that they had picked up on the side of the road? Was it the same young man who was holding a broom and sweeping the garden? Was it the same coward, who had made a fire in the thatched hut and was treated badly through the whole journey.

Zi Yi and Zi Ling understood what their father's words meant when they were leaving. Zi Nan had made Lin Feng go with them to make sure that they would arrive safely at the Zi Government. It was his mission to protect them. At the same time, he had also given them an amazing opportunity to get to know him and become closer with him. Zi Yi had been so ridiculous, calling Lin Feng a piece of trash, despising him, and getting fooled by Lin Hao Jie who had taken her virginity. Zi Ling had also never given Lin Feng any respect either.

"Not allowed to hold a sword." Lin Hao Jie was just standing there motionless, blood was flowing from his arm onto the ground. He looked deathly pale. It was the first time that somebody told him that he, Lin Hao Jie also known as the Golden Rain Sword, shouldn't have been allowed to hold a sword; that he was a humiliation to sword users.

"A sword is sharp, using one requires a person to be determined

and proud. You don't have these qualities, your sword play is flashy but has no substance. You shouldn't even be allowed to hold a sword, and you should never be considered as a sword user as it is a humiliation to those who actually train in the sword." said Lin Feng sounding ice-cold. Lin Hao Jie had none of the qualities required to be a good sword user, his style was flashy but without substance. He only focused on looks and not the sharpness of his sword.

"You dared to cut my hand? Who the hell are you?" said Lin Hao Jie while raising his head. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng. The impression that he knew Lin Feng was growing in his mind.

"Actually, I'm not done with you yet." Lin Feng had an ice-cold smile on his face. He then moved forwards, in a flash, his silhouette disappeared and immediately appeared in front of Lin Hao Jie.

Lin Hao Jie was violently shaking. He had no way of blocking Lin Feng's attacks. He felt an incredible sword Qi penetrate into his chest and destroy his organs. His face was completely distorted and he was fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

Not only had Lin Feng cut off his hand, but he was also going to kill him.

"It's you." said Lin Hao Jie when he saw Lin Feng's eyes, his heart was pounding. That was the uncommunicative young man from the thatched hut who had made the fire. It was the one whom he called a coward.

Back in the thatched hut, Lin Feng was just a useless coward making a fire for them, but at that moment, Lin Feng could easily kill him. That was completely the opposite of what he believed. Lin Hao Jie's heart was pounding but he knew that his fate was already sealed.

“Indeed, it's me.” said Lin Feng coldly. Lin Feng's hand was on Lin Hao Jie's chest releasing Qi. Immediately after, Lin Hao Jie groaned and the Qi disappeared. However, his eyes were still wide open. He could not accept his death, even in his last moments. He had a high social status, was talented and handsome, how could he die so easily in front of a huge crowd?

“BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!.”

When the crowd saw the corpse collapse onto the ground, their hearts were pounding.

Lin Feng had killed Lin Hao Jie, the Golden Rain Sword. He didn't care about Lin Hao Jie's social status, he simply killed him. It had looked simple for him to kill Lin Hao Jie, it was as if Lin Feng had just killed an insect.

At that moment, those who were shocked the most were the sisters, Zi Yi and Zi Ling.

Lin Hao Jie, had died?



It had been that easy for Lin Feng to kill Lin Hao Jie?

“Sister, he was wearing a mask because he knew the princess. He knew that something was going to happen and he didn’t want to put us in danger and wanted to avoid us getting involved.”

Zi Ling had suddenly understood why Lin Feng was wearing his silver mask. He didn’t want other people to know that Zi Yi and Zi Ling had come with him. Whatever would happen, they would not get in trouble because of him.

“You two owe Lin Hao Jie nothing.”

Lin Feng’s words were resonating in their minds. In the thatched hut, considering Lin Feng’s strength, could the Three Evil Alpacas have harmed them?

It would have been impossible. It was just that Lin Feng remained silent at the time and didn’t reveal everything. However, these two girls didn’t like that, they liked men who would show off, who were arrogant. They like Lin Hao Jie.

They regretted their actions.

Especially Zi Yi, who had lost her virginity to Lin Hao Jie. A few honeyed phrases had been enough and she had given her body to him. However, regretting was useless. Lin Hao Jie had been killed by Lin Feng. Lin Feng would never look at such a foolish girl. Zi Yi, who was usually very arrogant, was crushed.

She had called Lin Feng a piece of trash but actually, in Lin Feng's eyes, she was the real piece of trash. She was just a pitiful, lost young girl, nothing more. Lin Feng had never been affected by her words because her words meant nothing.

"You will die." coldly shouted Zi Qiong. Hideous expressions could be seen on the faces of the people from the Zi Government.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at Duan Xin Ye. On Duan Xin Ye's face, you could see that she had cried but at that moment, a warm and tender smile had also appeared on her face. She was calmly standing behind Lin Feng.

"The people who made you want to take your own life will all die." said Lin Feng calmly.

"Stay close to me."

"Alright." said Duan Xin Ye while slightly nodding.

Lin Feng put his hand behind his back, grabbed his long sword and unsheathed it.

His sword was as limpid as water, it looks magnificent and resplendent as well as sharp.

"A sword user."

The crowd, when they saw Lin Feng's hand, were astonished. Lin Feng despised Lin Hao Jie and his golden rain. Lin Feng could kill Lin Hao Jie with only his bare hands. How sharp was his sword?

Zi Ling's hands were shaking. That was a sword, Lin Feng had taken his sword out.

She liked sword users who did everything to become sword masters. They looked heroic, natural, and majestic.

But sword users were rare, strong sword masters were even rarer. Lin Hao Jie was already the strongest sword user she had ever seen. Lin Hao Jie's sword was magnificent, resplendent yet Lin Feng could kill him easily. How powerful was Lin Feng's sword?

White clothes and a silver sword.

Lin Feng had taken out his sword, at that moment, he was calmly standing there and a wonderful feeling invaded his body as if the heavens and the earth felt different from before. Lin Feng had started his earth fusion.

Zi Qiong also had a strange feeling. Even though he had said that he wanted Lin Feng to die, he wasn't going to attack because he didn't dare approach Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was calmly standing there which gave Zi Qiong a feeling

of inferiority. He hated that feeling.

“Kill him.” coldly said Zi Ying. In a flash, a few people appeared in the corridor looking solemn. They released deadly energy which filled the entire atmosphere. It was extremely oppressive.

A silhouette flickered and moved towards Lin Feng at full speed, but Lin Feng remained calm and motionless. He looked like an unmoving mountain.

At the moment when the opponent arrived near him, Lin Feng finally moved.

He took a step forwards, a very small step.

At that moment, extremely strong deadly sword energy spread through the air and transformed into a strong wind which struck the opponents. At that moment, the opponents felt that they were suffocating. It seemed like the Lin Feng wasn't a human being, he looked like a sword. Besides, his sword looked like a heavenly sword releasing heavens fury.

At that moment, Zi Ling was also suffocating.

A sword had been used, its splendour illuminated the atmosphere and cause heaven and earth to tremble.

Silence invaded the crowd. The people who were moving towards Lin Feng all suddenly stopped. At that moment, it seemed like time

had stopped.

## Chapter 227: Fury for the Princess!

---

The Earth Fusion was a cultivation dimension that many cultivators never understood in their entire life. Even strong cultivators at the Xuan Qi layer required luck and a great amount of insight, in order to understand earth fusions.

When a cultivator and the earth fused together, the human being absorbs strength from the earth itself. Every movement was in perfect accordance with the forces of heaven and earth.

Lin Feng's sword left a brilliant and resplendent arch-shaped light as it slashed through the air. The ones who were attacking Lin Feng were completely enveloped by that light. Lin Feng's sword energy seemed like it was coming from every direction.

Immediately after, Lin Feng attacked those who had come to attack him. Each and every single one of them slowly collapsed. They had all fallen dead, in an instant.

A single sword had annihilated all of them. Nobody had been lucky enough to escape.

The hearts of the people in the crowd were pounding. A few strong Zi Government members had already been killed by Lin Feng's sword. He was a real sword master. In front of Lin Feng, Lin Hao Jie was indeed a humiliation to sword users.

His radiant Golden Rain Sword, in front of Lin Feng's sword, looked like a comedy act. Lin Feng's sword was genuinely sharp, he

could actually kill people in an instant when using his sword.

Zi Ying and Zi Qiong were stupefied. While looking at that young man wearing white clothes, they felt furious.

How strong.

Zi Qiong was sure that if he fought against Lin Feng, he would definitely die. There would be no suspense at all. He would end up the same as Lin Hao Jie. He wouldn't be able to withstand a single attack.

Zi Qiong and Zi Xia turned around and looked at their father, Zi Ying. Only Zi Ying could kill Lin Feng.

Not only them but everybody else was looking at Zi Ying. He was the patriarch of the Zi Government, how was he supposed to tolerate Lin Feng's attitude?

"Your martial skills are not bad." coldly said Zi Ying while staring at Lin Feng. Zi Ying had broken through to the ninth Ling Qi layer and could break through to the Xuan Qi layer at any moment.

He was able to sense Lin Feng's strength and he thought that Lin Feng's sword skills were only simple sword strikes. He had definitely used some type of trick. In other words, he had used an extremely powerful and high-level sword skill which was hidden as a simple sword strike.

“Martial skill?” a smile appeared on Lin Feng’s face as if something hilarious had been said. He hadn’t used any of his skills at all. He had just carried out ordinary sword strikes, it was just that he used his sword fusion and his earth fusion during these attacks.

That sword belonged to a higher dimension of cultivation.

“You don’t understand at all.” said Lin Feng indifferently. Zi Ying’s understanding of cultivation wasn’t advanced enough. He didn’t know what earth fusion was. Only those who could penetrate into that dimension could understand it and know the strength it contained.

For example, Lin Feng didn’t need to use his spirit, he could close his eyes and was still able to sense a leaf falling in the distance. He could sense everything that was happening around him. Zi Ying couldn’t do that. He could only trust his intuition which might not always be correct. Even if he knew that some people could use earth fusion, he still couldn’t understand it, he had sensed nothing at all. Obviously, he wasn’t able to understand even the basics.

“You don’t understand at all.” When Zi Ying heard these words, said by Lin Feng with so much confidence, he felt really uncomfortable.

A junior was telling him, in front of everybody, that he didn’t understand something, it made him seem incredibly ignorant.



“I don’t understand?” said Zi Ying while smiling coldly and then added: “You’re still a child and you dare act in such an arrogant way, you do not know how vast the world is. You came here, caused trouble, killed people of the Zi Government and humiliated it, I will not simply kill you.”

“I will cripple your cultivation. You will suffer everyday of your life. You will suffer a fate much worse than death.” Zi Ying’s voice was piercingly cold. When the crowd heard his words, they also sensed a wave of coldness emerge from Zi Ying.

Lin Feng was looking at Zi Ying. Immediately after, a smile appeared on his face, as if he had heard a joke.

“Why are you smiling?” asked Zi Ying in an extremely cold way.

“You are clearly afraid of me.” said Lin Feng as calmly as before and then continued: “I came to the Zi Government alone, I caused trouble during your children’s wedding ceremony, killed your future son-in-law, and slaughtered a number of people who belonged to the Zi Government. The Zi Government and I cannot exist under the same sky, there is no way to change that. If you weren’t afraid of me, you would have already attacked me but right now, you are not entirely sure that you can fight against me. Therefore, you are only saying empty threats. You want to find out how strong I really am while also delaying for time.”

When Zi Ying heard Lin Feng, he was stupefied. Indeed, he was really afraid of Lin Feng. A moment ago, he hadn’t understood anything about Lin Feng’s sword.

He was ignorant and on top of that, he was afraid. What terrified Zi Ying is that he couldn't determine exactly how strong Lin Feng was. Otherwise, he wouldn't waste time talking nonsense to Lin Feng. He would have attacked Lin Feng immediately after the Zi Government members were killed.

Lin Feng had managed to perfectly understand the situation.

“No matter whom you are hoping will arrive if you delay me long enough, today, you will die.” Lin Feng took a step forwards while holding his sword. Lin Feng seemed to be walking extremely slowly but when his suddenly sword diffused a bright and dazzling light, Lin Feng, in a flash, had already landed in front of Zi Ying. The crowd had the impression that they were hallucinating, how had Lin Feng crossed such an incredible distance in a flash.

“Boom!”

A purple illusionary spirit appeared behind Zi Ying and it was incredibly huge. Zi Ying's entire body was enveloped in a resplendent purple light. Zi Ying's spirit was very mysterious.

Surprisingly, when fighting against Lin Feng, he had released his spirit immediately. He was definitely proving Lin Feng's words, he was afraid of him. Because he was afraid of Lin Feng, he couldn't afford to be careless and had thus immediately released his spirit.

“Pishhhhhh!”

Lin Feng's sword fell from the sky.

“Purple Fist!” furiously shouted Zi Ying. His purple spirit rushed through the air and transformed into an illusion around Zi Ying.

An incredible quantity of purple Qi emerged and turned into a spiral, it spun around Zi Ying's hand. It looked like a purple fist had formed around Zi Ying's hand.

Finally, the monstrous purple fist launched forward and bombarded the atmosphere. In a flash, on Zi Ying's fist, countless purple fists were rushing towards Lin Feng at full speed.

“Pshhh.. pshhhh...”

Lin Feng's sword blocked the purple fists. Lin Feng was unceasingly moving his sword to block the bombardment of purple fists. His forearm felt incredibly sore from the continued pressure on his sword.

The Purple Fist skill was a high-quality skill at the Xuan level. That skill and the spirit complemented each other. It enabled members of the Zi Government to carry out extremely powerful attacks which had the strength of the Di level.

It was especially strong if it was used by a cultivator of the ninth Ling Qi layer. If he had used that skill against a mountain, a large crater would have appeared in it.

Lin Feng's sword was becoming slower and slower as if he couldn't stand the pressure. His forearm felt heavier and heavier. However, he looked as calm as before. His heart was also filled with determination.

His sword was extremely sharp. Lin Feng looked as if he could destroy anything.

Sword masters had an incredible aura. The sword of a real master was capable of pure annihilation and a real master would never retreat when using such a sword.

Lin Feng's sword was extremely sharp and pierced the atmosphere with each movement.

Lin Feng's sword was unceasingly destroying the purple fists.

“Retreat!”

Zi Ying's facial expression drastically changed. Lin Feng's sword was unceasingly moving as before. When he saw the sword heading straight for him, without hesitation, he jumped backwards.

A moment later, Zi Ying's face was deathly pale because Lin Feng's sword had undergone a trajectory change and was now moving towards his son, Zi Qiong.

Zi Ying was unable to block the attack, what would happen if Zi Qiong received that attack?

“You would dare!” shouted Zi Ying furiously.

“Die!” said Lin Feng coldly. Why wouldn’t Lin Feng dare?

If Zi Ling hadn’t coincidentally picked him up on the side of the road, Zi Qiong would have caused harm to Duan Xin Ye. At that moment, Lin Feng wasn’t killing Zi Qiong for any other reason but to avenge Duan Xin Ye.

If Duan Xin Ye had taken her own life, Lin Feng would have regretted it his entire life.

When Zi Qiong saw that Lin Feng’s sword was moving towards him at full speed, his heart twitched. His facial expression revealed hopelessness. Was he, Zi Qiong, going to die? Was he going to get killed on the day of his wedding and at the moment when he was about to enter the forbidden area?

“Pshh.”

A small sound filled the atmosphere. Zi Qiong didn’t think much longer. His eyes looked calm. Fear, hopelessness, he would have never thought that such a day would come for him.

Zi Qiong slowly collapsed onto the floor. The people in the crowd held their breath and their hearts were pounding.

The young master of the Zi Government had been killed.

Lin Feng's words weren't empty, if he said he was going to kill, he killed. He could pierce everything with his sword. Not only the head of the Zi Government but everybody related to harming the princess had to die.

Lin Feng was enraged, he would unleash all of his fury for the princess.

## Chapter 228: Purple Annihilation

---

“How strong, what an incredibly strong young man!”

Many people in the crowd were astonished. Their hearts were pounding. How old was Lin Feng?

He seemed to be much younger than Zi Qiong. But he had killed Lin Hao Jie the Golden Rain Sword, he had killed some members from the Zi Government and his sword had made a cultivator at the peak of the ninth Ling Qi layer retreat while he killed Zi Qiong.

“Monstrous” was the only adequate word to describe Lin Feng’s strength. The Zi Government, was the strongest and most influential group within the entire region.

Besides, Lin Feng was only a young man and yet he dared to slaughter so many people from the Zi Government, annihilating everything and killing anyone who tried to stop him.

Zi Ling and Zi Yi, they couldn’t believe their eyes, they had the impression that they were dreaming.

They thought that Lin Feng was a piece of trash but in the end, he was much stronger than Lin Hao Jie, he was terrifyingly strong and had outstanding natural talent. He had even managed to make Zi Ying retreat.

Duan Xin Ye’s smile, while looking at Lin Feng’s back, was

getting bigger and bigger. She knew how hot-blooded and determined Lin Feng was. On that day, Lin Feng had chased and killed five incredibly strong cultivators to save her.

Amongst those eight people, all of them were stronger than Lin Feng. They had all broken through to the seventh Ling Qi layer. Lin Feng, relying on his fearless demeanour, looked like a war god as he killed the lieutenants of the black guard. In the end, only one was left alive.

Lin Feng would risk his life for her. She was also ready to die if she could not be with him. It seemed like they were perfect for each other, nothing could separate them.

“Ahhhhhh.....” A tragic shout filled the atmosphere which shocked the crowd. Zi Ying was fixedly staring at that corpse lying on the ground. He had only one son. He had spent many years raising him and shaping him into a strong cultivator. This was going to be a beautiful day for him; he was going to enter the forbidden area but at that moment, he was lying on the ground as a corpse.

“I want you to die!” Zi Ying’s voice was filled with hatred. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng. His extremely strong spirit suddenly emitted insane roars, the spirit looked like it had gone insane.

Blood was dripping from Lin Feng’s sword. When he saw Zi Ying, who was roaring with sadness, killing intent filled Lin Feng’s eyes.

“I also want you to die.” Lin Feng ran towards Zi Ying.



“BOOM!”

A spiral of purple Qi rushed from Zi Ying's hand and formed a purple fist. Behind his body, his spirit was emitting an endless purple light. Zi Ying's purple fist bombarded the atmosphere towards Lin Feng.

Then, the purple fist transformed into a silhouette that looked exactly like the purple spirit behind Zi Ying. Suddenly a huge purple cloud rushed through the air straight towards Lin Feng as if it wanted to swallow him entirely. Both attacks were now rushing towards him.

“Die!”

Lin Feng slashed with his sword and cut that purple giant in two, but the purple clouds continued moving towards Lin Feng at full speed. Besides, the purple silhouette reassembled itself from the two pieces.

“Die, die, die!”

Zi Ying was shouting furiously, he kept releasing purple spirals towards the giant silhouette. That purple giant suddenly moved its hand. An incredible purple fist attack emerged from its hand. Besides, the eyes of the purple giant looked like that of a human. Its eyes were filled with hatred, coldness and killing intent. This was also Zi Ying's state of mind at the time.

“What kind of attack is that?”

When the crowd saw that, they were stupefied. The energy had suddenly transformed into a purple giant and on top of that, the purple giant could attack, it was as if Lin Feng now had to fight two opponents.

“Purple Annihilation.”

A few of the direct descendants of the Zi Government were absolutely astonished. Purple Annihilation was a skill which only the direct descendants of the Zi Government knew.

Purple referred to colour of the Qi, the purple Qi could transform. At that moment, that purple giant had actually appeared because Zi Ying was controlling it.

Annihilation, because that attack was extremely powerful and it could destroy anything in its path. That giant was almost invincible. Even its attacks were unstoppable. It was almost impossible to protect one's life when facing such a powerful attack. It was an extremely powerful skill.

“His skill and spirit is really quite strange!”

At that moment, Lin Feng was also surprised. He had attacked that purple giant and cut it in two but that had only wasted time, the purple cloud had almost reached him.

That purple cloud was extremely strong, its only purpose was destruction.

Lin Feng's vision seemed like it could pierce the very air itself. At that moment, he was standing there but it felt like his presence had disappeared. Him and the earth were in complete symbiosis. His body had fused with the Qi of heaven and earth.

“Die.”

The purple illusion was surprisingly speaking. Its voice was extremely cold. The deadly energy surrounded Lin Feng's body and then swallowed him.

“Where the hell did Lin Feng go?” a furious shout filled the air.

The silent crowd sighed. They only saw a white silhouette standing next to Duan Xin Ye. If not Lin Feng, who else could it be?

A moment before, the entire crowd had been fascinated by that purple cloud and hadn't focused on Lin Feng at all.

“How quick! When did he dodge?” thought the people in the crowd. Lin Feng had been way too quick, a moment before, it seemed like Lin Feng had disappeared without trace. They hadn't even noticed his movement.

“If I hadn’t managed to penetrate into the earth fusion dimension, I would have been badly hurt by that attack. What a strange spirit. As expected, I cannot afford to be negligent.”

Then, Lin Feng saw that purple giant suddenly transformed into a huge purple face. The face was horrifying. Zi Ying was standing behind it and remained motionless. His spirit was no longer behind his back but was fighting against Lin Feng.

“Raawwr.” the giant roared and moved towards Lin Feng at full speed. Lin Feng was calmly standing there and could sense the Qi released by the giant. Immediately after, a cold and indifferent smile appeared on his face. Lin Feng grabbed Duan Xin Ye’s, his silhouette flickered and he moved back.

The giant was attacking Lin Feng but he continued to dodge, making it roar once again.

“Raawwwr...” the giant roared extremely loudly and then groaned. The crowd could only see that purple giant slowly dispersed. The purple cloud was slowly vanishing until it completely disappeared.

“It’s gone?”

The crowd was astonished. They were looking at Zi Ying. His spirit was back behind him, but it was very small and looked extremely fragile.

“With your current strength, you don’t even know how to perfectly control your spirit.”

Lin Feng smiled coldly. His perception was extremely sharp. At the moment the purple giant attacked him, Lin Feng had sensed that its strength was gradually getting weaker and weaker. Even though Zi Ying was doing his best to control it as much as possible, it was still gradually getting weaker, which was why Lin Feng had chosen to move back.

As expected, he hadn’t needed to dodge any longer, the purple cloud had vanished. A moment before, Zi Ying wanted to use all of his strength to kill Lin Feng, but unfortunately for him, he didn’t have enough power.

“Now, it’s my turn.” Lin Feng took a step and released a deadly energy. A vast quantity of sword Qi emerged. Lin Feng’s sword emitted a piercingly cold light.

Zi Ying’s face was extremely pale. A moment before, he had used all his strength but hadn’t managed to kill Lin Feng. He wouldn’t have another opportunity. Besides, he had consumed all his Qi reserves while controlling his spirit. If he didn’t get killed by Lin Feng, that would be a stroke of luck.

“It’s your turn but you will never get the chance.”

At that moment, a majestic voice, as if it had come from the vault of heaven, spread through the atmosphere. The echoes of that filled the sky.

Zi Ying was insanely shaking. His facial expression was sharp. The strongest cultivator of the Zi Government had finally arrived.

The crowd and Lin Feng raised their heads and looked towards the sky above the palace. There was a silhouette which looked imposing and majestic in the sky. From high above, that person was looking at the corpses of the former members of the Zi Government. His desire to kill reached the heavens.

“Xuan Qi layer.”

The crowd was astonished. There was a rumor that the strongest person of the Zi Government wasn't Zi Ying at all but an old man at the Xuan Qi layer. At that moment, it seemed like the rumors turned out to be true.

That strong cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer had appeared, and he had appeared because of Lin Feng.

If he hadn't come, the Zi Government would have been completely annihilated by Lin Feng, he would have even killed the patriarch, Zi Ying.

A young man had managed to do all of this. The crowd had always thought that such a thing was impossible, even in their wildest dreams. Sometimes, some things in this world were even crazier than people could imagine.

That handsome young man in white clothes, in order to protect a beautiful woman, had come to the Zi Government and was killing everyone.

Only a man like him was qualified to marry such a beautiful and delicate woman like Duan Xin Ye. Zi Qiong could have never married her. He was nothing in comparison with Lin Feng. A single sword strike had been sufficient to kill him, he hadn't even been able to react.

At that moment, the cultivator of the Xuan Qi Layer was descending from the sky. Immediately after, he fell down in the corridor and stood at Zi Ying's side. He calmly looked at all the corpses on the ground.

“Alright, alright, alright.”

That cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer was furious, he said the word “alright” thrice, raised his head and looked at Lin Feng. His eyes were filled with killing intent.

## Chapter 229: Sword of the Rising Sun

---

“Grand-Uncle.” When Zi Ying saw the old man, he bowed in a very respectful way. A cold light flashed in his eyes. His grand uncle was a strong cultivator of the Xuan Qi Layer. Since he had come, Lin Feng was inevitably going to die.

That person didn’t seem older than Zi Ying at all. He looked like he was the same as Zi Ying. The crowd didn’t find it strange at all. The higher one’s cultivation level was, the longer their lifespan became. Strong cultivators also looked younger. Extremely strong cultivators seemed to have incredible vigour and seemed like they would stay forever young.

In the continent of the Nine Clouds, there were some rumors that some people had cultivated to the level of immortality. Many cultivators wanted to become as strong as possible as it meant a longer life and possibly immortality.

Cultivation was always the most important thing for people in the continent.

“You still have the face to call me grand-uncle?”

The grand uncle groaned coldly. The people lying on the ground were some of the elites within the Zi Government, the new generation had almost been wiped out.

The only one left was Zi Xia. The Zi Government would be left without offspring.



“I made a mistake.”

Zi Ying couldn't deny it, as the patriarch of the Zi Government, he had put them in an extremely critical situation. It was his responsibility. Even his own son had been killed.

“You will be punished for your mistakes but right now.....”

The old man's voice was piercingly cold and he was staring at Lin Feng.

“You are so young and you have already broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer. You could have had a brilliant future but now you are doomed to die here.”

While talking, an incredible deadly Qi emerged from his body. The entire crowd started feeling cold.

“Lin Feng has broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer and relying on his sword. He managed to make Zi Ying, who is at the peak of the ninth Ling Qi layer, retreat. How powerful!”

The crowd was astonished. They had never seen such an astounding young man.

“Oh really? I think that we should give it a try in order to find out whether or not I will die.” said Lin Feng indifferently. His voice as

calm as before, his heartbeat was steady and did not falter. Actually, Lin Feng had already broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer. On that day when he penetrated into the earth fusion dimension, he had broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer from the sixth Ling Qi layer with a single leap!

Before, when he didn't know how to use the earth fusion, he relied on other mediums to challenge stronger cultivators. At that moment, he knew how to fuse with the earth around him. Even though he was of the eighth Ling Qi layer, he could easily defeat ordinary cultivators of the ninth Ling Qi layer. If it had only been Zi Ying and his strange attack, Lin Feng would have already killed him.

“How insane.”

The crowd was looking at Lin Feng and the old man facing each other. Lin Feng was facing a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer and was willing to fight him.

“You're pretty reckless. I will show you that a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer cannot be defeated by a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer.”

The old man pulled up his sleeves and suddenly, grains of sand started flying through the air. Surprisingly, there was an extremely strong wind, as strong as a hurricane. It was whistling through the air.

“Cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer can control pure Qi. Pure Qi is

the strength which can be borrowed from heaven and earth. It can then be condensed into a form of energy. It can easily kill cultivators of the Ling Qi layer as if they were insects. The difference is too large, there is no way out.”

The old man raised his hand, the palm of his hand facing Lin Feng. He started absorbing purple pure Qi. It looked like a dazzling purple star.

Besides, the radiance of that Pure Qi wasn't an illusion. It was an incredible glowing brilliance. It was really the result of pure Qi. Its power was incredible.

Lin Feng started walking while holding his sword and pointing it towards the ground. It was diffusing a bright and cold light. It looked piercingly cold and fearless.

“I will try something new with my sword against your pure Qi then, we will both learn something.”

Lin Feng sounded cold. The crowd was astonished. He definitely deserved to be called a genius. He was shockingly intelligent.

“You want to test your sword against me and teach me something?” said the old man while an evil smile appeared on his face. He had never heard a person of the Ling Qi layer say that they would try something new against a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer. They usually just begged for mercy.

Lin Feng always did what he said though, even if it was insane, he still followed his heart.

“Well, you can try then.”

The old man's hand shook. The light from the pure Qi being absorbed into the palm of his hand was dazzling to the eyes. Immediately after, he released it. The deadly purple star looked like pure destruction.

Even the crowd who wasn't in the covered corridor could feel the strength of the purple star.

“Sword of the Rising Sun!” Lin Feng quickly raised his sword high into the air. However, in the eyes of the people in the crowd, that movement looked slow and clear, like a sunrise.

That sword looked like the sun rising in the east. It slowly rose into the sky filling it with incredible power.

The crowd could not believe their eyes, They had the impression that they were really looking at the red sun slowly moving up into the sky. The Sword of the Rising Sun looked like a red rising sun.

“How beautiful. It looks like the rising sun.” Zi Ling had the impression that she was dreaming. She whispered: “Sister, Lin Feng is the creator of that skill, he created it this morning while we watched the sunrise. This is how he came up with that skill.”

In the morning, Zi Ling and Lin Feng had been observing the sunrise together. At that moment, she had even sighed while complaining that Lin Feng wasn't the person with whom she wished to share that moment with. However, at that moment, she was cherishing the memory.

She had the impression that she would never see such a skill again.

“A created skill?”

Zi Yi was shivering. Cultivators, including geniuses, usually learnt and practiced skills and techniques created by their ancestors, cultivators who could create skills were extremely rare, especially one so beautiful and inspiring. It looked like something that only a spiritually enlightened person could come up with and it was appearing in front of the crowd.

The purple light and the red light collided. An incredibly bright light filled the entire atmosphere almost causing the crowd to be blinded. Their eyes were very painful after seeing such a bright light. It seemed like all that power stayed within the air for a long time before it eventually dispersed and the light dimmed.

Lin Feng's silhouette appeared. He was holding his sword and he looked frivolous, natural and unrestrained.

“Your Sword of the Rising Sun, I really don't want to kill you... Unfortunately, you killed my family so I have to.” said the old man. Even though the old man had broken through to the Xuan Qi

layer, he was well aware that it was nothing exceptional. If Lin Feng continued practicing, he could easily become a really outstanding cultivator. Lin Feng would just need a few years before reaching a level higher than the old man. The Xuan Qi layer wasn't Lin Feng's final goal.

Some people loved Lin Feng while some others were jealous of him. However, the old man of the Zi Government had never seen such a talented young man. All the juniors of the Zi Government were far from being as strong as Lin Feng. He had always hoped that there would be a young genius in the Zi Government. Unfortunately, there had never been one and the first time that he saw such an incredible genius, it wasn't his offspring but an enemy of the Zi Government.

The old man wanted to slap Zi Ying repeatedly in the face. Instead of making friends with Lin Feng, he had become his enemy, how ignorant! Such a thing was unpardonable.

“Come on, attack.” said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached.

“Alright, let's see what you have.”

The old man also sounded calm. He started moving and in a flash, he landed in front of Lin Feng. His hand was enveloped in purple pure Qi which was already slashing towards Lin Feng's body.

The hearts of the people in the crowd were pounding. Someone like Lin Feng, who dared confront a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer

while at the Ling Qi layer, actually existed.

“Scorching Sword!”

Lin Feng said that in a low voice. An extremely resplendent light emerged from his sword. It was filled with endless explosive force. The light diffused by that sword was radiant and awe-inspiring. It was the light of a scorching sun. It illuminated everything. It was extremely powerful. That was the Scorching Sword.

“Pshhh... pshhh.....”

Deadly Qi was burning around the sword. That attack was the result of Lin Feng’s knowledge of cultivation. He had used his deadly Qi to create this skill.

The light emitted by that sword was as radiant as the sun and the sword moved at the speed of light.

“BOOM!”

A terrifying Qi filled the atmosphere. When the scorching sword approached, the old man of the Zi Government retreated. A cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer was retreating when facing Lin Feng. Surprisingly, he had moved back. However, it was only a small step backwards and then a side step.

“Dark Shadow!”

Lin Feng didn't stop his sword attack and he used the second level of the Deadly Cross Shadow, the Dark Shadow. His body vanished and transformed into a shadow. It seemed like he had disappeared.

Back in the days, when Lin Feng was fighting to save Duan Xin Ye, he had used his skill Dark Shadow skill but he was unable to transform into a perfect shadow. However, at that moment, since he knew how to fuse with the earth, when he used his Dark Shadow skill, his body really transformed into a perfect shadow, completely invisible. Only his terrifying strength was left.

“Purple Summit.” whispered the old man.

When the old man sensed all of Lin Feng's strength, a hideous expression appeared on his face. An incredible purple light appeared, it was a purple light made of pure Qi.

“Pshhh.... pshhh....”

Lin Feng's sword penetrated into the pure Qi. The old man's facial expression slightly changed. His body was just like an illusion, he flickered and disappeared. He then landed down farther down the corridor. He had retreated a much larger distance this time. The old man of the Zi Government had, once again, moved back because of Lin Feng.

But Lin Feng's facial expression didn't reveal pride at all. He didn't chase after him. He turned around and looked at Zi Ying.



Who was now much closer to Lin Feng than the old man. Lin Feng's eyes filled with murderous flames.

Zi Ying's facial expression changed drastically. His heart started pounding furiously.

Lin Feng's body moved once again, there was no longer anything to stop him.

# Chapter 230: The Resplendence of the Cross

---

At the foot of the Golden Zi Mountain, a group of armored-horses were galloping at full speed.

The group was composed of about thirty people. The majority of them was wearing bronze masks which covered their faces entirely; but once in a while, it was possible to notice they all had tense expressions. They were releasing strong Qi as they rode.

These horses were surprisingly, all Chi Xie armored-horses. They were people from the Xue Yue Country.

The person leading the group wasn't like all the others. Surprisingly, it was a girl, she looked delicate and was wearing white clothes. Even though a fine veil was covering her face, she looked holy and pure.

The way she moved her body gave the impression that she was floating through the air like a celestial spirit. It gave the impression that she was not of this world.

That woman at the front of the group, was Meng Qing. Her clothes were white like snow and she was floating in the air like a celestial being.

The group of Chi Xie cavalry was following Meng Qing. They were the Celestial Sword Chi Xie Unit.

Over the past days, after Lin Feng had travelled into the Mo Yue country, he had heard no news about the battle. After the battle, a group of Chi Xie cavalry followed Meng Qing and went looking for Lin Feng. They had been tracking him for days. By coincidence, they had learnt from the Zi Wei Mountain Village, that Lin Feng was at the Zi Government.

Besides, Meng Qing and the others had been galloping at full speed over that huge distance without rest.

.....

At the same time, outside of the Zi Government, Lin Feng was standing in front of the entrance to the forbidden area. He had just made the old man retreat in the blink of an eye, but he didn't stop there. He had grabbed Duan Xin Ye's hand and had jumped towards Zi Ying carrying the princess at his side.

“Nooooo...”

Zi Ying shouted extremely loudly. Zi Ying was the patriarch of the Zi Government Sect and he seemed to be pitifully weak when compared with Lin Feng. Lin Feng made him look like a weak cultivator who couldn't withstand a single attack. Besides, there had been less than a second between the moment when Lin Feng stopped fighting against the old man and the moment when he had appeared right in front of Zi Ying. It seemed like he could kill Zi Ying at any moment. Zi Ying's heart was filled with endless resentment.

He was the Patriarch of the Zi Government, he had reached the peak of the ninth Ling Qi layer and was respected in the entire region, there was nobody who wasn't reverent and respectful to him.

But at that moment, Lin Feng, a teenager who had come alone; had killed the members of the Zi Government and was treating him, Zi Ying, like he was nothing. He was moving to kill him while still fighting with the senior cultivator of the Zi Government.

A terrifying purple illusion emerged, Zi Ying's entire body was covered by the purple Qi of that illusion. He violently raised his fist with all the energy he had remaining.

“Sword of the Setting Sun!” He was holding his sword in the air and sliced through the atmosphere towards the ground. His sword was not dazzling, though, it gave the impression of desolation and loneliness.

That hot-blooded genius, that majestically strong cultivator, also had moments of loneliness and desolation, moments similar to a setting sun.

Sword of the Setting Sun was filled with a deadly and lonely Qi.

Lin Feng's Sword of the Rising Sun was swift and violent. His Scorching Sword could illuminate everything, but it also destroyed everything it illuminated.

Lin Feng's Sword of the Setting Sun seemed like it refused to be flashy, there was nothing beautiful about it, no matter how dazzling the sword used to be, it all faded into darkness.

Zi Ling could feel the power of the sword. He used to enjoy a great reputation throughout the whole region and at that moment, he was being humiliated by Lin Feng. It was the opposite of what he was used to.

Zi Ying's heart was pounding. The brilliance of his attack was fading. It seemed like under Lin Feng's sword, anything that gave out a bright and flashy light was being suppressed.

When Lin Feng's Sword of the Setting Sun reached the ground, Zi Ying slowly collapsed. The hearts of the people in the crowd were pounding.

The Patriarch of the Zi Government had been killed by a single sword strike.

"How strong..." People in the crowd felt that they were paralyzed. Zi Ying had also been killed by Lin Feng. What a powerful young man.

"BOOM!"

An incredible purple light emerged around the old man's body and filled the air.

Lin Feng had made him retreat and in that moment, he killed Zi Ying. In front of the old man's eyes, Lin Feng had killed the Patriarch of the Zi Government, Zi Ying.

It wasn't only about Lin Feng having killed his offspring, it was also a shocking humiliation, Lin Feng made the old man seem completely useless.

"I will dismember you into a thousand pieces." The old man's face looked hideous and piercingly cold. He then jumped back into the corridor. The entire corridor was shaking as if it was going to collapse from the pressure he emitted.

"Dismember me into a thousand pieces?" Lin Feng's facial expression was cold. He then continued: "When you came, you said I would never have my turn, I could not kill him because I was dead already."

"You will be buried here with him." said the old man while taking another step. The ground shook making Lin Feng's heart shake as well. The old man was furious, the old man of the Xuan Qi layer was enraged.

"Well, once again, we will have to see what the final result will be."

Lin Feng put Duan Xin Ye behind him and moved forwards releasing his battle energy.

Everybody who was present could clearly and distinctly sense Lin Feng's battle energy. Even though he was facing a strong cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer, he was not backing down. He was truly fearless. There was only battle energy burning around him and his heart was filled with ardour.

This was a true cultivator. He was extremely determined. How could he not be strong when he had such determination? Lin Feng hadn't become that strong only because he had high natural talent, it was also thanks to his willpower and determination.

"Alright." shouted the old man when he sensed Lin Feng's battle energy. He then started running and an incredible energy emerged from his fist. Purple pure Qi rushed insanely through the air straight towards Lin Feng.

"Deadly Sword."

Lin Feng was using his deadly sword while in fusion with the earth, it was thus infinitely stronger than before. That sword was releasing deadly Qi when in perfect fusion with the energy of the earth.

"BOOM!"

The purple pure Qi and Lin Feng's sword collided. An incredible force oppressed Lin Feng's sword. The pressure from his sword felt like he was colliding with a mountain. It was extremely heavy.

Cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer used genuine pure Qi, which was condensed and used directly in their attacks, this was infinitely more powerful than the pure Qi used by the lower layers of cultivation.

The old man shouted furiously, he had also used as much of his pure Qi as possible in his attack. Even though it was only one attack, Lin Feng hadn't been able to resist. His forearm was severely injured under the pressure and his body had been blown backwards.

"You overestimate your own abilities." said the old man coldly. Immediately after, he started running and the ground trembled under his feet.

The purple pure Qi around the old man's body transformed into a spiral shape and shot from the old man's fist. He launched another insanely powerful fist attack straight towards Lin Feng.

"BOOM!"

Another explosive collision. Lin Feng groaned in pain. He grabbed Duan Xin Ye's hand and moved backwards. The old man looked like a terrifying purple demon.

"This is the difference between the Xuan Qi layer and the Ling Qi layer. They cannot fight each other. Between the Ling Qi layer and the Xuan Qi layer, there are too many changes within the body." thought Lin Feng. Battles were important to gain experience, battling against a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer was also a way to



challenge himself and gain experience.

He would sooner or later try and break through to the Xuan Qi layer. The experience of how a Xuan Qi layer opponent fights would be useful after breaking through.

“Whatever, it would be bad if we let it just end with only this.”

A tremendous amount of battle energy started burning around Lin Feng’s body. He was fixedly staring at the old man.

“No need to look at me that way. I am at the Xuan Qi layer, you have no chance. You will not even be able to touch me, you can only wait to die.”

The old man’s voice was cold and indifferent. The purple pure Qi surrounding his body was getting denser and denser.

“Oh, is that so?” replied Lin Feng in a low voice and then suddenly disappeared. Dark Shadow... he transformed into a shadow.

“Do you think that will help you?” said the old man while smiling coldly. The senses of a cultivator at the Xuan Qi layer were extremely developed. Even though Lin Feng’s skill was extremely powerful, after all, it was only powered by the strength of the Ling Qi layer. It had not reached its maximum potential.

A rumbling noise spread through the atmosphere, which was

illuminated by purple Qi. However, at that moment, a sword immediately pierced into that purple Qi. A dark shadow was holding that sword.

“Give me your sword.”

The old man was smiling coldly. He then shook his hand and in a flash, the purple Qi wrapped around Lin Feng’s sword and pressed it against Lin Feng’s throat. There was nowhere left for him to go.

However, Lin Feng suddenly appeared in front of the old man, he then said in a cold tone: “Who said that a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer couldn’t hurt a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer?”

“Deadly Cross Shadow.”

When Lin Feng used this skill, he transformed his body into a sword which could pierce heaven and earth.

He raised both of his hands into the air and an incredibly bright cross appeared. It was terrifyingly quick, so quick it was impossible to believe. A cross was moving through the air above the crowd, it seemed like it was something ancient, but the cross had only just appeared.

When Lin Feng finished, the old man understood that the situation had become extremely dangerous. In a flash, he released his purple pure Qi and started to move backwards but it was too late. The purple pure Qi in front of him was extinguished under

Lin Feng's Deadly Cross Shadow. The cross collided with the old man and his clothes tore apart, his flesh was torn and there was a huge cross-shaped mark across his torso. It had the same brilliance as the cross that rushed through the air. However, the sight was horrible, his flesh and bones were visible, the wound was terrifying.

If he had been even a little bit weaker or reacted slightly late, the old man would have died. That Cross Shadow almost pierced through his chest and killed him.

## Chapter 231: The Purple Lake

---

The crowd was also looking at the old man's chest. They could clearly see the bloody cross which was gushing with blood. They were in shock.

“Who said that a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer couldn't hurt one of the Xuan Qi layer.”

If Lin Feng said that, it was because he believed otherwise and that he knew that he had the power to prove it. Relying on his strength of the Ling Qi layer, not only had he hurt the old man, but he had actually severely injured him. He had nearly killed him. The crowd found the whole situation hard to believe.

The old man lowered his head and could clearly see the cross mark and the blood from his chest. The old man's facial expression was so hideous that no words could describe it. Pure Qi emerged, the blood flowing out of his wound solidified and his wound was instantly sealed. The old man raised his head and looked at Lin Feng. His eyes were filled with endless hatred. He had never wanted to kill someone so much before meeting Lin Feng.

“I want to dismantle your entire body piece by piece before killing you.”

The old man's voice sounded extremely evil.

“Hmph.”

Lin Feng groaned coldly. He moved back to his initial position, grabbed Duan Xin Ye's hand, then slightly moved back again and at that moment the old man's facial expression drastically changed: "Don't you dare!"

At that moment, behind Lin Feng, there was the gigantic statue which was where the entrance into the forbidden area was hidden. It was still open from the previous rituals.

When Lin Feng saw the old man's facial expression, he smiled coldly. He then moved like a shadow and disappeared, he grabbed Duan Xin Ye and both of them immediately vanished, they were both thrown into the forbidden area.

The old man's facial expression grew darker. Lin Feng had entered the forbidden area.

The old man's silhouette flickered and he immediately tried to follow them but when he tried to enter the forbidden area, an extremely fierce sword energy emerged. His body was blown backwards.

A loud rumbling noise filled the air. The door of the forbidden area closed itself. The old man was astonished.

"Kacha!" The old man's hands emitted cracking noises as he clenched his fists. He was fixedly staring at the entrance to the forbidden area. The thing he feared the most had happened.

A moment before, when he was near Lin Feng, he didn't make it obvious, but he tried to make Lin Feng move back away from the forbidden area. He had done this so that nobody would suspect anything about the forbidden area. He didn't want to let Lin Feng enter it but in the end, Lin Feng had noticed.

If the opponent hadn't been Lin Feng, he wouldn't have been that worried but Lin Feng had extremely high natural talent and could already injure him. If Lin Feng stayed in the forbidden area for a few years without coming out, he would never have the opportunity to capture Lin Feng. Besides, with his high natural talent, Lin Feng, after having stayed for a few years, would certainly be able to kill the old man.

In the forbidden area, there were mystical objects. Even though the Zi Government had never really understood these things, maybe Lin Feng, as talented as he was, would be able to understand them and maybe then, he wouldn't even need years.

The old man was still in front of the entrance to the forbidden area, remaining motionless. He remained silent while staring at the door. He was lost in thought.

The crowd didn't hurry to leave either. Actually, they were all very curious to know what the forbidden area was hiding. Was it really a graveyard for their ancestors?

The Zi Government had a great reputation in the entire region, so nobody would have dared to force their way into the forbidden

area. Besides, the other cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer in the region were not that interested in the forbidden area of the Zi Government.

After all, with their strength, the Zi Government could only enjoy such a reputation within a limited area, that's all. They were nothing in comparison with the genuinely strong cultivators of Mo Yue.

.....

Inside of the forbidden area, the air was thick and oppressive.

The atmosphere was entirely silent. The silence was somewhat dreadful as well. There was a dark purple light shining on the scenery.

A purple light filled the entire atmosphere of the forbidden area.

Duan Xin Ye was firmly and tightly holding Lin Feng's hand as if she feared that Lin Feng might let go. However, her beautiful eyes were filled with curiosity, while observing the forbidden area.

She was slightly scared but not much because Lin Feng was by her side.

"Xin Ye, have the people of the Zi Government told you anything about the forbidden area?" asked Lin Feng.

“Never, I almost never talked to them.” said Duan Xin Ye while shaking her head.

“Let’s go deeper inside and see.” said Lin Feng while pulling on Duan Xin Ye’s hand. The purple light enabled them to see their surroundings.

The two of them walked for a while and then, suddenly, the purple light became much brighter. Everything which was surrounding them could now clearly be seen.

The ground under Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye’s feet was made of clean and well cut stone. The walls were on both side were clear cut stone of high quality. While they were moving forwards, the path was getting larger and larger.

After a while, Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng were astonished when they saw what was in front of them.

There was a lake but the water of that lake was purple. There were small ripples unceasingly forming on the top.

That lake was only small. They could still see the other side in the distance from where they were. It was brightly lit on the other side too. They could see beautiful stone from a gigantic palace.

“There’s a purple lake and a palace.”



Lin Feng was astonished. He was fixedly staring at the lake. Surprisingly, it looked like Zi Ying's spirit. What surprised Lin Feng was the water which seemed like it was boiling and foaming.

"Let's go closer and see." said Lin Feng to Duan Xin Ye. Duan Xin Ye slightly nodded. Lin Feng tightly hold Duan Xin Ye's hand and then jumped over to the next side aiming to land in front of the palace.

However, at the moment when Lin Feng was jumping over the lake, an incredible sound spread through the air.

Suddenly, the lake seemed to rise into the air, whirlpools appeared and sucked Lin Feng and Duan Ye into the water.

Everything was happening so fast. They were dumbstruck.

Lin Feng was astonished and shocked, it seemed like the purple lake had a life of its own. It had immediately caught them and trapped them inside it. Lin Feng would have never thought that such a thing was possible.

Duan Xin Ye shouted in surprise. She was firmly holding Lin Feng's hand as if she was going to die if she didn't. Both of them were swallowed by the lake.

"ARRRRRGHHHHH." at that moment, the lake seemed to be excited and roared loudly. Purple light was unceasingly filling the atmosphere moving straight to Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye.

At that moment, the clothes of Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye's disappeared and melted in the lake. They were astonished to see that their clothes were actually melting. In a flash, their clothes had entirely melted and disappeared. Fortunately, their entire bodies were completely submerged in the water, otherwise, the situation would have been awkward as well as dangerous.

The situation was so strange that even if the situation was awkward, they didn't have time to pay attention to that.

Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng only had their heads out of the water. They were tightly holding each others' hand. At that moment, the purple liquid moved towards them and penetrated into their bodies and spread through their entire body.

The purple liquid was then penetrating into their legs, arms and bones. It was unceasingly penetrating into their body as if it wanted to occupy all the available space. It seemed like the liquid could enter from every opening.

"Lin Feng, I'm in pain!" Duan Xin Ye's face was deathly pale. She had the feeling her body was going to swell and explode. She was firmly holding Lin Feng's hand and then, finally, she felt that the pressure in her arms was decreasing.

Lin Feng looked gloomy. He was also in a great deal of pain. That liquid was attacking his body from the inside.

At that moment, an incredible and colossal Qi emerged. Illusions

appeared behind Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye's bodies, surprisingly, some small black doors appeared.

There were three doors. They looked like they had existed since the beginning of time.

“Sealed Doors!”

Lin Feng was astonished. These were sealed doors just like those that the members of the Duan Clan had with their spirit, the blood spirit.

“Boom, boom, boom.”

The three doors vibrated and then it seemed like Duan Xin Ye's body was sealed by the sealed doors, as if they were sealing everything. The sealed door Qi was spreading through the atmosphere and surprisingly the purple liquid stopped penetrating her body. It was slowly being forced out of her body.

The sealed doors prevented the purple liquid from flowing into her body.

Duan Xin Ye slowly closed her eyes but she was still breathing smoothly. Lin Feng slightly loosened his grip on her hand. She had just fainted, it was nothing serious. However, the purple liquid was still penetrating into Lin Feng's body and it was extremely painful.

However, at that moment, what seemed to be a familiar

sensation invaded his body which made Lin Feng shiver. Behind his back, an illusion appeared.

It was his snake spirit that had appeared behind his back. The little snake was sound asleep.

# Chapter 232: Where is Lin Feng?

---

“Rooooaar.”

At that moment, his snake spirit roared loudly, the noise sounding like a dragon chant.

The snake opened its mouth and turned into an endless black hole swallowing everything in its way.

An endless quantity of purple liquid was being swallowed by the snake. The stomach of the snake was growing bigger and bigger. Immediately after, a loud roar spread through the air again. Suddenly, additional heads were sprouting from the body of the snake. They all roared and swallowed more purple liquid at the same time.

The purple liquid was an even darker shade of purple when absorbed by the snake.

“Sssss....”

“Sssss.....”

“Ssssss.....”

The chant of the dragons was unceasingly spreading through the atmosphere as if it was echoing from ancient times. At that

moment, Lin Feng's snake had become gigantic. It didn't even look like a snake anymore, it looked like a dragon. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, it was known for some dragons to have multiple heads, his snake had six heads.

At that moment, Lin Feng's heart was violently pounding, was this his snake spirit?

In comparison with before, his snake was completely different, it had completely changed.

His snake used to be small, it looked very weak.

But at that moment, it looked like an ancient and powerful dragon. It looked brutal, strong and majestic.

“Ssssss, ssssss.....”

The six heads of the snake were singing the chant of the dragons. The snake then rose all of its heads and uttered a long roar as if it was looking down at all the other living creatures.

As far as the purple lake was concerned, it had completely vanished without a trace. It had been completely swallowed by the six headed dragon.

Lin Feng's snake spirit had absorbed the entire purple lake as if there was nothing in the world that a dragon couldn't eat.

Lin Feng couldn't imagine how his snake spirit has transformed to look like a dragon. Even though it couldn't be described as gigantic, it was still been able to swallow the entire purple lake. Lin Feng couldn't believe his eyes.

Lin Feng raised his hand and saw a purple light flashing around it. At that moment, Lin Feng's purple energy was much stronger than that of Zi Ying.

“My spirit transformed itself again, but it's much stronger than my previous ice-spirit. That's a good thing.”

Lin Feng was slightly smiling but suddenly, he noticed that a naked young woman was in front of him. She looked so lithe and graceful. Lin Feng was filled with endless desire.

Duan Xin Ye was in front of him and was completely naked.

Her skin was delicate and white, the same could be said about the other parts of her body. In a flash, Lin Feng felt like he was overcome with a fever.

He lowered his head and looked at his own body. Lin Feng had the impression that his cheeks were burning. He was also naked. The purple lake had melted their clothes.

Lin Feng turned his head away. He couldn't look at Duan Xin Ye anymore. He feared that he wouldn't be able to control himself if

he did. Even though his determination and willpower as a cultivator was extremely strong, Lin Feng was a virgin in his previous life and was still a virgin in his new life and an incredibly beautiful woman was naked before him. His heart was violently and brutally pounding.

Lin Feng quickly removed clothes from his Na stone. It was good that he had his Na stone, otherwise he would not have had any clothes.

Lin Feng put on his clothes and then walked towards Duan Xin Ye, he then threw clothes over her to cover her body and then finally dared look again.

However, Lin Feng suddenly saw two beautiful eyes that were wide open in shock. She wasn't blinking at all. She was fixedly staring at him. At that moment, Lin Feng wished he could find a hole to escape this awkward situation.

Duan Xin Ye then looked at her body and realized what had happened. Her face became bright red, even her ears had completely turned red.

"I didn't look on purpose." said Lin Feng who felt really awkward. When he saw Duan Xin Ye's red face, he felt even more awkward.

Duan Xin Ye sighed. She was sitting on the ground holding the clothes in front of her body to hide herself. Each of her movements to cover herself was enough to make a man go insane.



“Do you have more clothes?” asked Duan Xin Ye shyly. Even though Lin Feng had a good sense of hearing, his mind was still in a dazed state.

He just slightly nodded and took out more clothes out from the Na Stone and handed them to Duan Xin Ye. He then said: “I’m going over there to see what is inside the palace.” While speaking, Lin Feng abruptly turned around and walked towards the bright light in the front of the palace.

Duan Xin Ye looked shy. She was blankly staring at Lin Feng’s back for a while and then a smile appeared on her face. She looked very sweet. Her smile would have made anyone’s heart race.

Lin Feng didn’t see Duan Xin Ye’s sweet smile. He continued until he arrived inside the palace. He was stupefied by what he saw.

The palace was extremely spacious and brightly lit. Lin Feng didn’t know what material had been used to build it, but it looked like a luxurious palace that was built in ancient times.

At the front of the palace was a sculpture. It was a motionless silhouette meditating on the ground. A purple light was surrounding the statue. Beside the statue, there was a snake in a curled position. Uncurled, that snake, from head to tail, probably had a length of sixty meters. It was gigantic.

Besides, to Lin Feng’s left, there was a stone slab and on that

stone slab was a corpse. That corpse was already a skeleton. On the side of that skeleton was a book.

Lin Feng walked towards the skeleton and grabbed the book to see what was written inside. The book seemed to be a dairy.

“My name is Zi Qian, I am a famous person in Cangzhou. I unintentionally came to this nameless mountain and entered this place. I discovered that it is a graveyard for extremely strong cultivators.....”

“Graveyard?” Lin Feng’s pupils shrank. This place was a graveyard for extremely strong cultivators?

His heart was pounding. He then continued reading the small book in which Zi Qian had written the tales from his life.

So this place was found by Zi Qian ,the first ancestor of the Zi Government.

Besides, this place was a graveyard for extremely strong cultivators. This place was so full of power that it was a forbidden area for other cultivators.

That purple lake was surprisingly human blood. It contained the strength and power of a blood spirit. The blood could penetrate into people’s bodies and would dissolve their bodies from the inside. The process was so the blood could dissolve the body of the host it entered. The powerful blood in the lake was also hereditary.

The direct descendants of the Zi Government all possessed a purple spirit but were actually all very weak. They became much stronger only after having absorbed some of the purple blood from the lake, it was a kind of baptism. Only after that baptism, their spirit would be in harmony with their body. It also developed their natural talent and accelerated their cultivation.

The spirit of the Zi Government members could also be classified as a blood spirit but their ancestors had only relied on the blood from the purple lake to make their spirit become the purple spirit. Even after having undergone a baptism in the purple lake, their spirit could never be as powerful as the blood spirits which could be directly inherited. For example, Duan Xin Ye had inherited her spirit from the blood of her ancestors. All the Duan Clan members had inherited the blood spirit and gained strength from it.

The Zi Government members could only undergo the baptism of the purple lake on the day of their wedding. As a rule, that was the only time when they could enter the forbidden area. This was also Zi Qian's choice. That was the only way to enjoy its benefits. Entering the forbidden area as a young adult was best because if a person was too young they wouldn't be able to endure the pain, while older people would have wasted time and lost their potential already.

All the members of the Zi Government wanted to undergo the baptism of the purple lake. However, Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye's bodies had both rejected it. Duan Xin Ye's body had rejected it because she possessed an extremely strong and powerful blood spirit whose sealed doors had prevented her body from absorbing the purple liquid.

As far as Lin Feng was concerned, the purple liquid had been entirely swallowed by his snake spirit. His snake spirit had absorbed all the strength of the purple blood.

Lin Feng turned around and looked the huge snake beneath the statue. Lin Feng was shaking.

It wasn't a statue, it was a real snake.....

The purple lake was actually formed from the blood of the snake.

“What a strong and powerful beast! Its blood could fill an entire lake and it harnesses the strength of blood. Besides, it's been there for so many years and the blood was still alive.”

.....

Outside of the forbidden area, the crowd was still waiting patiently. The old man of the Zi Government was waiting, but the door leading to the forbidden area remained closed, not moving at all.

Not only the old man but everybody who belonged to the Zi Government was gathered there. They were all waiting for Lin Feng, the corridor was packed with strong cultivators.

A rumbling noise could be heard and the ground started shaking. The crowd was astonished. They looked down the mountain and saw a group of silhouettes riding armored-horses. They were

galloping at full speed and looked extremely majestic.

The leader of the group was a woman, she was wearing white clothes and her face was covered with a fine veil. Even though they could only see her silhouette, everybody was fascinated by that woman.

“There is another incredibly beautiful woman.” thought people in the crowd while their heartbeats accelerated. They didn’t know who these people were and why they were coming straight towards the Zi Government.

Their horses neighed and while looking full of vitality, the horses all jumped directly into the corridor. They looked majestic, imposing and awe-inspiring.

“How impressive! Could it be that they are lost?” The crowd was stupefied. Surprisingly, these people had directly entered the corridor.

Everybody started looking at the woman who was leading the group. They also didn’t know who she was and why she had come. They really wanted to see her face to see if she was comparable with Duan Xin Ye, or at least, to see what she what was like beneath her veil.

“Where is Lin Feng?” said the young woman. The crowd was astonished. She had come because of Lin Feng. Once again, everything was because of Lin Feng!

# Chapter 233: The Final Day

---

“Where is Lin Feng?” said Meng Qing. Her voice sounded cold. The woman was like an iceberg, cold and unmoving.

“Huh?”

The old man slowly turned around and looked at the young girl who was acting arrogantly. He then said coldly: “Why are you looking for Lin Feng?”

“Where is Lin Feng?” asked Meng Qing again. Her voice was still very cold. She didn’t answer the old man’s question and ignored him. At that moment, all she wanted to know was where Lin Feng was.

The Celestial Sword unit also looked at the old man. At that moment, the old man felt their Qi filling the atmosphere and oppressing him.

“Hmph!”

The old man pulled up his sleeves and his facial expression looked piercingly-cold. Not so long before, Lin Feng had slaughtered his family. Lin Feng left a cross-shaped mark on the old man’s chest, humiliating him and at that moment, another group of insane people had come looking for Lin Feng. The old man felt completely humiliated.

“I killed Lin Feng.” said the old man coldly. A group of teenagers dared to act so arrogantly, that angered the old man.

“You killed him?” repeated Meng Qing, her heart was pounding.

“Indeed, I killed him. Everybody here watched and cheered as I killed him.” said the old man while smiling coldly.

Meng Qing remained silent and then suddenly a murderous light flashed through her eyes. These cold and expressionless eyes had revealed emotion for the first time.

Her body started shaking and shivering as if she had just heard a terrible horror story.

The Celestial Sword unit remained silent as well.

A tremendous thunder spread through the atmosphere and an incredibly bright light filled the air around the Celestial Sword unit. An endless quantity of Qi emerged and created a hurricane. At that moment, the entire crowd had the feeling that they were suffocating from the pressure.

“How strong! The weakest person of that group is at the third Ling Qi layer. What kind of people are they? What about Lin Feng? Who is he really?”

When the crowd felt that oppressive Qi, their hearts started pounding.

“You will all die!”

An incredibly loud and mighty voice filled the air. The powerful Qi spread through the air. The Chi Xie armored-cavalry started rampaging.

Blood filled the air. The Chi Xie cavalry rushed through the crowd and in a flash, the entire palace had become a bloodbath. They killed everyone without hesitation.

Horrible shrieks filled the air. Blood was continuously filling the air.

Meng Qing was staring at the sky. Nobody knew what she was thinking.

Sometimes she didn't even know what she was thinking.

She only knew that her heart felt painful, extremely painful.

Her experience of life was very limited. She had been in the outside world for a very short time. She used to live alone with her mother on the Black Wind Mountain.

Someday, under a bright moon, Lin Feng appeared on a stone at the foot of a mountain. He had then taken her and shown her the outside world.



At that moment, Lin Feng filled her memories and thoughts. She could see Lin Feng when he was angry, when he was fighting, when he looked natural and unrestrained, but also when he smiled and giggled at her.

A teardrop fell from her cheek onto the ground. Her thoughts were only of Lin Feng.

Meng Qing usually never showed her emotions, but at that moment, she was crying. Her heart felt so incredibly painful.

At that moment, the old man saw the Chi Xie troops killing the members of the Zi Government. His facial expression became ice-cold. A purple Qi emerged as he jumped up in the air.

However, at the moment when he tried to attack, an extremely piercing coldness enveloped his body and blocked him.

That coldness was piercing through to his bones.

Not only the old man, but everybody else could feel that immense coldness. It seemed like the entire world was about to freeze.

The fog in the air gradually solidified and snowflakes started falling from the sky.

The atmosphere was freezing.

“How cold.”

The crowd was shaking from head to toe. Immediately after, they looked at the young woman, whose clothes were as white as snow. At that moment, Meng Qing was really like an iceberg. She wanted to freeze everything, including her own heart.

“Die.....”

Meng Qing’s voice was low as it resonated in the entire atmosphere.

A hurricane then emerged in the air. It was surrounding Meng Qing and her white clothes were fluttering.

At that moment, the fine veil on her face flew away in the wind. It flew far away, revealing her beautiful face.

At that moment, it seemed like time had stopped.

Her beauty was breathtaking to the extent that people didn’t dare look at her.

She was incredibly beautiful, she was the incarnation of beauty.

They had all thought that Duan Xin Ye was extremely beautiful and nobody could rival her beauty, but at that moment, the

beautiful girl wearing white clothes, had appeared. She looked like a celestial being. She looked like an ice goddess. She made the people around her feel worthless.

There was such a beautiful creature in the world, that was a catastrophe for all other human beings.

When Zi Ling and her sister saw Meng Qing, they felt infinitely inferior, especially Zi Yi, she had the feeling that she was absolutely worthless.

“She came to look for Lin Feng, what is the nature of their relationship?” whispered Zi Ling. Duan Xin Ye was already very beautiful and also in love with Lin Feng, now, another extremely beautiful woman had appeared and was looking for Lin Feng.

Meng Qing had jumped from her horse up into the air and in a flash landed in front of the old man.

The old man was also astonished by Meng Qing’s beauty, but what astonished him the most was her strength. He had the sensation that his entire body was about to freeze and even his soul could freeze.

He was regretting that he underestimated these young cultivators and said that he killed Lin Feng.....

He released some purple pure Qi and shouted like a madman. He wanted to attack with all his power.

“Frozen Heart.” said Meng Qing in a low voice. She raised a finger. The old man was astonished and shaking from head to toe. Blood immediately splashed from his mouth.

One attack had been enough to severely injure him.

When the crowd saw that, they were all shocked and felt despair in their hearts. They were all blankly staring at Meng Qing. Not only was Meng Qing extremely beautiful, but her power was also more monstrous than that of Lin Feng.

Meng Qing released piercingly-cold ice Qi. That ice Qi came from the depths of her body, it seemed like an endless powerful Qi was being released.

The old man’s purple pure Qi was frozen solid. Immediately after, the energy around his body was also frozen. Then, the coldness immediately penetrated into his body. He was entirely frozen, from head to toe. His body was covered with a layer of ice. He was buried in ice.

Then, her soft hand slapped against his face.

“BOOM!”

The old man’s body flew through the air and crashed against the wall of the palace. The ice enveloping his body was smashed into pieces. After that, a huge amount of blood gushed from his mouth.

He had a dull and humiliated look in his eyes. The old man had never thought that he would get so badly beaten, especially by a young woman.

The old man looked at the crowd below. The Chi Xie troops were, massacring the people of the Zi Government, it was a pure one sided massacre.

“The Zi Government is defeated, this is a crushing defeat.”

The old man felt hopeless and desperate. Because he said one lie and underestimated a small group of young people, the Zi Government was being annihilated and its people slaughtered.

The old man’s pride was being trampled.

“BOOM!”

A fist full of ice crashed into his body. Around Meng Qing’s body, there were icicles which contained deadly ice Qi. They were floating around her body. If it landed on the old man’s body, he would end up gravely injured.

The old man was blown away and crashed onto the wall of the palace once again. The old man looked absolutely hopeless.

“He hasn’t died! Lin Feng hasn’t died! He has entered into the

forbidden area.”

The old man shouted.

When Meng Qing heard that, her body stopped shaking. Immediately after, she looked at the crowd down the corridor and said coldly: “Speak.”

That one word was clear to the crowd and was their only salvation. If they didn’t speak the truth, they would all be massacred.

“He hasn’t died! He has entered into the forbidden area!”

Everybody started to shout one after the other, agreeing with the old man. Meng Qing, whose heart was broken, suddenly felt relieved. She took a deep breath.

“Can you let me off now?” asked the old man who was begging Meng Qing not to kill him. He was terrified of this young woman.

“It’s too late.” said Meng Qing while shaking her head. Cold Qi surrounded the old man’s body. He was shaking from head to toe. Meng Qing’s silhouette vanished and her fist immediately crashed onto the old man’s body. It released an endless amount of cold energy. It had the power to freeze everything, including lives.

The old man’s body was entirely frozen, his eyes were closed and immediately after, he fell from the air, silently and breathless.

The old man of the Zi Government, a strong cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer, had been killed.

At the same time, the battle within the corridor was already finished. The Zi Government members that had gathered inside the corridor were annihilated.

The crowd was blankly gazing into the distance and remained silent. The Zi Government enjoyed an influential reputation in the entire region and in a single day, it had been annihilated, because they made enemies of one person: Lin Feng.

## Chapter 234: The Strong Cultivator!

---

Meng Qing landed back onto the ground. She looked imposing and domineering. Cold Qi was surrounding her body. That cold Qi transformed into a brilliant aura. Meng Qing's body was covered by a layer of ice, all the people who were near her had the impression that they were going to freeze if they stayed close, so they all moved back. Even the Chi Xie troops were moving away.

“She's so cold.” thought many people when they saw her. Only Lin Feng could give birth to feelings from such a cold heart like that of Meng Qing.

Meng Qing moved in front of the statue and said coldly: “Is this the entrance to the forbidden area?”

“Indeed, this is the entrance of the forbidden area of the Zi Government.” said some people from the crowd while nodding. Nobody dared speak without being spoken to, they were afraid of offending Meng Qing and the others. If they got angry again, the remaining crowd would suffer the same fate as the people of the Zi Government.

Meng Qing was extremely strong, she easily killed the old man so she could kill them even more easily.

Meng Qing was looking at the entrance of the forbidden area. She slightly raised her hand. She condensed some cold Qi onto the palm of her hand, immediately after, she rushed forward and insanely bombarded the door with the palm of her hand.



“BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!”

The ground was unceasingly shaking and the sound was echoing through the atmosphere. The door of the forbidden area, was still closed. The statue hadn't moved at all either.

“BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!”

Meng Qing was unceasingly bombarding the entrance of the forbidden area. She looked as cold as before. Her facial expression hadn't changed at all.

Finally, after having tried many times, Meng Qing gave up. She turned around and asked the crowd: “How do I open that door?”

“It requires the blood of a direct descendant from the Zi Government. You need to put some blood in the hole of the statue and then it will open, but now the Zi Government is already.....” said a person in the crowd. Immediately after, that person looked at the corpses on the ground. The direct descendants of the Zi Government had all been killed. There wasn't a single member left alive.

“Blood.”

Meng Qing looked pensive. She looked at the old man, waved her hand and ice penetrated into the old man's corpse. Frozen blood was removed from the corpse.

Meng Qing waved her hand again and then the frozen blood moved into the hole of the statue. The blood melted in a flash, but as before, nothing happened.

Meng Qing looked pensive. She looked at the person who had just spoken. That person suddenly sensed that his body had gotten very rigid. That beautiful woman, who looked like a celestial being could really make other people freeze with only a glance. Common people like them couldn't touch her, they could only enjoy looking at her from a distance.

“Maybe the door will not open itself again. Otherwise, after Lin Feng went inside; the grand-uncle of the Zi Government would have chased him inside, he wouldn't have waited outside.” explained the person in the crowd and continued: “Besides, all the people of the Zi Government went into the forbidden area previously, nothing happened to them, they came back without outside assistance, maybe they control it from inside.”

“How much time did the people of the Zi Government spend inside?” asked Meng Qing. When she heard that nothing happened to the people who went inside previously, she suddenly felt even more relieved. Nothing bad would happen to Lin Feng, that was the most important thing.

“I'm not sure about that. Some months, some spent years.”

“Months, years....” whispered Meng Qing. She turned around and said to the Chi Xie troops: “If you do not want to wait, you can

leave.”

All of them remained silent and motionless. None of them moved even an inch. They looked like statues.

The rest of the crowd was astonished yet again, who was Lin Feng really for so many people to be willing to wait months and possibly even years without complaining?

.....

In the middle of the forbidden area, Lin Feng didn't know what was happening outside. He was standing motionless while looking at the statue.

Lin Feng obviously understood that statue, like the snake was actually a body. That person was dead, he wasn't breathing and his body hadn't decomposed, therefore, he just looked like a statue.

Duan Xin Ye was standing behind Lin Feng and was looking at the man, which seemed to be reigning over the palace.

At that moment, Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng's minds were moved into another world. High in the sky, there was a silhouette riding a ferocious beast, that beast was a hundred meter long purple dragon. It was breathing out purple Qi and its breath caused the clouds to dissolve. It looked extremely powerful.

In the sky, there was an endless storm of lightning. This

lightning was purple and contained deadly Qi. The purple light was revolving around the body of the person and the dragon.

That person looked like a celestial being and was extremely majestic.

He was travelling through the clouds, he was an extremely strong cultivator. He looked like he was dominating the entire world beneath his feet. He didn't say any superfluous words. He was just bathing in the clouds.

When Lin Feng became aware of what was going on in his mind, his heart started pounding extremely violently. It seemed like the statue like man, a moment ago, opened its eyes and invaded their minds to show them these images.

He was a really strong cultivator. At that moment, Lin Feng didn't count as a strong cultivator. On the path of cultivation, he still had a lot of work to do.

At that moment, the strong cultivator in the sky turned around. Lin Feng's body started shaking. He only had the impression that two eyes were staring through his soul.

“Finally, I've always been waiting for someone to come into my world.” said a majestic voice. Lin Feng's heart was violently pounding. Finally, there was someone.....

He was still conscious, he wasn't dead...

“No need to act so strange. The soul is one of the most mysterious things in our world. Even if the flesh and muscles die, the soul can remain. Even though my body died a long time ago, my soul remained because I was extremely strong. My consciousness has been alive all this time but only until today, after that, I will disappear.”

Flesh and bones died but the soul hadn't.

Lin Feng was surprised and was wondering what cultivation level this person had.

Besides, when listening to the man's voice, Lin Feng had the impression of a lonely hero who would no longer see his glorious days. He was doomed to eternally disappear.

“Since the first time when Zi Qian, came here, I established one rule for all his following generations. Only people who are in love can come to me and receive my blessings. Zi Qian has always stuck to that rule and allowed married couples to come to me, but today, I don't know why, you are not descendants of the Zi Government. Maybe you meeting me was fate. You came at the moment when the strength of my spirit was about to disappear. Besides, you both have the power of a blood spirit. Young man, you are truly talented.”

These words resonated in Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye's minds. Lin Feng's heart stopped for a second. They both had the strength of a blood spirit?!

Duan Xin Ye had the blood spirit, Lin Feng obviously knew that.

But Lin Feng, also had the strength of a blood spirit?

“My snake spirit...” Lin Feng was shivering. Maybe the spirit, which caused everyone to call him a piece of trash, was actually a blood spirit.

But Lin Feng’s father didn’t have a blood spirit. In the entire Lin clan, there wasn’t a single person who had the snake spirit either. There was only one explanation, Lin Feng had never seen his mother, she was certainly the one who possessed the same spirit.

“Young girl, I don’t have much time left, you are weaker than him, I can grant you some more power but you will have to understand it. If you accept, just nod, that’ll be enough for me.” said the voice to Duan Xin Ye.

Lin Feng didn’t know how Duan Xin Ye was going to react but immediately after he heard the voice say: “Very good, I will also grant you with some of my knowledge. Do your best to understand it.”

When he finished talking, Duan Xin Ye felt her body shake intensely. The images in her brain disappeared, an amazing strength penetrated into her brain which made her faint.

The strong cultivator looked at Lin Feng and smiled warmly.

“The last time a descendent of the Zi Government came in here, I explained to him that I wanted him to send me as many people at once because this would be the last time for me. I was hoping to meet a real genius and grant him with everything that I possess. Even though there aren’t many people, you are enough. Even though your cultivation level is low, your soul is extremely powerful. You are much stronger than those who have the same cultivation level as you. You are the most appropriate person to choose.”

Lin Feng was only seventeen and had already broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer but in the eyes of the man, Lin Feng’s cultivation level was low. There were many cultivation geniuses in the vast and boundless continent. What drew his attention was Lin Feng’s soul.

## Chapter 235: The Surplus Souls

---

“The power of my soul...” thought Lin Feng. For Lin Feng, the soul was an abstract concept, it was unfathomable.

Lin Feng wasn't able to understand such concepts, his cultivation level was too low.

“Maybe you still don't understand clearly what the soul is. I will explain to you using simple concepts. In fact, the spirit of a cultivator is a part of his soul. Those who have a powerful soul can make their spirit stronger and carry out much stronger attacks.”

“When a cultivator practices cultivation and becomes stronger, his soul actually becomes stronger as well. The spirit thus becomes stronger too. For example, a cultivator who has a sword spirit, when he is still weak, his sword spirit is of little use. It only enables him to understand sword skills slightly better than other people but because his cultivation level is low, his soul is also weak and doesn't give him any particular sword ability. In such circumstances, the cultivator cannot be called a sword master. A strong and authentic sword master doesn't need a sword, his spirit is his sword. Besides, they can use the sword within their spirit as they wish. The more they use it, the more they understand the mysteries of the sword and it becomes faster and faster.”

The strong cultivator knew that he didn't have much time left so he was explaining things clearly to Lin Feng to help him understand various aspects of cultivation.



“There are some people who have a dual spirit, those people are considered as geniuses by many people but in fact, if their two spirits are ordinary ones, it is not of much use, it’s not really incredible. Such people are even weaker than someone who has only one extremely strong spirit. However, those who have a dual spirit are usually regarded as geniuses because they have been granted a powerful soul. Their soul must be very strong to host dual spirits, stronger than that of other people. The strength of their dual spirits also increases their power of understanding. It is also easier for them to solve unfathomable problems. There also an endless amount of other advantages.”

“In short, you have to understand that the soul is what shapes your future. Someone with a powerful soul can easily kill people at the same cultivation level as them. For instance, I gave a skill to the members of the Zi Government, Purple Annihilation, that skill uses the power of their soul too control the spirit, enabling them to control and shape the Qi itself. Such an attack is very difficult to block.”

“So that’s how it is.” The purple annihilation skill used the strength of their soul...

Zi Ying was actually not very strong but he had broken through to the ninth Ling Qi layer which was only one layer higher than Lin Feng. If Zi Ying could do it, Lin Feng could use it too, after all, the strong cultivator said that he had seen Lin Feng’s soul was extremely strong. He had also said that Lin Feng was much stronger than other people of the same cultivation level as him.

At that moment, the image in Lin Feng’s mind flickered, it

seemed to weaken but in a flash returned to normal.

“It seems like I don’t have much time left.” said the strong cultivator whose voice sounded disappointed. He immediately said to Lin Feng: “I don’t have much more to say. You should remember that a strong and powerful soul is what increases your cultivation speed. It can allow you to perfectly control your abilities and spirit. Besides, it can help you control external forces during a battle. Besides, a powerful soul can help you gain control over powerful weapons and profound pills.”

The strong cultivator had told Lin Feng about the numerous benefits which made Lin Feng a bit nervous, these were all the great things extremely strong cultivators could do.

“Please accept something from me. I would like to offer you some of my memories. I divided these memories into three parts, this makes them easier to understand. The first part is composed of the great things I achieved as well as the martial skills and agility techniques which I found to be useful. I don’t want them to die out with me, so I give them to you. At least, nobody will be able to say that I led a greedy life.”

“The second part of my memories is about energy, pills and weapons. They are all for you as well.”

“The third part of my memories is the simplest one but also the most important, it is about art of soul cultivation. This is something I acquired intentionally, which made me who I am today. The art of soul cultivation is a celestial art. It enabled me to enhance my practice and obtain a powerful soul. It is the power of

my soul which enabled me to stay conscious such a long time until now. Besides, I have never given my soul cultivation to anyone before, you must cherish it.”

The man’s voice was lower and lower. When he said his last word, the world illusion broke apart. Immediately after, three lights appeared and carried the memories into Lin Feng’s body, mind and soul.

“Boom!”

Lin Feng’s heart was violently pounding. His body felt extremely painful as if his bones had been crushed. In a flash, he was sweating a cold sweat. All these memories penetrated into his body and soul, how could it not be painful?

Lin Feng had the impression that everything was spinning. All the memories penetrating into his mind, he had the impression that his head was going to explode.

Even though that strong cultivator had just transmitted three separate groups of memories into Lin Feng’s mind, they were extremely powerful and contained a lot of information.

Lin Feng had the impression his head was going to explode, immediately after that, just like Duan Xin Ye, he fainted and collapsed. They were both lying down on the ground unaware of the time passing.

.....

Outside of the forbidden area, the crowd was patiently waiting. A day had already passed since Meng Qing had annihilated the Zi Government. Meng Qing was always standing in front of the door of the forbidden area. Her clothes were snowy white and fluttering in the wind but her body remained motionless just like the goddess of ice.

None of those who were wearing bronze masks had moved either. They were calmly sitting cross-legged at the front of the crowd.

The crowd hadn't left. Some of them wanted to leave but they didn't dare. They had mixed feelings and didn't really know why they were staying, was it out of fear or out of curiosity. The entire crowd was calmly looking at the unmoving silhouette which looked like a beautiful statue.

They had also become very curious and wanted to know more about Lin Feng. They wanted to know who he really was.

They also wanted to know more about Meng Qing.

A layer of ice was covering Meng Qing's body. It was extremely cold. It seemed like that ice wanted to expand and freeze everything but that Meng Qing was controlling it, so it didn't. That ice had the form of a white fog. Only a little bit of that fog was enough to freeze an entire person.

Nobody knew what it was and nobody knew either that Meng Qing's body, at that moment, was being damaged by that incredible coldness. She was unable to control the ice Qi.

When she had arrived at the Zi Government and that the old man said that he had killed Lin Feng, an incredible quantity of ice Qi had condensed inside her body. That Qi was the same as what was surrounding her body. When she heard the old man, Meng Qing had forgotten everything, including to control the ice Qi condensed in her body. The only thing she had in her mind was to kill using the ice Qi. There were consequences though, from all that cold Qi which had burst out from her body. She had become unable to control it. She could only suffer in silence while nobody would ever know anything about it.

Lin Feng, who was still in the forbidden area, awoke. Duan Xin Ye awoke as well.

At that moment, they both had many new memories in their minds. Duan Xin Ye remembered a sword skill, a beautiful sword skill. That sword skill was meant for women. She also had an agility technique.

Lin Feng had a massive amount of new memories. His brain was filled with the three categories of memories. These memories contained a massive amount of information, Lin Feng was still absorbing all of the knowledge.

Fortunately, when the strong cultivator transmitted these memories to Lin Feng, he had already sorted them into three categories, that way, they weren't chaotic in Lin Feng's mind. He

wouldn't have been able to endure that. Everything was clear and organized.

After sitting there for a while, Lin Feng was finally able to absorb all these memories. He opened his eyes and felt calm.

“Cultivating the soul.” said Lin Feng to himself. It was a way to practice and make one's soul stronger and on top of that, it enabled one to develop a powerful soul.

The cultivation technique was called ‘Surplus Souls’, a cultivator could make his entire soul break into small pieces called surplus souls which made it very convenient to practice. A cultivator could develop one surplus soul which would make all his other souls become stronger as well. He could advance his training greatly this way.

When the surplus souls condensed back into a whole, they provided the cultivator with terrifying power. Besides, even if the soul was divided into many surplus souls, a cultivator could still use as many of them as he wished, for example, if he had one million surplus souls, he could use all them at the same time, how terrifying would that be?

Breaking one's soul into a surplus soul was excruciatingly painful. The art of the Surplus Soul was extremely powerful but was also extremely brutal, which is why nobody would dare to think of it.

## Chapter 236: The Zun Qi layer

---

The cultivation method for Surplus Souls wasn't the only thing that affected Lin Feng's heart, all the other memories caused Lin Feng's heart to race.

He possessed all the memories of the strong cultivator and knew how strong this person was.

Zun Qi Layer. He was above the Tian Qi Layer.

With one fist, he could crush a mountain. One sword could carve out a river or a lake.

Lin Feng could finally understand the possibilities granted by the different cultivation levels. The Xuan Qi layer, like the Ling Qi layer, was divided into nine layers.

After the Xuan Qi layer, there was the Tian Qi layer.

After the Tian Qi layer, there was the Zun Qi Layer, the cultivators of the Zun Qi layer were seniors within the cultivation world. Lin Feng could barely defeat a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer, it was already very difficult. Lin Feng couldn't imagine how far he was from the Zun Qi layer.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at the breathless corpse. He sighed. A cultivator of the Zun Qi layer was in front of him, a little cultivator of the Ling Qi layer. Lin Feng was still a nobody. A

cultivator of the Zun Qi layer could kill him by breathing on him.

Cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, in Xue Yue and Mo Yue, were already considered as very strong cultivators. Concerning the Tian Qi layer, Lin Feng had never heard anything about it, he didn't even know if there were cultivators of the Tian Qi layer within Xue Yue or Mo Yue.

As far as cultivators of the Zun Qi layer were concerned, Lin Feng was certain that such a cultivator could destroy an entire country with a wave of their hand. Xue Yue certainly didn't have such cultivators.

Cultivators of the Zun Qi layer could extract the strength from their blood and transmit it to their offspring. They were able to create blood spirits and pass them on to their descendants. Everybody knew how incredibly strong blood spirits were.

Besides, at that moment, Lin Feng had seen one of the legendary cultivators and had received an incredible amount of knowledge from him. He had received his legendary memories, the memories of a godlike cultivator.

“That huge snake was surprisingly a Zun level dragon.”

Lin Feng was looking at the dragon. If it had been out in the world, it could have annihilated an entire country with one breath.

Its blood had turned into a lake which never lost its strength over



hundreds of years, besides, the blood kept its vitality and could penetrate into bodies, granting people the strength of a blood spirit.

Unfortunately, the purple lake had been completely absorbed by Lin Feng.

“Ancestor, I have received your legacy and inherited your memories, ancestor, you are now my teacher.”

Lin Feng looked at the remains of the strong cultivator and suddenly knelt down in front. Lin Feng’s heart was filled with respect and adoration. He performed the kowtow, which sealed teacher and student.

He had separated his memories into three parts and transmitted them to Lin Feng. He deserved Lin Feng’s obedience and respect.

If the strong cultivator had still been alive, Lin Feng would have wanted him as his teacher. Lin Feng could have returned to Xue Yue as a hero with such a profound teacher.

When Duan Xin Ye saw Lin Feng, she came next to him and started to respectfully kowtow in front of the statue as well. The strong cultivator had also transmitted thoughts to her, extremely powerful sword skills and powerful agility techniques. He had also become her teacher.

“Ancestor, the first part of the memories you transmitted to me, I

will always remember them. If, someday, I have the opportunity to meet some of your old friends, I will tell them about what happened to you.” said Lin Feng.

The first part of the memories from the strong cultivator contained his entire life and Lin Feng could also remember the strong cultivator’s friends. Even though these memories were a few hundred years old, cultivators of the Zun Qi layer could remain alive for a long time. Not dying for a few hundred years was a normal thing for them. Besides, the strong cultivator’s old friend had entered a deep and mysterious dimension. Lin Feng didn’t clearly understand what kind of dimension it was though.

Lin Feng stood up and sighed. Even though the cultivator of the Zun Qi layer was extremely strong, he had, all these years never forgotten about love. He only wanted to see couples in love with each other, because he was, himself, a very romantic person.

“Lin Feng, when are we leaving?” asked Duan Xin Ye in a low voice. They couldn’t stay indefinitely in the forbidden area, they would get bored to death.

Lin Feng looked pensive. The people of the Zi Government were waiting for him outside. If he went out, they would immediately ambush him.

He still was not confident in winning against a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer.

“Cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer can use pure Qi, that would be

too dangerous for me. My strength against his pure Qi, it's too difficult to win." thought Lin Feng, but he still had faith in his ability. He had managed to make a cross shaped wound on the old man's chest. He had almost killed him. At that moment, Lin Feng had absorbed the strength of the purple blood lake. It had penetrated into his flesh and bones. His snake spirit had completely absorbed the purple lake and had become much stronger. It had enabled him to obtain a new purple spirit.

Lin Feng was also convinced that even though he couldn't kill the old man, who had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, he definitely had the strength to engage in a battle against him. He just didn't know whether he would be the victor.

"Xin Ye, let's go and see if we can leave." said Lin Feng. She was, of course, not going to have any objections so she just nodded.

"Let's go."

Lin Feng said that and immediately headed back. It was getting darker and darker and the path was growing narrow. A short time after, they arrived in front of the entrance of the forbidden area.

"You stay behind me, I will check first." said Lin Feng as he moved forwards. He put his hand on the door of the forbidden area.

"BOOM!"

The door of the forbidden area slowly opened itself. People who were inside the forbidden area just had to touch the door once to open it.

Lin Feng was a bit nervous as he had unintentionally opened the door. He released some of his Qi. He groaned and in his hand, appeared an extremely sharp sword.

The door of the forbidden area was slowly opening itself, the atmosphere was suddenly extremely cold, the coldness was piercing to the bones.

How cold. Why is it so cold? The old man wouldn't have been able to release such an incredibly cold Qi.

But when Lin Feng realized what was happening outside, he was stupefied. The energy around his body also vanished without trace.

The door of the forbidden area had finally entirely opened itself. A beautiful face was in front of him. Surprisingly, it was Meng Qing and she was patiently waiting for him. It wasn't the old man.

Obviously, when Meng Qing saw Lin Feng, she was also astonished and surprised.

"Meng Qing." said Lin Feng while a huge smile appeared on his face.

But Meng Qing looked as cold as before, her facial expression

hadn't changed at all. She glanced at Lin Feng and then at Duan Xin Ye, who was coming out at that moment too.

When Meng Qing saw that Duan Xin Ye was wearing Lin Feng's clothes, she looked a bit surprised, but immediately after she adopted her cold and indifferent facial expression once again. She was absolutely expressionless.

When Duan Xin Ye saw Meng Qing, she was astonished and sighed. How beautiful! Surprisingly, there were such beautiful women in the world!

Not only was she very beautiful, but also very strong.

Duan Xin Ye was extremely self-confident when it came to her beauty. She had never seen anyone more beautiful than her before, but at that moment, she just saw a girl who was more beautiful than her and it seemed like she was close to Lin Feng.

"You're alright. That's the main thing. Let's go." said Meng Qing coldly. After that, she turned around and started walking away. Some ice Qi rose into the air which made Lin Feng frown.

That ice Qi was a problem, why was Meng Qing's body emitting such a cold Qi?

Lin Feng suddenly remembered that he had already seen such a Qi around Meng Qing's body and was a bit surprised. He then immediately shouted: "Meng Qing, wait!"

But it seemed like Meng Qing ignored Lin Feng. She continued walking as before. Her silhouette made her look very lonely from behind.

“Stop!”

Lin Feng walked out from the entrance of the forbidden area. The crowd was astonished, Lin Feng surprisingly dared talk to Meng Qing using such a tone.

Not did Meng Qing look like a celestial being but she was also extraordinarily cold.

“Come back to me!” shouted Lin Feng angrily. A light flashed through Meng Qing’s eyes, she didn’t look at Lin Feng. Immediately after, surprising everybody, Meng Qing slowly started walking back towards Lin Feng.

What was the nature of Lin Feng and Meng Qing’s relationship?

Why was such a strong female cultivator listening to Lin Feng?

“Xin Ye, please leave for a moment.” said Lin Feng while going back into the forbidden area. Duan Xin Ye was stupefied. A touching expression appeared in her eyes but she remained silent. She just nodded and walked out of the forbidden area and glanced at Meng Qing.

At that moment, she felt an incredible coldness. She started shaking and her heart started pounding. How could it be that cold around the beautiful girl's body? She looked like she was going to freeze on the spot.

“Come in.” said Lin Feng to Meng Qing, who had arrived at the entrance door of the forbidden area. She remained silent and entered.

The door of the forbidden area closed itself behind her. Lin Feng and Meng Qing's silhouettes disappeared. The crowd was just looking at that huge door. They were all extremely curious, what were they doing inside?

## Chapter 237: Warmth in the Forbidden Area

---

In the forbidden area, Lin Feng grabbed Meng Qing's hand. Suddenly, a violently cold energy spread through his hand. Right after that, Lin Feng's forearm was covered by a layer of ice. It was spreading all over his body.

“How cold.”

Lin Feng was stupefied. At that moment, Meng Qing's body was extremely cold. Even with his cultivation level, Lin Feng had the impression that he was going to freeze on the spot.

He turned around and looked at Meng Qing. He still sounded angry and said: “What's wrong with you?”

“Nothing.” said Meng Qing while slightly shaking her head. She was surprised.

“I'm not only talking about the fact that you came to look for me with a layer of ice damaging your body, but also, when you just walked away. Why did you walk away?”

Lin Feng looked unhappy and he knew how powerful that ice was. Last time, he had already seen Meng Qing's pain. That time, the ice wasn't any weaker, Meng Qing perfectly knew that Lin Feng had a solution for the ice. Surprisingly, she turned around and walked away from him, how could Lin Feng not get angry?



Meng Qing raised her head and looked at Lin Feng. She looked surprised. But immediately after, she lowered her head again like a little girl who was being scolded, she didn't dare look at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng started shaking when he saw that Meng Qing remained uncommunicative. He felt like he had to say something.

“I will help you take away that ice Qi.”

While speaking, Lin Feng's body shook and a dragon chant spread through the atmosphere. It made the entire atmosphere vibrate. Lin Feng's snake spirit appeared. It had six heads and was huge and majestic. Its eyes were looking directly at Meng Qing.

When Meng Qing saw the snake spirit, she was surprised, the last time she had seen it, it didn't have six heads and wasn't so gigantic. At that moment, it was huge and majestic. What had happened to Lin Feng's spirit was a miracle.

“It seems like I was right.” thought Meng Qing. She was even more certain that she had guessed right. Lin Feng's snake spirit was actually a dragon.

The six heads of the snake were singing the chant of dragons. At that moment, the ice around Meng Qing's body turned into a white cloud and the snake started to swallow it.

At that moment, Lin Feng's spirit, which was floating from his back, looked like six different snakes constantly moving. It looked

extremely powerful.

“In the future, do not ignore what I say.” said Lin Feng. Meng Qing was, as before, silent.

Meng Qing slightly nodded and lowered her head. The ice Qi around her body was gradually getting very weak.

When Lin Feng saw Meng Qing’s facial expression, his heart felt a bit painful, he didn’t know how to talk to this girl.

Since they had left the Black Wind Mountain, Meng Qing had always been with him. He was the only person close to her. Since Lin Feng had left Meng Qing and travelled over a huge distance, a long time had already elapsed. It was very difficult for Meng Qing to be separated from him. Surprisingly, she had even chased him to the Mo Yue country. Furiously, she had slaughtered the people of the Zi Government. In such a short time, she had gone through a lot of hardships.

Besides, after such a difficult time, she had seen that Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye were together and Duan Xin Ye was wearing Lin Feng’s clothes, how could she be happy after seeing that? Even though she didn’t show her emotions, Lin Feng, who had broken through to the earth fusion dimension, could now sense the emotions which she was trying to hide. He had noticed because of her movements when she turned to leave. Her body was slightly shaking and she was continuously blinking as if she was close to tears.

Silly girl, she actually cared but always remained cold.

All of this caused compassion to fill Lin Feng's heart, then, he approached Meng Qing which made her start shaking.

It wasn't because of the cold Qi that she was shaking, but because Lin Feng was moving closer to her. She was shaking and she felt like waves were crashing in her heart. Suddenly, she started feeling nervous.

Immediately after, she felt that her body was being pulled, she could feel two arms wrap around her body. It was a warm embrace which immediately removed the cold from her body. She suddenly felt warmth invade her heart.

When she realized what was happening, her eyes, which normally never revealed emotions, moved. She looked surprised.

"Silly girl, you should know that if you suffer, I will suffer too." said Lin Feng softly. His voice was warm and sincere. His words came from the bottom of his heart.

When Lin Feng saw that Meng Qing's body was being damaged by the ice Qi and she was silently suffering, his heart felt a tremendous pain. It was the first time, whether it was in his previous or current life, that Lin Feng showed his love for a woman, his feelings towards Meng Qing were pure and sincere.

When Meng Qing heard these soft and warm words, she

shivered. Immediately after, something that had never happened, happened, she smiled. It was a charmingly soft and sweet smile.

She moved a little and suddenly, she rested her head on Lin Feng's shoulder, which made her feel calm and relaxed.

Meng Qing's hands were behind Lin Feng's back but was being held mid air. It seemed like she didn't know what to do with her hands, but finally, her little hands slowly moved towards Lin Feng and she then delicately embraced him.

When Lin Feng sensed her delicate hands on his back, he giggled foolishly. He also put some more pressure into his embrace and used one hand to stroke Meng Qing's hair from her face.

So, that's how it felt to be in love..... it was truly sweet, it was a very warm feeling from deep within the heart.

Meng Qing's body calmly leaned against Lin Feng's body with her head on his shoulder. Lin Feng looked at Meng Qing. She was smiling, but in her beautiful eyes, surprisingly, there were tears which slowly flowed down her cheeks onto the ground. She was crying and emitting small sobs. Her eyes grew blurry.

Meng Qing had been extremely worried about Lin Feng while they were apart. She had not stopped looking for him, for even a moment.

Finally, she found him. She had been riding at full speed to the

Golden Zi Mountain without rest. Then, when she arrived, she was told that Lin Feng was dead.

When she heard that Lin Feng was dead, she had felt hopelessness invade her heart. Her heart had felt so painful. She felt like a piece of her had died. She had just had one thought, kill. Kill the old man of the Zi Government and kill everyone who shared his bloodline.

A man in love could accomplish great things and dye his sword red on the battlefield for a woman. A woman in love could also accomplish great things, she would freeze heaven and earth if it stood between her love.

The most important thing was that Lin Feng was still alive, but then Meng Qing had seen that he was with another girl, she believed that he no longer had a place for her.

She was desperate. She hadn't thought about anything else but running away. A horrible feeling invaded her heart, she had never experienced such a terrible feeling.

Since Lin Feng and Meng Qing had left the Black Wind Mountain, only a short time had elapsed, less than a year, but during that short time, they had experienced a lot of things together. In Meng Qing's memories, there was a sinister forest filled with ferocious beasts and from the outside world, all her memories included Lin Feng. Lin Feng was already an indispensable part of her life.

The horrible feeling hadn't lasted for too long, Lin Feng had

stopped her. He had made her come into the forbidden area, and now they were locked in an embrace. At that moment, Meng Qing understood how cold she was before that, it seemed like the coldness in her heart had transformed into warmth. It was a wonderful feeling.

The two of them seemed to be locked in each other's embrace. They softly embraced for a long time. The ice Qi had already dispersed and Lin Feng's spirit had vanished, but they were still standing there, embracing each other.

After a long time, Meng Qing finally moved, Lin Feng let go of her and looked at her beautiful face while smiling.

However, it seemed like Meng Qing didn't care about giving him face, she turned around and coldly walked towards the exit.

Lin Feng was stupefied. He scratched his head, he was startled, and then he immediately chased her.

## Chapter 238: Ruthless

---

The door of the forbidden area slowly opened itself. The crowd looked extremely curious as Lin Feng and Meng Qing came out.

Lin Feng and Meng Qing were actually holding hands. Meng Qing looked as cold and detached as before but was allowing Lin Feng to hold her hand and it looked very natural. They looked calm and serene. Besides, the ice around Meng Qing's body had completely disappeared.

“What a nice couple.” thought the people in the crowd. At that moment, they all understood the nature of Lin Feng and Meng Qing's relationship. They understood why Meng Qing had gotten so furious when the old man said that he killed Lin Feng which is why she killed the old man.

Meng Qing and Duan Xin Ye were the same, they both loved Lin Feng. He was frivolous, natural and unrestrained.

Meng Qing and Lin Feng were a couple just like Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye, the crowd had the impression that they also looked like a perfect couple. They were all outstanding.

The crowd was well aware of Lin Feng's natural talent. They understood even more clearly how strong Meng Qing was. Thus, they thought that Lin Feng and Meng Qing was an even better couple and it was more appropriate for them to be together. It seemed like they were soul mates. Only someone as gifted as Lin Feng could be with such an incredible girl.

Zi Yi and Zi Ling were blankly staring at Lin Feng. Zi Yi lowered her head. She felt so inferior. She was a withered willow and Meng Qing was an incredibly beautiful woman who had even broken through to the Xuan Qi layer... and that girl loved Lin Feng. Lin Feng only had to speak and she obeyed his every word. Zi Yi used to think that Lin Feng would be interested in her, she felt ridiculous at that moment.

She was nothing in comparison with Meng Qing and Duan Xin Ye. She was much too ugly in comparison with these two girls.

“I would have never thought that Lin Feng was this powerful, not only is he powerful with incredible natural talent but two beautiful girls like him” whispered Zi Ling. She envied these people.

However, when Duan Xin Ye saw them holding hands, bitter feelings invaded her heart.

That was the first time that she was competing with another woman. She would have never thought that such a thing could even happen. Nonetheless, she had no choice but to face the facts. Meng Qing was a pure woman, besides, she was extremely beautiful. Such a girl was rare.

Meng Qing also liked Lin Feng and on top of that, Lin Feng was also interested in her.

When Lin Feng saw Duan Xin Ye, he smiled wryly. He felt lost. In his previous life, Lin Feng was always single, in this world, there



were so many outstanding girls who were interested in him.

“Prepare two horses for me.” said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. Immediately, someone obeyed his order and prepared two Chi Xie horses.

“Get on a horse, we should go back.” said Lin Feng to Duan Xin Ye. She slightly nodded. She had been away for such a long time. The imperial family was probably worried about her.

When Duan Xin Ye arrived next to her horse, she immediately jumped onto its back. Even though she was a delicate woman, she was trained in riding.

“Meng Qing, let’s get on a horse too.” said Lin Feng to Meng Qing who slightly nodded. She jumped up in the air and landed on the other horse.

When she landed, Lin Feng jumped up as well and landed on Meng Qing’s horse right behind her. He put his arms around her waist and grabbed the reins. Meng Qing shivered, “this guy.....”

“Let’s go.” said Lin Feng while urging the horse. The horses neighed and they left at full speed. Because the horse was galloping at full speed, Meng Qing’s body was inclining backwards and leaning against Lin Feng’s chest. Two people on one horse were galloping through the mountains.

“Protect the princess!” said Lin Feng to the Celestial Sword unit

as an order. She was immediately surrounded by guards.

“Princess.” the crowd was looking at the people gradually leaving. They felt like they were suffocating, that Duan Xin Ye was surprisingly a real princess, the princess of Xue Yue.

Who was Lin Feng? Surprisingly, the Chi Xie troops listened to him and then the princess and Meng Qing liked him...

On an ancient road, the Chi Xie horses were galloping at full speed and a cloud of dust was surrounding them.

On a horse, there were two silhouettes pressed tightly together. There was a beautiful girl who looked like a celestial being and the other was a handsome young man who looked frivolous.

Their hair fluttered in the wind as they rode.

Fine horses, beautiful people, a vast ancient road, a young man and woman... the scene looked picturesque just like a painting.

Meng Qing was calmly leaning against Lin Feng's chest. They weren't speaking. They were just enjoying the tranquility and serenity of the moment. It truly felt like a dream.

Even if the ancient had no end, it would be wonderful to stay like this.

As Lin Feng approached the Duan Ren Border, he was using his earth fusion and his senses were sharp and acute. He could feel that someone was hiding in the mountains and staring at him.

He slowly stopped the horse, looked towards the Duan Ren Border and shouted: “Lin Feng, under the Celestial Sword Chi Xie battalion.”

The Duan Ren Border was completely silent. There no voice or sound. The entire mountain range was drowned in absolute silence but Lin Feng knew that the situation was dangerous.

“Chi Xie troops, move towards the Duan Ren Border!” shouted Lin Feng.

Lin Feng didn’t know who was in Duan Ren Border. Immediately after, the Chi Xie troops galloped forwards.

A short moment after, Lin Feng frowned, he heard some whistling sounds in the air and then saw many arrows flying through the air, moving straight towards him.

He raised his hand, sword light spread in the air and the arrows which were moving towards him all broke. The Chi Xie horse was moving forwards again.

However, the sound of the arrows didn’t stop. It turned into a rain of arrows which landed in front of him as if they were trying to prevent him from moving further.

“Meng Qing, kill them” said Lin Feng sounding cold and expressionless, he had only just arrived and some people were already unscrupulously attacking him. They wanted to kill him, that wasn’t an illusion.

When Lin Feng finished talking, he jumped into the air. His body was floating in the sky above the valley as he rushed towards the cliffs.

Meng Qing also jumped up in the air and like a celestial being, she moved towards the Duan Ren Border as well.

In a flash, Lin Feng arrived on a gigantic stone, there were some troops continuing to shoot arrows but the moment when they saw Lin Feng, their hands paused for a second and they stopped firing arrows.

“As expected, these are Xue Yue soldiers.”

When Lin Feng saw the armor the enemies were wearing, a cold and indifferent expression appeared on his face. Meng Qing had already told Lin Feng about the battle. Many people had been injured and had died but finally because they were in Xue Yue and cut off from reinforcements, the Mo Yue troops retreated. The Duan Ren Border had remained under the control of Xue Yue.

At that moment, these soldiers were shooting at Lin Feng since he had arrived in the Duan Ren Border. They wanted to kill him.

“Who are you? Whose orders do you obey?” asked Lin Feng coldly and detached. Cold Qi was surrounding his body. The soldier remained silent and released an arrow straight towards Lin Feng.

“Die.” said Lin Feng coldly. He raised his hand and a cold brilliance illuminated the atmosphere and pierced the soldier. The soldier was astonished and slowly fell dead onto the ground.

After killing that soldier, Lin Feng continued. He used the earth fusion and could see every single person who was hiding in the mountains. None of them could escape from his senses.

At that moment, Lin Feng had appeared in front of another soldier of Xue Yue and asked: “Whose orders are you obeying?”

The soldier remained silent.

“Die.” said Lin Feng heartlessly. He raised his hand again, in a flash, another one had been killed by Lin Feng.

Lin Feng didn't care for their silence. The Duan Ren Border was huge, there would probably be one person who would speak.

Lin Feng didn't stop moving. The Duan Ren Border was turning into a river of blood. Lin Feng wasn't the only one massacring people at that moment, Meng Qing was doing the same. If Lin Feng told her to kill, she killed.

Lin Feng forgot that he was in a territory of the Xue Yue country. Even though this was the border defense against Mo Xue. He didn't stop killing.

After having gone through war, he had become much stronger and his heart was now forged in battle. If anyone wanted to kill him, Lin Feng would not show mercy.

He had fought for Xue Yue but what had Xue Yue ever done for him? What had they done for Liu Cang Lan?

The princess had been kidnapped, the troops had fought each other, the Mo Yue troops had come in to massacre them, and hundreds of thousands of troops had been massacred. There was a conspiracy to kill him, if Xue Yue didn't care about him, did Lin Feng need to care about Xue Yue?

Lin Feng was an extraordinary person and he felt no sense of belonging towards the Xue Yue country. If, Xue Yue wanted to kill him, he would raise his sword against Xue Yue.

# Chapter 239: The Purple Dragon Spirit

---

During an undetermined period of time, blood kept flowing from the mountains of the Duan Ren Border. It looked like there were blood lakes running through the mountains.

Lin Feng and Meng Qing returned onto the main road. Cold Qi surrounded their bodies.

They had killed all the soldiers who were hiding in the mountain. Back then, Liu Cang Lan had been in Duan Ren City protecting the valley. Lin Feng would have never thought that one day, he would personally use his sword in the Duan Ren Border to kill Xue Yue soldiers.

The Celestial Sword battalion had arrived in the valley of the Duan Ren Border. There were many corpses in front of them. They were all wearing the armor of Xue Yue.

“The road was being blocked, we killed them all.” said Lin Feng to the Chi Xie unit sounding cold and detached. He had noticed that they were surprised by the scene.

“Now, come with me, let’s head out at our maximum speed.”

Then Lin Feng and Meng Qing rushed through the air as their horse moved at an incredible speed.

The people behind them remained silent and started galloping,

closely following Lin Feng.

After the Duan Ren Border, there was Duan Ren City. At that moment, Duan Ren City looked apocalyptic. There was only ash filling the air. The entire city was destroyed by the fire.

Above the gigantic city gate, there were some Xue Yue soldiers and they opened the gate.

Lin Feng hadn't said anything. He had immediately moved towards the city gate and entered the city. Nobody tried to stop him either.

The Chi Xie unit galloped towards the city but after they entered the city, the gate started closing itself.

In front of Lin Feng, there were some soldiers who were slowly moving towards him. A sharp and majestic Qi was being released from their bodies. They were all on horses while staring at Lin Feng. It seemed like they had been waiting for Lin Feng to come back.

From their horsebacks, they grabbed their bows and raised them into the air. Lin Feng and Meng Qing could feel a deadly Qi invading the atmosphere and oppressing them.

“Stop, or we will shoot.” shouted an ice-cold voice.

But Lin Feng completely ignored them and continue to move



forward on his horse.

The one who had just shouted was surprised. He raised his hand with his bow, narrowed his eyes and a devilish ice-cold expression appeared on his face.

“Die!”

He lowered his hand, and pulled the bowstring. At that moment, an arrow whistled through the air moving straight towards Lin Feng and Meng Qing.

“Boom!”

The arrow hit the horse with a piercing blow, that arrow surprisingly had such brutal strength. Amongst these people, none of them were weak, they had all broken through to a high Ling Qi layer. They were all elite soldiers.

The Chi Xie horse collapsed, dead from the first arrow.

The first arrow wasn't intended for Lin Feng but for the horse.

After that first arrow, he put another one in his bow but this one was for Lin Feng. This one was supposed to kill Lin Feng.

Lin Feng and Meng Qing jumped into the air together and floated above the ground. They then immediately threw themselves at the

crowd ignoring the arrows.

“Freeze.” whispered Meng Qing in her snow-white clothes. Ice spread through the atmosphere, at that moment, all the arrows that were moving towards her immediately froze and emitted small cracking sounds. They were frozen in place.

Besides, Lin Feng was at Meng Qing’s side and a resplendent purple cloud emerged from his back. That purple cloud transformed into a silhouette. It was an insane hundred-meter-high silhouette. It was in the shape of the purple dragon.

That illusion surprisingly was the gigantic purple dragon. It was unceasingly flying higher and higher. It then looked at the crowd from above.

That terrifying dragon made the facial expressions of the Xue Yue soldiers change drastically. They were all looking at the purple dragon in the air. They started shaking and their hearts started pounding. Their hearts were being overcome with extreme fear.

That illusion was Lin Feng’s spirit after it had swallowed the entire purple lake filled with dragon blood. Even though Lin Feng’s spirit had, after that, swallowed Meng Qing’s ice Qi, his spirit still hadn’t changed. It was still, the extremely powerful purple spirit.

Concerning the monstrous dragon illusion, amusingly, it was extremely similar to the purple dragon image which the cultivator was riding. The purple liquid of the lake was the blood of the purple dragon. Lin Feng’s snake and the dragon from the

forbidden area were in perfect harmony: “Rooodaarr.....”

The gigantic dragon illusion roared and started to attack. An endless purple lake of blood gushed from the dragon’s mouth. Immediately after, the lake melted everything in its path like acid, including the arrows.

Blotting out the sky, the purple lake immediately moved to block the path of the retreating Xue Yue soldiers. Immediately after, endless fear invaded their hearts and faces. Their cold killing intent had already disappeared.

How could that be possible? How could Lin Feng have become so strong?

They received the information that Lin Feng had broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer. All of these cultivators had broken through to the seventh Ling Qi layer and were supposed to be able to kill Lin Feng. If Lin Feng came back alive, Duan Ren City was supposed to be the place where he would be buried, but Lin Feng had become so strong, everybody was dumbstruck.

Their facial expressions indicated that they regretted everything. Killing Lin Feng wasn’t a duty that they could fulfil.

The purple lake was rushing through the sky and blotted out the sun, it then immediately crashed down onto the Xue Yue soldiers. Immediately after, their bodies started to slowly melt as if they had come into contact with acid. In a flash, a hundred cultivators had all been melted into a puddle.

Melt... Being able to make things melt was definitely a monstrous ability. Originally, the blood and saliva of the dragon could melt even a powerful cultivator to nothing but bones, because Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye had inherited a blood spirit, only their clothes melted when coming into contact with the dragon blood. After that, the purple liquid penetrated into their bodies altering their original spirits. It had given them additional strength.

Besides, when Lin Feng's snake spirit drank all the liquid of the purple lake, it had given Lin Feng's spirit the same powers as the purple dragon.

When the Celestial Sword battalion saw Lin Feng, who looked like a god, they were absolutely dumbstruck. Their heartbeats accelerated.

Strong, Lin Feng had become much stronger. All of them had survived the war, they had gained lots of experience on the battlefield and had all become much stronger, but Lin Feng had become terrifying.

There were larger groups of soldiers riding their horses in their direction, coming to kill Lin Feng but, when they saw that sight, they had all stopped. They were looking at the dragon in the air and under Lin Feng's feet was a gigantic purple lake which seemed to be under his control, and it was moving straight towards them.

While the lake moved towards these soldiers, Lin Feng slowly turned around and looked at another large group rushing towards

him. They were obviously Xue Yue soldiers and Lin Feng knew that they were all here to kill him.

When they saw Lin Feng's expression, their hearts started to race. Coldness invaded their hearts which sent a shiver down their spines.

"We have received a mission to kill you, but you can leave." said one soldier to Lin Feng. Immediately after, they turned around to leave.

"If they want to kill, they kill, if they are too weak, they leave.... how ridiculous." said Lin Feng coldly. They had all received orders but since their lives were in danger, they disobeyed the orders and left, what kind of discipline was that?

"Meng Qing, sorry to bother you, please confiscate all these horses for us." said Lin Feng while turning to look at Meng Qing. Their horse was killed by an arrow. It was a bit inconvenient for him to attack because he always melted the people and their horses at the same time.

"Alright." said Meng Qing while nodding. She moved in the air and released some ice Qi making the hearts of these Xue Yue soldiers pound. How cold!

Apart from Lin Feng, there was another strong cultivator, a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer. In other words, even if Lin Feng wasn't this strong, they would all still die. Wanting to kill Lin Feng under such circumstances sounded like a joke.

They were all terrified. They had received orders and had to bear the consequences of their actions.

“Ice.”

Meng Qing raised her hand ice emerged. The crowd was shaking. Immediately after, the ice spread, it moved forward and spread through the atmosphere. Everybody was frozen like a statue. Immediately after, they collapsed from their horsebacks and died.

“Get on the horses, hurry.” said Lin Feng calmly. He recalled his spirit back into his body and ran, immediately after jumping on a horse. Meng Qing also jumped on the horse.

“Lin Feng, what’s going on?” asked Duan Xin Ye when she saw Lin Feng’s actions.

“Some people want us dead, they don’t want us going back to the Imperial City.” said Lin Feng while looking at Duan Xin Ye.

“What about me? Do they want to kill me too?”

“Yes.” said Lin Feng while nodding. Duan Xin Ye’s heart was pounding. They even wanted to kill the princess.

“Hundreds of thousands of soldiers have died, the princess disappeared, even though we won the war, in the end, they want to

sentence Liu Cang Lan to death, because even though we won the war, it was still a tragic victory. Besides, we haven't managed to protect the princess who was kidnapped by Mo Yue. Therefore, they will be able to sentence him to death. They also want to kill me, I cannot go back to the Imperial city. But if you appear in the Imperial City, they will be unable to sentence me to death."

When Duan Xin Ye heard Lin Feng's words, her heart started pounding and she felt very cold.

Because they wanted to sentence Liu Cang Lan to death, they also wanted to kill the princess, could it be as easy as that?

Or maybe that they just didn't only want to kill Liu Cang Lan, they had also sacrificed her. The princess perfectly understood who was at the origin of all of this.

What Duan Xin Ye didn't understand was why she was kidnapped. Besides, why did Xue Yue and Mo Yue seem to be working together? If it had really originated from the person she thought, why did they have to kidnap her? Why didn't they just kill her on the spot?

The person she was thinking about was her brother, the crown prince, Duan Wu Dao. He was extremely aggressive, brutal and obeyed no principles and lived with no morals.

Duan Wu Ya, the second prince, and her were very close but she wasn't close to the crown prince at all. Therefore, because she had disobeyed Duan Wu Dao, she had to die.

# Chapter 240: Encircling the Imperial City

---

Outside of the Imperial City, the scene looked like a seething cauldron of hatred. It was just as lively and crowded inside as before. At that moment, many people were moving towards the gate which separated the exterior and the interior of the Imperial City.

At that moment outside of the Imperial City, behind the moat surrounding the city. A thick and dense deadly Qi filled the atmosphere and enveloped the entire area.

The people and horses behind the river were all wearing the same armor. All the horses were Chi Xie horses.

They were surrounding the Imperial City.

At that moment, the troops had surprisingly encircled the Imperial City. There were several tens of thousands of soldiers. As far as the eyes could see, there were soldiers. It was a vast and boundless sea of soldiers who were all releasing an extremely strong Qi.

A group of people was approaching the Imperial City and saw this army of soldiers. All sorts of comments were spreading through the crowd.

“They are Chi Xie troops, I wouldn’t have thought that the strong armored cavalry would encircle the city but when facing the Imperial City of billions, a few tens of thousands is nothing, it’s a



mere joke. They will not be able to do anything.”

Some people noticed that the troops, who were surrounding the Imperial City, were all wearing red armor, this armor was the symbol of the border troops, the Chi Xie troops, Liu Cang Lan's troops.

“That is the impermanence of life... could it be that Liu Cang Lan the Divine Arrow will be executed in front of everybody.” said someone while sighing. The fact that the Xue Yue Country wanted to kill Liu Cang wasn't a secret anymore.

It was said that Liu Cang Lan hadn't been able to protect the country against the army of Mo Yue and that he also had a bad influence, creating chaos amongst the troops. It was also said that he had wanted to prevent Duan Tian Lang's troops from engaging the enemy and thus gave an opportunity for Mo Yue to strike and kill hundreds of thousands of troops. Besides, the princess had been kidnapped by Mo Yue and nobody knew if she was dead or alive, only Lin Feng rushed to save her.

However the truth was that Liu Cang Lan went with Lin Feng's plan, they massacred hundreds of thousands from the Mo Yue army by making them enter Duan Ren City and burning them. That was an excellent plan.

Lin Feng was considered to be dead. He travelled over a huge distance within the Mo Yue country, and had relied on his own strength to kill the people who had kidnapped the princess. At that moment, he and the princess were missing, they were probably dead, or possibly in a critical situation.

During that war, the nickname “The Divine Arrow” had lost its significance while Lin Feng had probably met his death. What a pity, he was a strong and powerful young man, he was probably already dead at that moment.

The crowd looked at the sky, the sunlight was dazzling to the eyes. There were a few more hours to wait before Liu Cang Lan’s execution.

At that moment, the Imperial City gate was firmly closed, nobody could enter the city, and they were all there because they wanted to witness Liu Cang Lan’s execution.

At that moment, the troops got agitated. Immediately after, the crowd saw them jump onto their horsebacks and grab the bows from their backs.

“It’s an armed rebellion. For Liu Cang Lan’s sake, the Chi Xie troops surprisingly want to attack the Imperial City.”

The crowd was astonished. Such a small number of troops wanted to attack the Imperial City. They would certainly die if those troops attacked. The guards of the Imperial City wouldn’t just watch without reacting. A few tens of thousands of soldiers attacking, that was just suicide, nothing more. It would lead to nothing good.

As expected, a high-ranking soldier saw these troops move and laughed coldly. That high-ranking soldier was called Meng Gu

Feng, he was an officer and had an illustrious reputation. He perfectly understood what he had to do when facing a rebellion. He could easily dispose of them, besides, he would be able to let his son distinguish himself in action and settle this problem himself.

On Meng Gu Feng's side, there was a young man. That young man was wearing armor. He looked majestic and domineering. He was extraordinarily handsome. If Lin Feng had been there, he would certainly have recognized him: Meng Chong. The one whose cultivation had been crippled by Lin Feng in the past, he was Meng Gu Feng's son.

“Meng Chong, I will let you give the order, what do you think?”

Meng Gu Feng was smiling which made Meng Chong happy. Meng Gu Feng was enabling his son to distinguish himself in action which would allow him to move up in rank much quicker. He could only be happy about this.

“Alright.” said Meng Chong while smiling. He then moved to the edge, still standing above the Imperial City gate and raised his hand. An incredible number of Xue Yue guards raised their bows ready to shoot at the army outside.

While standing there, Meng Chong felt powerful, he could decide everything and even could even wipe out a small army with a single command.

“Lin Feng, what a pity that you are already dead, otherwise I would order you to be killed.”

Meng Chong felt pride once again invade his heart. He felt truly powerful. Lin Feng had crippled his cultivation and humiliated him but at that moment, He had all the power, Meng Chong could order him to be killed.

He couldn't practice cultivation anymore but it didn't matter, he just had to raise his hand and let the army fight for him.

Deadly Qi spread above the gate of the Imperial City. The soldiers outside the city gate felt resigned to meet their end here. They clearly understood that, if they fought, they would die here.

"This battle is for nothing else but justice." shouted Ren Qing Kuang standing at the front of the troops while looking up at the people above the city gate. They had fought and lost troops for their country, Xue Yue, but how was Xue Yue treating them?

How was that fair?

"Justice, does it even exist?" shouted the troops furiously. The ground was shaking and their hearts were shaking along with it.

These people were going to sacrifice themselves for the sake of justice.

Meng Chong and his father, above the city gate, were smiling coldly.

“Justice is strength and influence is our justice. How could real justice exist in this world?” said Meng Chong while smiling evilly. After Lin Feng crippled Meng Chong’s cultivation, Meng Chong’s heart had grown even more evil.

“Brothers, this is our last battle, we are all here to fight together, officers and soldiers. We shall have no regrets!”

Ren Qing Kuang, on his horse, looked frivolous. At that moment, even though he was going to die, he stuck to his principles.

The sound of arrows entering bows filled the air and deadly energy spread through the atmosphere.

“Ready.”

Meng Chong, from the top of the city wall, raised his hand to inform the troops to aim. The evil smile on his face was getting even more exaggerated. Right after that, he slowly moved to hide himself from any of the fighting.

Ren Qing Kuang had also raised his hand outside the walls, a gentle breeze floated in the air making his hair flutter in the wind. At that moment, that frivolous man wasn’t wearing his helmet.

His lips were firm, his muscles were tense. Slowly, he just had to move his hand and the death bell would sound.

The sound of horses spread across the horizon but nobody paid

attention to the sound. The whole crowd was only looking at the armies inside and outside of the Imperial City.

“Stop!”

Ren Qing Kuang lowered his hand, the troops with were ready to fire their bows at any time.

The sound of galloping horses filled the air and the ground started to shake. The sound spread like waves across the armies. They were galloping at full speed towards the city. The sound led to everybody stopping what they were doing.

“Stop, officer, it’s me!” shouted Lin Feng. It looked like his horse was flying through the air. The entire army divided into two and cleared a path while looking at the silhouettes that had just arrived.

When Ren Qing Kuang heard this voice, he was stupefied. He narrowed his eyes, it was Lin Feng’s voice.

“Everybody, stop.” said Ren Qing Kuang. All the troops were stupefied. Why were they stopping their attack? Who was that?

Of course that Ren Qing Kuang wanted them to stop. If they attacked, they would be considered as armed rebels, and the guards on the city wall would have a reason to kill them.

But if they didn’t attack at all and that the Xue Yue troops

attacked them first, they would have a reason to strike back.

Initially, he was resigned to die but Lin Feng had arrived before he attacked the city. Lin Feng was thought to be dead and Liu Cang Lan was a criminal. Only Lin Feng could make the situation change at that moment.

Ren Qing Kuang turned around, looked at Lin Feng and the others in the distance, and smiled. His heart was beating very fast.

“Lin Feng.”

When the troops heard Ren Qing Kuang’s words, they were all stupefied. The Xue Yue Country had played a decisive role in making Lin Feng into a hero, Lin Feng was a true hero in their hearts. Lin Feng had obtained a lieutenant status with the Celestial Sword battalion for killing the black guards of Mo Yue. With his strength, he had managed to change the tide of the war.

At that moment, Lin Feng was appearing again.

“Lin Feng.”

On the city wall, Meng Chong also saw that silhouette. He suddenly looked hideous and evil.

## Chapter 241: The Orders

---

The sound of the galloping horses was approaching. On the top of the city gate, the troops didn't shoot their arrows and slowly put their bows down while looking at the silhouettes who were arriving.

"Ren Qing Kuang." shouted Lin Feng. He then jumped off the horse and glanced at the troops.

"Everybody, don't attack." said Lin Feng. He obviously understood that if they attacked, there would be no way back. If they attacked the Imperial City, they would be considered as rebels and would inevitably be executed.

Those who worked behind the curtains didn't care about the lives of all these soldiers, all they cared about were their own personal interests.

"Lin Feng, quickly! Liu Cang Lan doesn't have much time left!" said Ren Qing Kuang looking anxious. Lin Feng slightly nodded. He had precisely hurried because of that reason. He had been galloping all night rushing over to the Imperial City. He knew that he couldn't afford to be slow.

Lin Feng looked at the people on the top of the city wall and shouted: "Lin Feng is returning to the Imperial City, open the gate."

Lin Feng knew how Xue Yue wanted to dispose of him. On the



one hand, they wanted to kill him, but on the other hand, they needed him to die at the border without witnesses. At that moment, at the very periphery of the Imperial City, the whole crowd was watching the scene unfold. If they killed him, they would be forced to show their real intentions.

As expected, when the troops heard Lin Feng's name, they were all startled. They slowly lowered their bows which made Meng Chong furious. An ice-cold expression appeared on his face. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng...” whispered Meng Chong. He then said with a cold tone: “Lin Feng was kidnapped by Mo Yue, if he was here today, it is probably because he has become a rebel and is now working with them. He cannot enter the Imperial City. Besides, there are these rebels as well, surprisingly they dare to surround the Imperial City, getting ready to attack us with their arrows. We must kill them, get ready to attack!”

“Huh?” Lin Feng frowned. Attack? Rebels?

How shameless! Lin Feng wasn't the only one who was surprised, the troops on the top of the city gate were also surprised, including Meng Gu Feng, but orders had to be obeyed, thus the troops raised their bows again, getting ready to fire.

“Would you dare?” At that moment, Duan Xin Ye was also beside Lin Feng on a horse. The crowd was astonished.

It was the princess, Her Highness!

Meng Chong was also astonished, his lips were shaking.

Meng Chong used to hope he could marry the princess someday but then Lin Feng crippled his cultivation. He had become a piece of trash and would never be able to marry Duan Xin Ye.

Besides, he understood why the troops outside the city gate wanted to fight, when he thought about that, a hideous expression appeared on his face.

“Fire!” shouted Meng Chong while waving his hand. He looked extremely cruel.

When Meng Chong finished talking, Meng Gu Feng, who was behind Meng Chong, went pale.

“Don’t shoot!” shouted Meng Gu Feng furiously. Even though he wanted to kill Princess Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng, at that moment, they had already returned safely to the Imperial City, they couldn’t brazenly kill them anymore. That would cause a great deal of trouble.

If Meng Chong killed Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye, that would have made some people of the Imperial Family happy and some others unhappy.

Lin Feng wouldn’t be too much of an issue, but the Emperor’s daughter? Who would bear the responsibility for killing her?

These thoughts were logical and were common sense but Meng Chong's heart was filled with hatred and jealousy which is why he wanted to attack.

“Pshhh.... pshhhh....”

A few arrows whistled through the air. Lin Feng's facial expression was ice-cold. He jumped up in the air, his hand transformed into a sword and he immediately cut the arrows down.

“You want to kill the princess, how audacious, these rebels must die.” said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. He immediately rushed towards the city gate at incredible speed. At the same time, Ren Qing Kuang and Meng Qing were also rushing towards the city gate.

“Psshhhh!” Lin Feng's hand pierced through the atmosphere. Immediately those who had shot their arrows were killed. They hadn't even had time to react.

The soldiers who hadn't shot when they had heard Meng Gu Feng were shocked. Lin Feng and the others had easily landed on the gate tower.

“A moment ago, you're the one who gave the order to shoot, you wanted to kill the princess?” said Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone to Meng Chong. This guy again...

When Meng Chong saw Lin Feng's facial expression, he started shaking. He had thought that if he saw Lin Feng again, he would prestigiously be able to order the troops to kill him but at that moment, Lin Feng had easily appeared before him. One glance had been enough to destroy his enthusiasm. The only feeling left in his heart was dread.

He was really scared of Lin Feng, the last time in the Lovesick Forest, Lin Feng had been merciless and crippled his cultivation, not letting him escape.

He was slowly moving back, Lin Feng's eyes surprisingly sufficed to scare him into a retreat.

Meng Gu Feng took a step forwards and looked at the young man in front of him. It was the first time that he met Lin Feng but many people knew about Lin Feng. Meng Gu Feng obviously knew that Lin Feng had crippled his son's cultivation making him a piece of trash.

"Meng Chong didn't do it on purpose, he didn't know that the princess was there. I will personally make him apologize to the princess." Meng Gu Feng was protecting his son. He hated Lin Feng. He needed to restore peace and remove himself from this event.

"Unintentionally? He didn't know?" Lin Feng was smiling coldly: "A moment ago, the princess was still shouting from her horse back. Everybody saw that with their own eyes but Meng Chong

still gave the order to shoot, attempting to murder the princess. Meng Chong must die.”

“Meng Chong didn’t see the princess.” Meng Gu Feng’s cheeks were burning.

Lin Feng didn’t have time to talk nonsense, he moved forwards while releasing his killing intent. How could he not kill Meng Chong?

On the top of the gate, some silhouettes flickered, they all moved in front of Meng Chong. They only saw Lin Feng smile coldly who then said: “Meng Chong wants to kill the princess, he has been sentenced to death. Those who want to protect him are his accomplices and must die. I, Lin Feng, am the princess’ personal guard, my job is to protect her. I will kill anyone who threatens her life, no matter who it is.” said Lin Feng aggressively. He would kill anyone who attacked the princess, no matter what their status.

The crowd clearly heard what Lin Feng had said. What a frivolous young man! Anyone who would threaten the princess would be killed.

“Try if you dare!” said Meng Gu Feng whose face turned pale. No matter what Meng Chong did, he was his son, was within his territory ,and his control. Lin Feng was only the princess’ personal guard, how could he not get furious after being ignored?

“When I say that I will kill, I kill. No matter who is in my way.” said Lin Feng sounding extremely domineering. He then took a

step and an insane purple hurricane emerged in the atmosphere. A silhouette flickered and moved straight towards Lin Feng to attack him. Lin Feng just raised his hand at an incredible speed and his hand had already pierced through that person's heart.

The soldiers, when they saw that, started shaking in fear. Nobody dared to risk their lives in front of that purple hurricane. In a flash, purple tentacles appeared from the silhouette, its deadly strength started to move forward. Everybody was pushed back, including Meng Gu Feng. The purple cloud contained a corrosive power too. When people touched it, they felt like if they stayed in contact with it, they would melt.

Lin Feng's silhouette flickered and rushed towards Meng Chong. Lin Feng was as fast as lightning, therefore, nobody had time to react.

Lin Feng grabbed Meng Chong by the neck using only one hand and then directly moved to the edge of the city gate. Meng Chong's body was hanging over the edge, Lin Feng just had to let go and Meng Chong would fall to his death.

At that moment, Meng Chong's face looked deathly pale, there wasn't the slightest degree of colour in his face, only fear.

"Lin Feng, don't you dare!" Meng Gu Feng had also turned deathly pale and furiously shouted these words but he only saw that a smile had appeared on Lin Feng's face.

"Chi Xie troops, hear me!" shouted Lin Feng. At that moment,

the army outside in front of the gate of the Imperial City all said in unison: “Roger!”

Their voices spread through the atmosphere. At that moment, Lin Feng looked like a great commander, majestic and imposing, everybody obeyed him. He could light the fire within the hearts of his soldiers. These soldiers were, once again, feeling full of vitality.

“Prepare your arrows!” shouted Lin Feng. At that moment, all the troops out of the Imperial City raised their bows. Both sides had their bows raised.

“Meng Chong gave the order to kill the princess, this is a capital offense, he must be killed!” shouted Lin Feng furiously, at that moment, he let go of Meng Chong, whose body slowly fell from the top of the gate.

“Pssshhh, pssshhhh.” Thousands of arrows pierced through the air. Meng Chong gave a horrible shriek and his life was put to an end. Suddenly, a red liquid started flowing down the city walls.

All these arrows had pierced through his body which pinned against the city wall. His corpse was hanging from the city walls by thousands of arrows.

At that moment, Everybody was speechless. How ruthless and powerful!

That is how Lin Feng had gained such an illustrious reputation, it

seemed like he was at the apex of his power.



## Chapter 242: The Death of an Officer!

---

Meng Chong's body had been pinned onto the city wall by thousands of arrows. The crowd was dumbstruck.

The ones above the city wall, even though they couldn't see it, could imagine what happened. They had all seen the cloud of arrows a moment before. Besides, the soldiers outside of the Imperial City were punishing him because he had tried to kill the princess.

The reason was absolutely valid so nobody said anything. After all, Meng Chong had given the order to kill the princess, everyone witnessed that.

Meng Gu Feng was shaking, his eyes were wide open, he was dumbstruck.

"Meng Chong!" shouted Meng Gu Feng extremely loudly. He then moved towards the edge of the gate and looked down. In a flash, his face turned red, that was his son, pinned onto the city wall with so many arrows, his little boy.

"Arrghhhh, Lin Feng!" shouted Meng Gu Feng furiously. He turned around and looked at Lin Feng with killing intent.

"You killed my son!"

Meng Gu Feng sounded like he couldn't believe it and was fixedly

staring at Lin Feng.

“Please open the gate, the princess and I are in a hurry.” said Lin Feng sounding indifferent. He looked particularly calm.

“Open the gate?” said Meng Gu Feng with a hideous grin on his face. He then said evilly: “Lin Feng, you broke into the Imperial City, killed my son in spite of my higher military rank, and have no respect for the hierarchy of Xue Yue.”

“Huh?” Lin Feng was surprised, but smiled coldly immediately after. Meng Gu Feng was trying to accuse Lin Feng. What an old fox, even though he was furious and enraged, he still remained sober-headed and declared Lin Feng’s faults, which would make it much easier to attack Lin Feng after.

“Officer Meng, Meng Chong tried to kill the princess, everybody saw it. He had to be killed for his own actions. Everybody thinks that what I did was the right thing to do. Besides, I will say it once more, officer, the princess and I have to handle important matters and are in a hurry so open the gate and let us into the Imperial City.”

Lin Feng’s voice was filled with coldness, his words were sharp and poignant.

“Handle important matters? You think that you can save Liu Cang Lan?” said Meng Gu Feng while staring at Lin Feng and smiling evilly. He then added three words: “In your dreams.”

“BOOM!”

Meng Gu Feng had just finished his sentence when an ice-cold deadly energy emerged from Lin Feng's body. Meng Gu Feng was surprised and said: “What are you doing?”

Lin Feng remained silent, his silhouette flickered and his hand turned into a sharp sword which pierced through the atmosphere.

Meng Gu Feng let out a horrible shriek. Meng Gu Feng had tried to block Lin Feng's attack with his forearms, however Lin Feng proceeded to cut off his arms with his attack.

That attack astonished the crowd once again. Meng Gu Feng's troops, a moment before, had wanted to attack Lin Feng but Ren Qing Kuang and Meng Qing were there, preventing them from moving forward. They could only calmly watch the scene.

“Meng Chong wanted to kill the princess, I had to protect the princess and kill Meng Chong which is why Meng Gu Feng has a personal grudge with me, besides, he continues to refuse the princess entry into the Imperial City and doesn't respect the hierarchy of the Xue Yue Country. I, Lin Feng, will kill anyone who represents a threat to the security of the princess.”

Lin Feng was standing there with his hair was fluttering in the wind, his voice was resonating across the horizon. People's hearts were pounding.

Not only had Lin Feng killed Meng Chong but he also wanted to kill Meng Gu Feng.

He would kill anyone in his way.

When he finished talking, Lin Feng took a step and punched Meng Gu Feng. Immediately after, Meng Gu Feng's face turned deathly pale, blood started gushing from his mouth, but he was still evilly staring at Lin Feng.

Meng Gu Feng had also broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer, just like Lin Feng, but Lin Feng knew about earth fusion, which made him much quicker. Meng Gu Feng, a moment before, had been too negligent and his arms had been cut off.

“You are the only person responsible for the path you chose.”

There was an incredible sword energy which emerged from Lin Feng's hand and immediately penetrated into Meng Gu Feng's body and then crushed his vital organs.

With a flip of his hand Lin Feng sent Meng Gu Feng flying over the edge of the city walls. The troops outside of the Imperial City released their arrows which whistled through the air and Officer Meng Gu Feng joined his son, pinned to the city wall, lifeless.

Lin Feng punished them both as criminals.

In the world of cultivation, strength was the only thing that

mattered, strength was justice.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at the troops. Finally, he saw someone who had the armor of an officer.

“Are you the non-commissioned officer?” coldly asked Lin Feng. That person’s heart was pounding. He had personally witnessed Meng Chong and Meng Gu Feng’s deaths. They had suffered a cruel fate. It was like the widespread rumors about the crown prince, whoever dared to contradict him, died.

“Indeed.” said that person while nodding nervously.

“The princess and I need to go into the Imperial City, we have things to do, quickly open the gate.” said Lin Feng calmly. That person was stupefied and remained silent.

“I will give you five second to think carefully about your next actions. If you don’t let the princess in, you are committing an offense against the Xue Yue Imperial Clan.” said Lin Feng in a cold tone. He then immediately started counting: “One.”

“Two.....”

“Open the gate.”

The non-commissioned officer’s facial expression was rigid. How could he even give Lin Feng time to start the countdown? That guy had killed Meng Chong and his father. Lin Feng wouldn’t hesitate

to kill him too.

No matter how the situation would be, the most important thing was to survive, the future problems had to be ignored.

“Open the gate, open the gate....” said the soldiers repeating the order. A rumbling noise spread through the atmosphere, the gigantic bronze gate slowly opened itself.

“Officer Ren, you and the troops, escort the princess into the Imperial City and ensure her security.” said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. Ren Qing Kuang nodded and said: “Alright.”

Immediately, Ren Qing Kuang jumped in the air and landed back onto his horse’s back. He shouted: “Let’s escort the princess into the Imperial City and ensure her safety!”

The troops, who covered a wide and vast area, all started galloping towards the Imperial City. The crowd was speechless. Ensuring the protection of the princess was clearly an excuse to allow the troops entry into the Imperial City.

But the princess didn’t say anything. Lin Feng was controlling the entire situation, who would dare say anything?

The noise of the horses galloping on the ground was unceasing, Lin Feng waited for all the troops to enter the Imperial City and then, Meng Qing and he entered as well.

Hanging on the Imperial City walls were two corpses pinned with many arrows. The sight was, as before, a shocking for anyone who saw it.

Lin Feng was an outstanding young man whose heart was burning with boldness, he had managed to reverse the course of the events once again. He was so bold that he had even killed Meng Chong and Officer Meng without even blinking. He had ruthlessly killed them.

Of course, in order to be bold, one also had to have the appropriate strength.

Lin Feng could easily defeat Officer Meng Gu Feng who had broken through to the eighth Qi layer. He was extremely strong. The crowd had seen how monstrously strong he was.

If he didn't die, he would one day become as monstrous as the eight high-officials of Xue Yue. Besides, he would soon be even stronger, even more monstrous, than the high-officials at the bottom of the rankings.

# Chapter 243: The Chi Xie Officer

---

In the Imperial City, there was an extremely vast square made of bluestone.

It was situated in a lively district of the Imperial City. The flow of people heading in that direction was huge.

In the middle of that square, there was a bright red flight of stairs made from metal which gave a dazzling light. That flight of stairs led up to a white stage.

On that stage, there was a huge metallic pillar which had an cross symbol at the top. Chains were hanging from that cross. There were two extremely sharp hooks, the view was shocking, the purpose of these two hooks was to skewer the arms of a person attached to the cross.

That stage was the Death Sentence Stage and was used to kill those who had an illustrious social status but had angered the imperial family. Thus, everybody could witness the execution.

After killing the criminal, the corpse would be hung from the cross by skewering his arms with the hooks. The body would then be hung there for weeks as a warning to everyone else. It let everyone know what the punishment was for angering the imperial family.

At that moment, there was an ocean of people around the Death Sentence Stage. They completely filled the huge square.



However, those directly surrounding the Death Sentence Stage were all Xue Yue soldiers, no one could get close to the stage.

“I really would never have thought that General Liu Cang Lan the Divine Arrow, who was so majestic, so illustrious, would end up here today.”

In the crowd, some people were sighing. They were looking at the silhouette on the stage, it was precisely Liu Cang Lan. At that moment, Liu Cang Lan’s body was tied up. Even though he was considered a criminal and was going to be killed, he looked neither humble nor arrogant.

Liu Cang Lan had no regrets, he was innocent.

In front of the crowd, two beautiful eyes were watching Liu Cang Lan on the stage. Glistening teardrops were flowing down a set of bright red cheeks.

“Father, you have sacrificed your youth for Xue Yue and even devoted your entire life for it... and this is how they express their gratitude...”

That beautiful person was Liu Fei. She looked more mature and more beautiful than back in the days of the Yun Hai Sect but at that moment, she was feeling lonely, desperate and hopeless. Her heart was shattering into a thousand pieces.

“Fei Fei, remember what your father told you, stay safe, live on. You will be able to avenge him only if you’re alive.”

Next to Liu Fei was a middle-aged man, he looked calm but his heart felt painful as well, especially when he saw Duan Tian Lang. He wished he could cut out his organs and bathe in his blood.

Everything happened because of Duan Tian Lang, including the death of hundreds of thousands of soldiers, but he was blaming Liu Cang Lan for all these things. He was blaming Liu Cang Lan for the kidnapping of the princess as well. It was a terrible fate for a hero like Liu Cang Lan. Everything was ridiculous.

“Mmm.”

Liu Fei nodded, but could not utter a word, her heart felt heavy. She had to avenge her father, Duan Tian Lang could not be allowed to live, either he would die or she would.

“Your father has always been convinced that Lin Feng would protect and take care of you, that nothing would happen to him. After today, we will go and look for him even if it means going to Mo Yue.” said the middle-aged man. Liu Fei remained silent. Where was Lin Feng at that moment?

She didn’t know why but at that moment, she terribly missed Lin Feng, she had never needed someone so much.

When a woman feels lonely, she always thinks about the person

whom she cares for the most. Liu Fei, at that moment, felt powerless. Her father was in front of her and was about to get executed, but she couldn't do anything to prevent it from happening. She could only calmly watch her father get killed.

Duan Tian Lang looked at the sky and had a smile of happiness on his face. Duan Tian Lang had been waiting for this day for so many years. He had always wanted to kill Liu Cang Lan and at that moment, he was about to be executed. How could Duan Tian Lang not be happy?

“The time has come, let's get prepared.” said Duan Tian Lang sounding detached. Immediately after, four strong cultivators pulled the chains which tied Liu Cang Lan, his bindings suddenly tightened, and then, his body was pulled into the air.

Liu Cang Lan didn't complain, his limbs were pulled in each direction and he was locked in place, he just continued gazing into the distance. He looked calm, he hated the choices he made in life, he wished he could go back in time.

“Raise your bows!” said Duan Tian Lang sounding cold and detached. On the bright red flight of stairs, many soldiers raised their bows and aimed at Liu Cang Lan. There were eighty one archers, Liu Cang Lan obviously didn't have any chance to escape.

A sharp Qi spread through the atmosphere. Was this their way of humiliating Liu Cang Lan? His nickname was the Divine Arrow, he was an expert in archery... and they were going to execute him using archery.

However, at that moment, the crowd could feel that the ground was shaking, and it was getting more and more intense. They were surprised.

The sound of galloping horses spread through the atmosphere. The ground was shaking more and more violently. Duan Tian Lang narrowed his eyes and looked at the distance. He only saw Chi Xie cavalry approaching in a large force, they looked like they were flying through the air, they looked insanely powerful. They were really the Chi Xie troops.

“What’s going on?”

Duan Tian Lang was stupefied. How did the Chi Xie cavalry make it there? They were supposed to be blocked at the city gate. It was impossible for them to come into the Imperial City.

“Chi Xie cavalry, they came in.”

“Yes, Uncle Jiu, your army, the Chi Xie cavalry.”

Liu Fei looked moved, Jiu Chi Xie was with her and Ren Qing Kuang was leading the Chi Xie cavalry for him. When he went to the Imperial City, he thought that the Chi Xie cavalry would never be able to enter the Imperial City.

At that moment, Jiu Chi Xie saw a young and handsome man leading them.

A smile appeared on his face.

“Fei Fei, it’s Lin Feng, nothing is impossible for that boy. Surprisingly, he managed to gain entry for the Chi Xie soldiers into the Imperial City.” said Jiu Chi Xie in a low voice. Lin Feng’s determination and willpower were impressive. He had completely altered the course of events, he had then killed the kidnappers and rescued the princess and on top of that, he returned unscathed. Lin Feng had the ability to shatter everyone’s expectations.

There were tears of joy in Liu Fei’s eyes at that moment, that was perfect timing on Lin Feng’s part and besides, he had brought the powerful Chi Xie cavalry with him, he would definitely be able to protect her father.

However, they seemed to be forgetting that Duan Tian Lang was extremely determined to kill Liu Cang Lan.

“Lin Feng.”

Duan Tian Lang’s facial expression turned evil. He immediately shouted: “Get ready to kill Liu Cang Lan!”

“Roger!” shouted the archers in unison. Immediately, Liu Fei and Jiu Chi Xie’s facial expressions drastically changed.

“Duan Tian Lang, don’t you dare!” furiously shouted Jiu Chi Xie while jumping in the air across the crowd.

“Boom boom boom!” Jiu Chi Xie’s blows killed a few of the archers.

“Release the arrows!” said Duan Tian Lang with a cold smile on his face. The arrows whistled through the air moving straight towards Liu Cang Lan. At that moment, Jiu Chi Xie’s face turned deathly pale. He immediately threw himself forwards at full speed. He had dived in front of Liu Cang Lan’s body to protect him from the arrows. His entire body was releasing Qi in the form of a strong wind. His entire body was covered with a bright and resplendent Qi.

“Get away!” shouted Liu Cang Lan, his facial expression drastically changed. At that moment, Liu Cang Lan’s body was tightly tied up and he couldn’t use his cultivation. All Jiu Chi Xie could do was protect Liu Cang Lan with his body.

“Uncle Jiu!” cried Liu Fei in alarm. Immediately after, the sounds of the arrows piercing through the Qi spread in the air, the arrows then continued and pierced into Jiu Chi Xie’s body but they didn’t continue moving towards Liu Cang Lan. Jiu Chi Xie’s body was their final destination.

“Brother.” cried Liu Cang Lan. His heart felt infinitely painful. On his forehead was a pitch-black seal. That seal kept glowing, making him unable to use his strength.

“Die together!” shouted Duan Tian Lang coldly. He then started moving but at that moment, a piercingly cold energy arrived on his

body, he felt as if he was going to freeze on the spot.

“Frozen Heart.”

Duan Tian Lang stopped moving. His face turned deathly pale, he turned around and saw a wave of pure Qi roll towards him. It was brutally cold. In a flash, he felt the extreme coldness on his body and was projected backwards, unable to move closer to Liu Cang Lan.

“Die!” said Lin Feng furiously. Lin Feng was brandishing his sword, its light was extremely resplendent and dazzling to the eyes. The archers were unceasingly firing their arrows. Lin Feng’s expression revealed pure killing intent.

Ren Qing Kuang immediately killed the four people who were pulling the four chains which were holding Liu Cang Lan in place.

Blood was unceasingly flowing from Jiu Chi Xie’s mouth but he was smiling.

“General, I will sacrifice my life for yours, after I die, Lin Feng can become the officer of the Chi Xie troops.”

“Arghhhh!” Liu Cang Lan was endlessly grieved, his eyes were filled with tears. Jiu Chi Xie had been an extremely good friend for a dozen years. They had never argued and had always regarded each other as real brothers, they considered each other family. Many times, they had fought battles shoulder to shoulder.

However, at that moment, Jiu Chi Xie had sacrificed himself.

“General, I would like to say one last thing.” Jiu Chi Xie was leaning against Liu Cang Lan, he then leant over and whispered something in Liu Cang Lan’s ear.

The intensity of Jiu Chi Xie’s voice was dropping. When he finished talking, he looked at Liu Cang Lan and smiled at him.

“General, for more than a dozen years, I have never called you anything else other than “General” when addressing you, today, I will call you my “brother”.”

The word “brother” had a deep meaning. After saying that, Jiu Chi Xie’s voice lost in intensity, his breath became weak and his vision became blurry. His vitality was quickly leaving his body and his eyes slowly closing. He was calmly lying against Liu Cang Lan’s chest with an unchanging smile on his face.

Liu Cang Lan was looking at Jiu Chi Xie and an endless stream of tears started to fall from his eyes.

Brothers, could such a simple word really describe the relationship that these two had over these countless years?

Jiu Chi Xie was motionless, lying against Liu Cang Lan’s chest. He would never wake again.



## Chapter 244: Who's the Traitor?

---

The ground was unceasingly shaking, people were shouting, the Chi Xie cavalry were galloping, and chaos reigned over the crowd. They were all running away from this scene. In a short moment, the Xue Yue soldiers were not encircling the Death Sentence Stage anymore, instead, the Chi Xie cavalry had replaced them as the Xue Yue soldiers backed away.

At the same time, a large group of Xue Yue soldiers were coming to attack from the back of the stage.

But the Chi Xie cavalry all suddenly stopped and looked at the silhouette leaning against Liu Cang Lan's chest. In the past, that person used to be their leader... and he was now killed.

"Ssss..." The spears of the Chi Xie troops flew through the air. Everyone's hearts started to race. Chi Xie soldiers were willing to encircle the Imperial City for their General, they were also capable of attacking Xue Yue soldiers for their officer.

What was happening within that huge area was complete chaos, thousands of soldiers had already died, what was the reason?

Lin Feng remained uncommunicative. Jiu Chi Xie was a true leader and a great man.

Lin Feng's sword was dancing through the air. He cut the chains around Liu Cang Lan's body but Jiu Chi Xie was still leaning against him, in silence.

“Lin Feng, you came into the Imperial City with rebel forces and personally rescued the criminal, Liu Cang Lan. You deserve a death sentence.” said Duan Tian Lang whose voice sounded ice-cold, he was fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

“Rebel forces?” said Lin Feng while fixedly staring at Duan Tian Lang. His tone was cold too.

“Die!” shouted one of the Chi Xie soldiers.

“Die!” That shout was imposing and heavy. Deadly energy spread through the atmosphere. The Chi Xie soldier raised his long spear.

“Stop.” shouted Lin Feng while turning around. In a flash, everybody quieted down, they were all staring at Lin Feng, they didn’t understand why he had stopped them, nonetheless, they all stopped moving and remained silent.

“I haven’t given you any order to attack, if you attack, I will personally kill you!” said Lin Feng coldly. The hearts of the Chi Xie cavalry were pounding but when they saw how strict Lin Feng looked, they all remained silent.

“Encircle the stage.” said Lin Feng coldly. The Chi Xie soldiers obeyed his order and started galloping. In a flash, the Chi Xie soldiers encircled the entire Death Sentence Stage so that not even a single drop of water could trickle through.

At that moment, Lin Feng had become a sort of pillar for these soldiers, even though he wasn't their direct superior, everybody obeyed his orders.

“You will die.”

Duan Han was standing next to Duan Tian Lang, he narrowed his eyes and intensely stared at Lin Feng. Lin Feng had lead a rebel army, even though Lin Feng was considered a hero in Xue Yue, he had committed a crime and had to pay for it.

Lin Feng coldly glanced at Duan Han. Duan Han's heart twitched. He then closed his mouth and then Lin Feng disregarded him like he would an insect. He started walking to the front of the Death Sentence Stage.

“Bring Her Highness up here.” said Lin Feng. Immediately after, some soldiers wearing bronze masks slowly arrived, behind them was a beautiful silhouette on a horse.

That beautiful woman made people's heartbeats accelerate. She looked pure and noble. Incredibly, that was the princess of Xue Yue, Duan Xin Ye.

“Princess, you have returned.”

“Lin Feng, really went to Mo Yue alone and returned with the princess.” thought some people in the crowd while looking at that beautiful silhouette.

Concerning Duan Tian Lang, he narrowed his eyes, not only had Lin Feng come but the princess too.

“Soldiers, salute your princess.” said Lin Feng while glancing at the soldiers. They didn’t understand what Lin Feng was doing at that moment, but knelt down on one knee and shouted in unison: “Your Highness!”

Lin Feng calmly looked at the soldiers surrounding the Death Sentence Stage and said coldly: “How come Duan Tian Lang’s army did not salute the princess? Is she not your princess? Are you really this disrespectful?”

Duan Tian Lang was stupefied, he immediately shouted coldly: “Why are you not kneeling down?!”

The Xue Yue soldiers obeyed the order and knelt down, while shouted in unison: “Your Highness.”

“Duan Tian Lang salutes Your Highness. Your Highness has come back, this is great news for our country, Xue Yue.” said Duan Tian Lang while slightly bowing and lowering his head.

“This is all thanks to Lin Feng.” said Duan Xin Ye calmly while coldly looking at Duan Tian Lang.

When Duan Tian Lang heard Duan Xin Ye’s manner of speaking, his facial expression changed. He didn’t know what to say. He

wanted Lin Feng to die and accused him of having brought rebel forces. But at that moment, Lin Feng had come back with the princess, which was an incredible military exploit.

“As expected, Lin Feng is our country’s young hero.” said Duan Tian Lang while raising his head and then said in a small voice while smiling: “But even though Lin Feng saved you, he has still committed a great crime by gathering rebel forces and bringing them into the Imperial City, and that is not an insignificant crime.”

“Duan Tian Lang is still thinking of how he can falsely accuse others of crimes.” said Lin Feng indifferently. Duan Tian Lang was stubborn and said: “Meritorious acts are meritorious acts, crimes are crimes. I Duan Tian Lang, must declare your faults for the sake of justice.”

“Justice? Duan Tian Lang, how long has it been since we last saw each other? It seems like you get even more shameless each time we meet, I thought it was impossible to be more shameless than you when we last met, but once again you have proven me wrong.” said Lin Feng in a cold tone. The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng surprisingly dared to call Duan Tian Lang shameless in front of everybody.

The ground started shaking again and rumbling noises spread through the atmosphere. The crowd was surprised. The crowd moved back again and opened a path. At that moment, an incredible number of soldiers were coming, it was the Imperial Guards.

Duan Tian Lang felt relieved. A short moment after, the army of guards arrived. The Chi Xie soldiers surrounding the Death Sentence Stage wanted to attack but Lin Feng waved his hand, signaling them to stand their ground and remain calm.

Two silhouettes slowly came from the group of Imperial Guards. One of them was wearing armor, he looked majestic and powerful, while the other was a handsome young man, the second prince, Duan Wu Ya.

“Did you kill Meng Gu Feng and Meng Chong? This person is Meng Han, the officer of the Imperial Guards, Officer Meng Gu Feng was his brother.” Said Duan Wu Ya

“Indeed.” said Lin Feng sounding calm, cold and detached.

“Huh?” Duan Tian Lang was stupefied, Lin Feng had killed Meng Gu Feng and Meng Chong?

Inside, he was laughing coldly. He was evilly staring at Lin Feng and then said: “Lin Feng, you saved the princess which is a military exploit but acting arrogantly, you dared to kill an officer and then bring rebel forces into the Imperial City. These are both extreme crimes against the country. To pay for your crimes, the only solution is death.” Then, Duan Tian Lang turned around and looked to Duan Wu Ya: “Your Highness, please punish Lin Feng for his crimes.”

Duan Wu Ya looked relaxed, he had perfectly mastered his emotions. A faint smile appeared on the corner of his mouth and

he said: “Lin Feng, Duan Tian Lang wants to punish you for your crimes, is there anything you want to say?”

“Yes.” said Lin Feng while slightly nodding, he then immediately turned to Duan Tian Lang and said: “Duan Tian Lang, during the war, because he wanted to kill me, he created chaos within our army, allowing the Mo Yue army to exploit the weakness that he created. Hundreds of thousands of Xue Yue soldiers died so he could have the opportunity to kill me, it was a bloodbath. Now he wants to punish me for my crimes with a death sentence. I don’t think that it’s a strange thing at all.”

When Lin Feng finished talking, the crowd was astonished. Duan Tian Lang had caused chaos within their own army because he wanted to kill Lin Feng? From what they had heard, Liu Cang Lan was responsible for that.

“He’s talking nonsense, Your Highness, not only is Lin Feng a traitor but he is also a lying little rat. Don’t trust him.” said Duan Tian Lang. Of course, he wasn’t going to admit his faults, Lin Feng perfectly knew that.

“Duan Tian Lang is calling me a traitor, yet he gives no explanation and wants punishment. At what moment have I rebelled?” asked Lin Feng.

“You came into the Imperial City with rebel forces, killed Meng Gu Feng as well as Meng Chong, you encircled the Death Sentence Stage and rescued Liu Cang Lan, who is a criminal, everybody saw this with their own eyes. Is that enough?”

“Shut your filthy mouth!” furiously shouted Lin Feng, his eyes unveiled killing intent, he was exasperated. He then pointed at the Chi Xie cavalry.

“Duan Tian Lang, these soldiers have courageously fought against the enemy, we encircled them inside the city and burnt them alive inside. We killed hundreds of thousands of the Mo Yue army, in the end they were forced to retreat. At that moment, I’m asking you, where were you? You had already deserted the army and ran back to the Imperial City like a little scared dog. You are really audacious.”

“And now what? You are calling me a traitor, but I want to ask you, who are you to call me a traitor? Are you the one who decides? What status do you hold where you think that by calling me a traitor, I instantly become one?”

Lin Feng’s voice sounded extremely cold. Duan Tian Lang was speechless. The crowd was also astonished. They had killed hundreds of thousands of Mo Yue soldiers in Duan Ren City, and made them retreat. At that moment, Duan Tian Lang had already run away. How could he judge someone else’s faults?



## Chapter 245: Duan Tian Lang's Interrogation

---

Duan Tian Lang looked glum, he then coldly said: “The Imperial City is a holy place in Xue Yue, is it normal for an army to enter it by force without permission? Is it normal to kill an officer and his son when entering the city? If that is not being a traitor, then what is?”

“The Princess and I rushed back to the Imperial City, then some soldiers attempted to assassinate us, besides, they were all Xue Yue soldiers. They knew that the princess was there, but they still tried to kill us. I want to ask you, Duan Tian Lang, doesn't the whole army now follow your commands?”

“Nonsense, how could they be my soldiers?” quickly refuted Duan Tian Lang angrily.

“Well then, the most amusing part is that even if they were not your soldiers, my role is to protect the princess and I ordered the Chi Xie cavalry to protect her and accompany the princess to the Imperial City. However, Duan Tian Lang, you call me a traitor and want to kill me. You also called these soldiers rebel forces. If I understand your argument, you're clearly saying that we are a rebel army and deserve to die, because we protected the princess against countless squads of Xue Yue soldiers that you claim were not under your control, is that right?” Lin Feng's words made Duan Tian Lang's face sink. Lin Feng had only said a few words, but he had exposed Duan Tian Lang. Lin Feng's last words had been so eloquent that they cornered Duan Tian Lang.

“Of course, protecting the princess is not a crime, but Officer Meng Gu Feng and Meng Chong’s deaths, how do you explain them? Things are not as simple as you would have others believe.” said Duan Tian Lang looking evil.

“I was outside of the Imperial City, Meng Chong knew that the princess was amongst us but still gave the Xue Yue soldiers the order to fire arrows at us, including the princess. Duan Tian Lang, I, Lin Feng, want to ask you, was killing him the right thing to do?”

Duan Tian Lang narrowed his eyes and said: “Yes, he deserved to die.”

“Well then, I will ask you something else. Meng Chong’s father, Officer Meng Gu Feng let his son give the order to kill the princess and then committed another offense by preventing the princess from entering the Imperial City, was killing him the right thing to do?” Lin Feng’s voice was cold and sharp.

“It was the right thing to do.” said Duan Tian Lang agreeing with Lin Feng.

“Duan Tian Lang, you’re saying it yourself, they deserved to die, so now I want to ask you, what crime have I committed? Am I a traitor because I came into the Imperial City with soldiers who were protecting the princess?” said Lin Feng coldly while staring at Duan Tian Lang. Lin Feng had prevented the Chi Xie soldiers from attacking because he had a plan. A few tens of thousands soldiers was a miniscule amount, if they had attacked, they would have immediately been considered as a rebel army and would have been

wiped out.

“Hmph, you protected the princess, that is indeed a meritorious act, but a moment before, you killed some soldiers which belonged the enforcement troops and rescued the criminal Liu Cang Lan, isn’t that a crime?”

“Of course that is not a crime.” said Lin Feng while staring at Duan Tian Lang and then continued: “General Liu Cang Lan went to war and fought against Mo Yue for our country, Xue Yue, but you abandoned him, you’re a deserter who accused him of your own crimes. How could I not save him?”

A deserter.

Duan Tian Lang had a hideous expression on his face. Lin Feng was, once again, humiliating him in front of everyone.

“Duan Tian Lang, no need to hurry and justify yourself. I have been answering so many questions, however you have your own crimes to account for.” said Lin Feng with a smile yet not a smile on his face. He then continued:

“Duan Tian Lan, the Chi Xie cavalry and I were protecting the princess, why can’t you distinguish good from bad? Why do you say that we have committed crimes? Why did you hurry to accuse us of various crimes? Why are you trying at every possible occasion to sentence me to death? Besides, when I came here, why did you try and hurry the execution of Liu Cang Lan? Also, when the princess and I came back to the city, we were attacked by several

squads of Xue Yue soldiers, as far as I know, you command those soldiers, are you not the one who ordered them to kill me and the princess?" Lin Feng's questions made the crowd astonished. It seemed like that entire story wasn't as simple as they had thought.

"All your questions are attempting to harm my reputation, I will refrain from answering them." said Duan Tian Lang coldly. He didn't care, what could Lin Feng do anyway?

"You have the right not to care but I want to ask you something, has General Liu Cang Lan committed any crime?"

Duan Tian Lang was furious and really wanted to kill Lin Feng, as far as Liu Cang Lan, everybody knew about him, nothing could be kept secret.

"Liu Cang Lan sowed disorder amongst the troops, making us lose a battle against Mo Yue, leading to the death of hundreds of thousands of troops and he didn't protect the princess who was kidnapped, are all these crimes enough for him to be sentenced to death?!"

"This is your version of events, the person who committed all of these crimes was it not actually you?" said Lin Feng while smiling indifferently. Immediately after, he pointed at Duan Wu Ya and said: "The second prince is here as a witness, I hope that you would not dare to lie in the face of our second prince."

"It was me." admitted Duan Tian Lang as he forced the words from his mouth.

“Hehe, how shameless, what a shameless dog, but on the other hand, I am not surprised.” said Lin Feng while smiling. His tone was humiliating Duan Tian Lang.

“I just want to ask, you, Duan Tian Lang, you say that the princess was kidnapped, where was she kidnapped exactly? Was she in one of Liu Cang Lan’s tents at that moment or was she in one of your tents?”

Lin Feng smiled and said: “The princess is here before us, I hope that you would not be planning to tell any lies.”

Duan Tian Lang was blankly staring at Lin Feng. His mouth was about to move but then Duan Wu Ya spoke: “Uncle, for the sake of justice, please reply to Lin Feng’s questions. I will be fair.”

The situation was awkward for Duan Tian Lang, he said in a low voice: “She was in one of the tents from my campsite.”

When the crowd heard Duan Tian Lang, they burst into an uproar, surprisingly, it really was exactly as Lin Feng was explaining.

“Since those are the facts, there is something that I don’t really understand, if the princess was kidnapped in one of your tents, why would Liu Cang Lan have to bear the responsibility for it? How has he committed a crime? Besides, you still have the face to order Liu Cang Lan’s execution. I would like to hear your explanation.” Lin Feng was speaking extremely loudly so that

everybody could clearly hear what he was saying.

“Please explain.” Shouted all of the Chi Xie soldiers who were encircling the Death Sentence Stage. Duan Tian Lang’s facial expression was utterly hideous.

At that moment, if Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye hadn’t returned, Liu Cang Lan would have already been executed. The entire situation had changed.

“Liu Cang Lan is a general, he didn’t properly ensure the security of the campsite giving the Mo Yue troops an opportunity to kidnap the princess, of course that it is a crime.” said Duan Tian Lang trying to pass the blame again, but obviously, his argument couldn’t persuade anyone in the crowd any longer.

“So that’s the reason.” said Lin Feng while smiling. “Well, I was there too, and at the moment when I tried to chase the kidnappers, your troops obstructed my path and said that I plotted against the princess. You were the one who always wanted me dead, immediately after the princess was kidnapped, you were already there to execute me, but did not see the kidnappers, how did you manage to do that?”

When Lin Feng said that, everybody looked at Duan Tian Lang expecting a prompt answer.

Everybody wanted to know what really happened on the battlefield that had led to the death of hundreds of thousands of soldiers.

Duan Tian Lang remained silent.

“Since Duan Tian Lang remains silent, I will say what happened myself, Duan Tian Lang, you wanted to make it appear as if I was the culprit and sacrificed the princess in order to settle a personal grudge with me. When Liu Cang Lan saw that you were trying to kill me unjustly, he brought his army to stop you and then you ordered your soldiers to attack his. Clearly this was the act of a noble war hero... Besides, once disorder had been sown amongst the army, the Mo Yue army attacked and they killed hundreds of thousands from the army.” Lin Feng’s voice was calm and solemn. While looking at Duan Tian Lang, he said: “Duan Tian Lang, is what I am saying the truth or not?”

The hearts of the people in the crowd were pounding. Surprisingly, Duan Tian Lang was the person who caused so many deaths and Liu Can Lan was to be executed for Duan Tian Lang’s crimes.

“Nonsense!” furiously shouted Duan Tian Lang.

Lin Feng was smiling and then continued: “I am not done talking. Duan Tian Lang, there is no need for you to try and cover up the truth any longer.”

“After the chaos, and after hundreds of thousands of soldiers had been killed, the Xue Yue army returned to Duan Ren City, there was evidence that the person who kidnapped the princess was working for Mo Yue, besides, at the moment when the princess

had been kidnapped, it was soldiers under your command that blocked my path and let the kidnappers escape, they were traitors, and yet again they were surprisingly under your command. I can say that there isn't a single person within the army who doesn't know about these acts of treason. What explanation can you provide?"

So that's how it happened, the person who kidnapped the princess was from Mo Yue and Duan Tian Lang was the one giving the orders. Besides, he was using every opportunity to kill Lin Feng.

That news was shocking.

"After that, Liu Cang Lan and I fought against the enemy, organized an ambush in Duan Ren City and set it on fire. At that moment, you, Duan Tian Lang, had already deserted to the Imperial City. Everyone knows what happened after. You changed the entire story and gave Xue Yue a false version of events in which Liu Cang Lan was responsible for your crimes, then you had done your best to execute Liu Cang Lan. Besides, the princess and I were missing and assumed dead, so we could not testify to your crimes. The problem is that if either of us returned alive, you would have been in trouble so you ordered several squads of soldiers to kill us on the way." When Lin Feng finished talking, the entire crowd was drowned into silence. The crowd was now having doubts, maybe, Duan Tian Lang was really the mastermind behind this entire plot.



## Chapter 246: The Marquis and His Fief

---

“Lin Feng, you’re just trying to ruin my reputation, what you’re saying is a pack of lies! I have never dispatched anyone to kill you or the princess. Besides, I suspect that you’re the one who kidnapped the princess, and it is only because you have threatened her and she’s under pressure that she listens to you.” said Duan Tian Lang while making a false accusation.

“Is that so? How come the high-ranking soldiers who tried to kill me told me that they were only obeying orders and the black guard lieutenants confirmed that you were collaborating with Mo Yue, you sowed disorder within our army which resulted in the death of hundreds of thousands of soldiers. If you were not working with Mo Yue, why would you have attacked Liu Cang Lan’s army? You, Duan Tian Lang, are good at secretly plotting against people.” said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. The crowd was astonished, Duan Tian Lang had collaborated with Mo Yue?

Lin Feng’s words were too powerful, these crimes were enough for Duan Tian Lang to be sentenced to death a few times over.

Duan Tian Lang’s heart was also pounding. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng. Surprisingly, Lin Feng was also declaring that Duan Tian Lang had collaborated with Mo Yue.

“Lin Feng, I devoted my life to Xue Yue and you dare say that I collaborated with the enemy, how am I supposed to let you live?” said Duan Tian Lang while releasing a deadly Qi. He really wanted to kill Lin Feng.

“So that’s how it is, you really did commit all of these crimes. I said that you collaborated with Mo Yue and again the only thing you can do is try to silence me. Apart from that crime, you also deserted and created chaos within the troops, which resulted in the death of hundreds of thousands of soldiers, it was a bloodbath. Then, you tried to make Liu Cang Lan bear the responsibility for all of these crimes, then you almost killed him. Also, because of you, the officer of the Chi Xie army, Jiu Chi Xie, is now dead. How could the army of Chi Xie forgive you?” Lin Feng sounded imposing and domineering. Immediately after, he looked at the soldiers and said: “Tell me, can you forgive Duan Tian Lang?”

“No!”

“We can’t!”

The tens of thousands of Chi Xie soldiers were shouting loudly and aggressively. Duan Tian Lang suddenly had the impression that he was being absorbed by Lin Feng.

“Alright.” shouted Lin Feng. Immediately after, he looked at the second prince and said: “Your Highness, you have seen it too, I only said a few truths and Duan Tian Lang tries to kill me. Besides, the soldiers cannot forgive him for what he has done. Now, if Duan Tian Lang kills me, I will have no regrets because I have done nothing wrong. However, I would like to ask Your Highness and Officer Meng not to intervene in this fight.”

Duan Wu Ya had remained silent, almost the entire time, he looked pensive while looking at Lin Feng. He was also surprised. Lin Feng’s words had been sharp, harsh and powerful. Duan Tian

Lang couldn't reply at all.

At that moment, a battle was probably going to break out and if Officer Meng didn't get involved, Lin Feng would have the advantage.

“At the moment, I cannot clearly distinguish what is right and wrong but there is already a profound hatred between Duan Tian Lang and you, if he wants to fight against you, I will not prevent him from doing so, I want to see if he believes he has the required ability to kill you.” said Duan Wu Ya indifferently. Everybody was astonished. Duan Wu Ya said that he was wondering if Duan Tian Lang had the ability to kill Lin Feng but actually, that was covering his tacit consent for Lin Feng to dispose of Duan Tian Lang as he wished.

But everybody understood what Duan Wu Ya meant. He had agreed and the crowd was astonished.

Duan Tian Lang also remained silent. He felt ice-cold chill in his heart. Duan Wu Ya was not hiding his intentions anymore, he wanted to kill him.

“Officer Meng.” said Duan Tian Lang while glancing at Duan Wu Ya and then immediately looking at Meng Han.

“Duan Tian Lang has a high status within the Imperial Family, I, Meng Han, am the officer of the Imperial Guard, I have to protect the entire Imperial Family. I obviously couldn't accept it if anything happens to Duan Tian Lang.” said Meng Han sounding

calm. He was clearly on Duan Tian Lang's side.

Duan Xin Ye and Duan Wu Ya were worried about Lin Feng, they would help him even if it meant contradicting Duan Tian Lang. Lin Feng was calmly looking at everything that was happening around him.

Besides, Meng Han, who was the officer of the Imperial Guards, didn't even care about making Duan Wu Ya lose face.

"It seems like the fact that Duan Wu Ya and Meng Han both came has a profound meaning, it shows that they are both in opposing factions." thought Lin Feng. The things that happened within the Imperial Family were hard to understand.

"Hehe." When Duan Wu Ya heard Meng Han, he laughed but the laugh also contained some coldness.

"An officer of the Imperial Guard, indeed." thought Duan Wu Ya. Immediately after, he started walking slowly towards Duan Xin Ye and asked: "Xin Ye, is what Lin Feng said the truth? Did you really get kidnapped in Duan Tian Lang's tent?"

"Yes, it is the truth." said Duan Xin Ye while nodding and then added: "On that day, Lin Feng and I were chatting in the tent when suddenly, an assassin came and as Lin Feng saved me, I was kidnapped. After that, the kidnapper confirmed that he received orders from the holy courtyard and Uncle Duan, who were cooperating with Mo Yue. Duan Tian Lang was also plotting against Lin Feng."

“I understand.” said Duan Wu Ya while slightly nodding and then immediately said: “Xin Ye, you went through many hardships because of me.”

When he finished talking, Duan Wu Ya walked back towards Duan Tian Lang, who started feeling uncertain. Duan Tian Lang didn't fear many people but Duan Wu Ya was one of those he feared.

Duan Wu Ya's way of working wasn't easy to understand. There were very few people who could guess what he was thinking.

“Then, Lin Feng and Liu Cang Lan managed to encircle the enemy in Duan Ren City and burnt the city, killing a few hundred thousand enemy soldiers, then they were forced to retreat back to Mo Yue. Duan Tian Lang, would you like to say anything about this?”

Duan Tian Lang was fixedly staring at Duan Wu Ya and said: “No.”

“Alright.” said Duan Wu Ya while nodding and continued: “During the battle, a few hundred thousand soldiers were sacrificed but regardless of that, Lin Feng and the princess have come back to the Imperial City alive and the invading army has been repelled. Besides, there was also a huge misunderstanding about Liu Cang Lan, right?”

“That's right.” said Duan Tian Lang who didn't feel like nodding

anymore.

“Good.” said Duan Wu Ya while nodding. He started walking on the Death Sentence Stage and glanced at the crowd. He then said: “The dead are already gone and I am not looking for the guilty party any longer, but my family has falsely accused General Liu Cang Lan. General Liu Cang Lan, the Divine Arrow, has always been loyal, devoted and courageous. He has always fought for the country. We can’t forget that. I will report all of this to my father. I would like to grant Liu Cang Lan with the status of Imperial Minister and he will also retain his status as a general. Besides, we will grant Jiu Chi Xie with a posthumous title for his courage and loyalty.”

He was conferring an imperial title upon Liu Cang Lan and a posthumous title upon Jiu Chi Xie.

For Liu Cang Lan, that didn’t matter much, in Duan Ren City, he was already like a king.

As far as Jiu Chi Xie, what was the point in granting him a title? He was already dead.

But Duan Wu Ya’s point was more about admitting that the Imperial Family had made mistakes. They had unjustly accused Liu Cang Lan, but they recognized his loyalty and courage.

“Uncle, do you agree with these things?” said Duan Wu Ya while looking at Duan Tian Lang. Duan Tian Lang was surprised and had no choice but to nod. They were rendering justice to Liu Cang Lan

and at the same time establishing Duan Tian Lang's own guilt. Liu Cang Lan retained his title as a general.

"General, what do you think about it?" asked Duan Wu Ya to Liu Cang Lan. Liu Cang Lan still had Jiu Chi Xie's corpse leaning against him. He slowly looked at the Chi Xie troops. He looked expressionless.

"I, Liu Cang Lan, am grateful to the second prince, thank you for your kindness. I am willing to accept these titles." said Liu Cang Lan sounding indifferent.

"General." shouted the thousands of soldiers. How could he accept? Accepting meant letting Duan Tian Lang get away with it!

Liu Cang looked at the crowd. Many of the soldiers were looking at Lin Feng. Liu Cang Lan sighed but also felt gratified.

Lin Feng could now lead a whole army without Liu Cang Lan's help.

"Officer Jiu's last wish was to grant Lin Feng the status of Officer of the Chi Xie after his death. From today, Lin Feng, you are the officer of the Chi Xie army. I will first bring the soldiers back to Duan Ren City and then hand the army over to you. Forget about what happened today." said Liu Cang Lan. Immediately after, he jumped on a horse while carrying Jiu Chi Xie's corpse in his arms. A wave of sorrow filled the atmosphere, everybody could feel how desperate and sad Liu Cang Lan felt.

They had fought loyally for their country and this was how they were repaid.

When Lin Feng heard Liu Cang Lan, he calmly nodded. He, of course, knew what Liu Cang Lan had meant. He was hoping that no more blood of the people he cared about would be spilt, so he wanted Lin Feng to forget about what had happened with Duan Tian Lang.

If Lin Feng continued his verbal attacks against Duan Tian Lang, the blood of the soldiers would inevitably flow. Liu Cang Lan didn't want such a thing to happen again.

When Lin Feng saw Liu Cang Lan leave, he sighed. What a sorrowful hero.

Duan Wu Ya was relieved to see that Liu Cang Lan had accepted. Immediately after, he said: "Lin Feng, with your strategy, you managed to kill hundreds of thousands of enemy soldiers and repel their army. Then, you travelled into the enemy country to rescue the princess and returned her safely to the imperial city. General Liu Cang Lan just granted you the title of Officer. I, as a representative of the Imperial Family, also confer Lin Feng a title, the title of Marquis and your fief is Yangzhou City."



# Chapter 247: The New Officer

---

“Marquis of Yangzhou City?”

The crowd was stupefied. Officer of the Chi Xie troops and marquis of the fief of Yangzhou...

In Xue Yue, those who had the most power after the imperial family were Imperial Ministers and directly below them was Marquis.

Some Marquis reigned over a village while some others reigned over a city, owning a city was required to be considered as a true marquis.

Even though Yangzhou City wasn't very big, Duan Wu Ya's move was of the highest significance, he had made Lin Feng into a true Marquis. He had given Lin Feng incredible power. From that moment, Yangzhou City belonged to Lin Feng.

Every inhabitant of Yangzhou was under Lin Feng's control and all of their lives belonged to him.

At that moment, a realization flashed through Lin Feng's eyes, he realized that Duan Wu Ya was honouring his promise. He had hoped that Lin Feng would perform meritorious acts during the war so that he could provide him with a social status. Now that Lin Feng was back in the Imperial City, Duan Wu Ya was granting Lin Feng with a social status and at the same, he was directly implying that Lin Feng was part of his faction.

“Thank you, Your Highness.” said Lin Feng in a low voice. Of course, he wasn’t going to refuse Duan Wu Ya’s offer. There were many strong cultivators in Xue Yue and Lin Feng still wasn’t extremely strong. Receiving such an opportunity was a great chance for him.

“Don’t get too happy yet. My father still has to make the final decision.” said Duan Wu Ya while smiling warmly. Even though he was saying that, the whole crowd knew that everything was already set in stone. The final decision was just part of the process, once the prince announced it, it was confirmed.

If Duan Wu Ya wasn’t sure about what he said, he wouldn’t have said it in front of everyone, if the decision was overturned, he would have lost face.

Lin Feng slightly nodded and remained silent. Duan Wu Ya turned towards Duan Xin Ye and said: “Xin Ye, that guy, Meng Chong, did he really attack you? Was Meng Gu Feng really there, on the gate with him?”

Duan Xin Ye looked at Duan Wu Ya and nodded: “Yes, everybody saw us outside of the Imperial City, Meng Chong gave the troops the orders to kill Lin Feng and me. Besides, Meng Gu Feng didn’t want to allow me entry into the Imperial City.”

“Hm.” Duan Wu Ya slightly nodded and said: “Meng Gu Feng was an officer and he committed a terrible crime, he illegally granted power to Meng Chong, who then used that power to try and kill

my little sister. A soldier of the Imperial City, who wants to kill the princess, deserves death.”

When the crowd heard Duan Wu Ya, they were surprised, Meng Gu Feng and Meng Chong had already died, why was Duan Wu Ya still talking about them?

But at the moment, when they were asking themselves questions, Duan Wu Ya looked at Meng Han. The crowd was wondering what was going on.

Meng Han’s heart also started accelerating. He had the impression that something ominous was going to happen. A moment before, he had made Duan Wu Ya lose face by supporting Duan Tian Lang.....

“Officer Meng Gu Feng attempted to assassinate the princess. Even though he is dead already, his brother Meng Han is still the officer of the Imperial Guards. I think that it is necessary to carry out a full investigation, Meng Han, you are already not an appropriate choice to occupy the function of Officer of the Imperial Guards.”

When Duan Wu Ya finished talking, people’s hearts were racing. The second prince was extremely fierce and harsh!

Meng Han couldn’t refute his argument.

Meng Han’s heart violently pounded as well. He wanted Duan

Wu Ya to die for finding such an excuse to dismiss him.

Meng Han turned around and looked at Duan Tian Lang, who remained silent. Duan Tian Lang was already in a critical situation himself, Duan Wu Ya hadn't decided what he wanted to do with him, otherwise, he wouldn't remain so polite. At that moment though, he didn't want to anger the second prince.

The second prince was fierce, intrepid and tough.

Meng Han saw that Duan Tian Lang remained silent, he then said to Duan Wu Ya: Your Highness, Meng Gu Feng committed crimes but what does that have to do with me? Even though he was my brother, I know nothing about that. How can you blame me and dismiss me from my function as an Officer of the Imperial Guard?"

"Meng Han, I didn't say that it had something to do with you either but Meng Gu Feng was involved in an assassination attempt on the princess of the imperial family. I, as the second prince, must investigate, it is my duty as I don't understand the whole situation. Wait until we have gathered all of the facts with a thorough investigation and if you are absolutely clean, you will be able to return to your post as an officer of the Imperial Guard."

Duan Wu Ya's argument sounded quite logical but everybody knew that Meng Han was being relieved of his position as an officer of the Imperial Guard, it would be extremely difficult for him to hold such a high position again. It was actually almost impossible.

“I, Meng Han, am innocent.” said Meng Han coldly. He was standing tall and upright and fixedly staring at Duan Wu Ya.

At that moment, he was still in a position of power, with the Imperial Guards obeying his orders. If the second prince wanted to attack him, it wouldn't be that easy, however, as time went on, people would come to assist him.

“Meng Han, how audacious. How does he even have the courage to talk to the second prince that way?”

“It seems like there are some people from above supporting Meng Han.” whispered the people far away in the crowd. Meng Han had immediately contradicted Duan Wu Ya, in front of everybody.

“Hehe.” Duan Wu Ya laughed, his smile hadn't disappeared.

“Meng Han, what you mean is that I am groundlessly dismissing you from your functions? Do you mean that you will not obey my orders? You, Meng Han, intend to do what, keep your function as an officer by force?”

“How could I, Meng Han, not obey the second prince's order? It's just that the function of Officer of the Imperial Guard is very important. Apart from me, nobody else can do it. Besides, the Imperial Guards also consider me as their brothers, it is not their wish to see anyone replace me.”

“Is that so?” asked Duan Wu Ya with an evil smile on his face

which made Meng Han's facial expression change.

“Crrr, crr....”

A faint and subtle sound spread in the air. Meng Han was violently shaking and breathing heavily. Blood sprayed from his mouth.

Not only was Meng Han's heart pounding, but the crowd were also on edge from watching this.

Blood was unceasingly flowing from Meng Han's mouth. He lowered his head and only saw the tip of a silver spear that had pierced through his chest from behind.

The Imperial Guards were like his brothers and didn't want to see anyone replace him?

His voice was still resonating in people's minds but the reality was much harsher.

Meng Han moved his body, he wanted to turn around, but the spear was not moving. Suddenly, a deadly energy penetrated his body and destroyed his organs. The crowd was astonished. Blood sprayed out from his mouth and his lifeless body slowly collapsed onto the floor.

After Meng Han collapsed, the high-ranking soldiers who were behind him were absolutely calm. Their expression hadn't changed

whatsoever. They all looked extremely serene and peaceful. There were about thirty guards in this high ranking group, they were all young but their coldness was enough to make other people's hearts feel a tinge of fear.

“Meng Han's brother, Meng Gu Feng, attempted to kill the princess, Meng Han refused to admit it and kept contradicting Your Highness over and over again. I, Yu Ji the non-commissioned officer of the Imperial Guards, killed him for his insubordination. Please forgive me for taking action, Your Highness.” Yu Ji was kneeling down and bowing in front of Duan Wu Ya. Behind Yu Ji, the army of Imperial Guards remained motionless, all of them looked calm and serene as if they were not surprised at all, they almost agreed with how the events had played out.

Everybody was astonished by the coldness of that scene.

“Meng Gu Feng had been plotting against my little sister and wanted to kill her. Meng Han hasn't expressed any regret at all and refused to acknowledge his brother's crime. Besides, he was extremely rude to me. Even though Yu Ji killed Meng Han and that is a crime, it is still a sign of loyalty and devotion to the imperial family.” Duan Wu Ya was speaking slowly and then continued: “Today, Meng Han died but it is required for the guards to have an officer. Yu Ji, you are, for the time being, promoted to the position of officer of the Imperial Guards.”

“Thank you, Your Highness.” said Yu Ji while respectfully bowing and kneeling down. Immediately after, he stood up, at the same time, the high-ranking Imperial Guards behind him also bowed respectfully and shouted in unison: “His Highness is wise

and kind, we thank you for our new officer!”

All the ordinary Imperial Guards were stupefied and were just realizing what had happened. They then slowly knelt down and shouted in unison: “His Highness! Thank you for our new officer!”

These extremely loud voices were resonating through the crowd. People’s hearts were violently pounding, they were unable to calm down.

How fierce and powerful. Duan Wu Ya could control the Imperial Guards so easily, his methods were intense.

If the crowd didn’t know that Yu Ji was one of Duan Wu Ya’s factions, all sorts of rumours would be spread.

Lin Feng calmly smiled at Duan Wu Ya but was still feeling a bit cold in his heart. Duan Wu Ya was dangerous, extremely dangerous.



## Chapter 248: You Will Fight!

---

“Everybody, stand up.” said Duan Wu Ya while waving his hand. The ones who were still kneeling down slowly stood up but for a long time, they were unable to calm down. A position as important as officer of the Imperial Guard had been transferred so easily.

Duan Wu Ya’s opinion was that there was nothing special or surprising about it. It was as if the Imperial Guard didn’t mean that much to him.

“Yu Ji, now you are the officer of the Imperial Guard, you know what you have to do.”

Yu Ji nodded and bowed while saying: “Your Highness, I will leave with the guards now and patrol the streets to ensure the residents’ safety.”

“Alright, you can go.” said Duan Wu Ya while waving. Immediately after, several tens of thousands of guards left, only those from Duan Ren City, who were surrounding the Death Sentence Stage, were still there. Nobody could threaten them.

Duan Tian Lang and his son’s facial expression was growing more and more hideous. Duan Tian Lang had wanted to kill Liu Cang Lan but at the crucial moment, Lin Feng had appeared with Duan Xin Ye. They had rushed over and killing Liu Cang Lan had become impossible, he was going to stay alive.

Besides, Duan Han wanted to marry Liu Fei. Using Liu Cang

Lan's life as a bargaining tool, he had been blackmailing her, if she wasn't willing to engage in a relationship with him, he would turn his back on Liu Cang Lan, who would then die. Liu Fei hated him and didn't want to become his wife, she rejected his offer.

What was making them boil with envy was that Lin Feng had become a marquis, the officer of the Chi Xie army, and had obtained the control of his hometown. Besides, Duan Wu Ya had also appointed a new person to be the officer of the Imperial Guards. It was a crushing defeat for them.

All these things had happened because of one person: Lin Feng.

At that moment, Duan Tian Lang and his son were looking at Lin Feng with ice-cold glares.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at them. His face was filled with killing intent and he made no attempt to hide it.

"Lin Feng, we're stopping this for the time being." said Duan Wu Ya in a low voice when he sensed Lin Feng was ready to kill. Duan Tian Lang had a high status, he was a noble from the Duan Clan. Duan Tian Lang was a member of the Imperial family. Killing him isn't as easy as killing Meng Han, it would need a justified reason.

Lin Feng had no excuse to kill Duan Tian Lang at that moment.

"Yes, I understand, Your Highness. What happened today is over, for the time being." said Lin Feng while slightly nodding. The

soldiers sighed. Duan Tian Lang would stay alive after all he had done, even though the blood of so many people was on his hands.

Of course, they weren't blaming Lin Feng. What he had done wasn't easy at all. If Lin Feng hadn't been there, Liu Cang Lan would have been executed and they would have been doomed as well, as they would have been considered as a rebel army.

“But.....” At that moment, Lin Feng turned around and looked at Duan Tian Lang and Duan Han, he said: “What happened today is over for now, but last time, Duan Tian Lang brought an army to exterminate the Yun Hai Sect. The Yun Hai Sect turned into a bloodbath. I, Lin Feng, as a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, need to get my revenge because of the hatred left deep within my heart. Therefore, the enmity between Duan Tian Lang and me will never end without his death.”

The crowd was stupefied, it wasn't over. Lin Feng used to be a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, therefore, he had an excuse for not letting past grievances be settled.

“So that's how it is. Duan Tian Lang exterminated the Yun Hai Sect, of which Lin Feng used to be a disciple, his hatred for Duan Tian Lang should be endless. How could he forget such a thing? Duan Tian Lang is his enemy and the hatred is too deeply engraved in his heart. There is no solution. With such justification, Duan Wu Ya cannot say anything either.”

People in the crowd were all trying to understand the situation. Then, they saw Lin Feng turn around. He looked at the troops and at Ren Qing Kuang in particular.

“Officer Ren, sorry for causing you trouble, please take the troops out of the city and wait for me there. I have something to do here, I will come to you when I’m done.” said Lin Feng to Ren Qing Kuang. Immediately, many started shouting from within the army.

“We’re not leaving, the officer is here, we’re staying.”

“Yes, we will stay with our officer!”

The Chi Xie troops were shouting in protest. The crowd was surprised. Lin Feng was so young and his troops were already extremely loyal and devoted to him, these feelings were already deeply engraved into their hearts.

Surprisingly, even before Liu Cang Lan had assigned Lin Feng as their new officer, they have already regarded him as their leader.

“Get the hell out of here, all of you! If you don’t hurry, I’ll get angry.” said Lin Feng sounding ice-cold. The troops were all a bit surprised.

“Officer Ren, sorry for the inconvenience.”

Lin Feng coldly looked at the troops and then at Ren Qing Kuang. If they stayed with him, it would be the same as continuing to talk about the problems that happened on that day. Even though in itself, it was the same, it was no longer about the grievance between Duan Tian Lang and the Chi Xie army, Lin Feng needed to

justify his reason for revenge because Duan Wu Ya was there.

Duan Wu Ya had freed Liu Cang Lan, giving him the title of Imperial Minister, he had given Lin Feng the title of Marquis, all these things were supposed to make them stop pursuing issues caused by the war, if Lin Feng continued, Duan Wu Ya would not tolerate it.

Therefore, at that moment, he gave a new reason, the Yun Hai Sect had been destroyed, the troops thus had to leave as it did not involve them.

“Alright.” said Ren Qing Kuang. He perfectly understood Lin Feng. Ren Qing Kuang shouted: “Troops, listen to your orders, leave the Imperial City immediately!”

After saying that, Ren Qing Kuang turned around and slowly left. The troops, even though they were doing it against their own will, still obeyed Lin Feng’s order and galloped away. Immediately after, Ren Qing Kuang also left with them. A short time later, all the troops had left the imperial city.

The area seemed deserted.

In the entire area, the only ones left were Lin Feng, Meng Qing, the Celestial Sword battalion, Duan Wu Ya, Duan Xin Ye, Duan Tian Lang and his son.

At that moment, Duan Tian Lang narrowed his eyes and evilly

stared at Lin Feng. That boy wasn't going to give up.

Duan Wu Ya hadn't thought that Lin Feng would be so stubborn either, but Lin Feng had mentioned the extermination of the Yun Hai Sect and his status as a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect. Of course, his heart was filled with hatred.

"Lin Feng." shouted Duan Wu Ya at that moment. Lin Feng turned around and immediately heard him say: "Lin Feng, Duan Tian Lang is an imperial family member, his title of being an imperial family member is higher than that of marquis, more respectable, you cannot attack him."

"I know." said Lin Feng while slightly nodding. Duan Wu Ya was a bit surprised, since Lin Feng knew, what else did he want?

"Your Highness, Duan Tian Lang is a member of the imperial family and your uncle, his status is respectable and extremely high, I will obviously not attack him." said Lin Feng sounding detached. The crowd didn't understand him at all.

But then they heard Lin Feng continue: "However, back in the past, Duan Tian Lang had brought his son along, Duan Han, who helped him to slaughter the Yun Hai Sect, my sect. Duan Han is extremely arrogant and thinks he is better than me, he even said that I wouldn't withstand a single attack when we fought. Now, Duan Han, the young noble without an incredible status, is before me. I, Lin Feng, am already a Marquis. It should be enough for me to have a battle against him. Right here, right now, I would like him to enlighten me as he said he would in the past."

When the crowd heard Lin Feng, they immediately understood who his target was, it wasn't Duan Tian Lang but Duan Han.

Lin Feng was challenging Duan Han.

However, Duan Han, at that moment, would never want to fight. He remembered that day, at the Yun Hai Sect, he thought that he was extremely strong, but then at that moment, fighting against Lin Feng had become difficult for him.

Lin Feng had always been stronger than Duan Han. Duan Han didn't have the courage to fight against Lin Feng anymore. Duan Han felt awkward and was staring Lin Feng. He had a hideous facial expression. How was he supposed to accept Lin Feng's challenge?

"We refuse. Duan Han and I have things to do, we have no time." said Duan Tian Lang sounding cold and detached.

"Things to do?" said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. "Duan Tian Lang, when you went to destroy the Yun Hai Sect, did you ask the people of the Yun Hai Sect if they would accept?"

Duan Tian Lang narrowed his eyes. That was ridiculous, how could they accept?

"Duan Tian Lang, when the princess was taken away, your troops blocked my path and tried to kill me, did you ask me if I had the

time?”

Lin Feng ignored Duan Tian Lang and continued: “Besides, Duan Tian Lang, when you and your son, set a trap in order to kill me which led to the death of hundreds of thousands from the Xue Yue army, then deserted the battlefield in order to rush back and try to have Liu Cang Lan executed, did you ask everybody else if they accepted?” Lin Feng’s voice was growing louder and louder. A cold and deadly energy emerged from his body. Lin Feng, who was always calm, was furious.

How powerful, what Lin Feng meant is that there was no choice, he was fighting Duan Han regardless of who stood in his way.

Lin Feng had an evil smile on his face and was staring at Duan Han. He then said in an ice-cold tone: “Duan Han, back in the days, at the Yun Hai Sect, you considered everyone beneath your attention but our battle was not allowed an end. You have to treat a man as he treated you, today, we finish our battle.”

When Lin Feng finished talking, he started walking forward, that battle could happen because of a single justifiable excuse, it wasn’t about wanting to battle, it was about finishing their unfinished battle.

In the world of cultivation, Lin Feng was always moving closer to his goal of soaring in the clouds!



## Chapter 249: Lin Feng's Army

---

“Try if you dare!” shouted Duan Tian Lang furiously. He then started walking forward and a deadly Qi emerged from his body. Lin Feng surprisingly wanted to kill Duan Han, his son... how could Duan Tian Lang accept that?

“Stop!” shouted a furious Meng Qing. Ice Qi and force invaded the atmosphere. Meng Qing took a few steps and landed in front of Duan Tian Lang.

Duan Tian Lang also had the strength of the Xuan Qi layer. If Lin Feng wanted to kill Duan Han, how could he resist to Duan Tian Lang? Obviously, Meng Qing had to get involved, Lin Feng didn't need to say anything, that was obvious.

“Kacha!”

Even more ice appeared in the atmosphere. Duan Tian Lang was surprised, his facial expression was hideous. An incredible quantity of sword energy emerged from his body.

Duan Tian Lang had a blood spirit and had awakened the strength within his blood, but that strength was too weak, therefore, he was also using his sword spirit. Duan Han also had a sword spirit.

Dual spirit.

A long sword appeared which pointed towards the sky. His sword spirit and the sword in his hand seemed to be in perfect symbiosis, both as sharp as the other.

Besides, at that moment, Lin Feng was slowly walking towards Duan Han. Each and every step that Lin Feng took made Duan Han's heart beat grew faster. Duan Han didn't stop retreating backwards.

“Back in the past, at the Yun Hai Sect, you were high spirited, vigorous and daring... today, you are as scared a cowardly mutt who keeps on flinching... you don't even dare to fight.”

Lin Feng said these words jokingly. He wasn't in a hurry to kill Duan Han. He was convinced that Duan Tian Lang would also remember Meng Qing and her strength, allowing him to see his son, Duan Han, get killed without being able to do anything in retaliation.

Lin Feng wanted to make Duan Tian Lang understand that, back in the days, he had the power to bully Lin Feng but now, Lin Feng could slowly kill his son right in front of him and he would not be able to lift a finger. He would show him how cruel he could truly be and make his son suffer in his place.

When the people saw Lin Feng slowly walking towards Duan Han, their hearts also started beating faster.

When Duan Wu Ya saw that Lin Feng wanted to kill Duan Han, an offspring of the Duan family, he surprisingly didn't try to block

him which meant that he tacitly agreed.

“DIE!”

Lin Feng was getting nearer and nearer. Duan Tian Lang shouted loudly while his sword slashed through the atmosphere. An endless quantity of sword Qi appeared and slashed through the world of ice. The sound of sword energy clashing against ice energy filled the air.

“Ice Diamond.” said Meng Qing in a low voice. She waved her hand and an ice crystal appeared and froze Duan Tian Lang’s sword entirely.

Lin Feng was very near to Duan Han. A sharp and deadly energy completely enveloped Duan Han’s body. It was filled with deadly Qi. Under that deadly energy, Duan Han didn’t even have the courage to resist. Lin Feng’s aura of a death god sufficed to make him tremble in fear.

“Could it be that you are afraid now? When you were at the top of the cliff face, you were cold bloodedly watching the Yun Hai Sect members get slaughtered, you were feeling comfortable and satisfied, right? When you and your father got a few hundred thousand soldiers killed, didn’t you have the feeling that your plan was a great success?”

Lin Feng’s voice sounded evil and its coldness invaded Duan Han’s heart.

“Arrrrghhhh!”

Duan Tian Lang shouted like an animal, abandoned his sword and jumped towards Duan Han.

“Frozen Heart.” said Meng Qing in a low voice. Duan Tian Lang started shaking violently. He had the feeling that his heart was being completely frozen. Blood started flowing from his mouth.

But Duan Tian Lang didn’t pay attention to that, all that mattered to him was his son, his son couldn’t die.

“Oh, you came?” said Lin Feng with an ice-cold smile on the corner of his mouth. Suddenly, his silhouette disappeared, he was absorbed into the void of darkness.

“Die.” said a voice coming from the void. The crowd saw, in the middle of that emptiness, a cross appeared. That cross was resplendent and dazzling to the eyes.

“Shhhh....”

The cross turned into a sanguinary sword. On Duan Han’s neck there was a small cross, a small bloody cross.

Duan Tian Lang stopped moving. His mouth was wide open. He was just feeling infinitely cold as he was blankly staring at his son, Duan Han, who slightly lifted his head to look at his father. Duan Tan Lang could see the cross-shaped mark on his neck and the

blood endlessly gushing out from it.

“Duan Han!” shouted Duan Tian Lang with a husky voice. He was shaking from head to toe. He grabbed his son and hugged him tightly. He saw his son’s lips, which were moving, but he couldn’t speak a word as he was drowning in his own blood.

At that moment, his son collapsed in his arms.

“Cough, cough.” Duan Tian Lang coughed and blood was forced out of his mouth. He looked deathly pale. His son was dead, he had been killed by Lin Feng and died in his arms. At the moment, when he had almost reached his son, Lin Feng forced him to watch his son drown in his own blood.

Invisible like a shadow, invisible and silent, that was the Deadly Cross Shadow.

“It hurts doesn’t it, Duan Tian Lang? Back then, at the Yun Hai Sect, when you slaughtered all those people, or after when you set a trap for a few hundred thousand soldiers, you were not thinking about their friends and their families, you also didn’t think about the pain that they would have to go through.” said Lin Feng, who was standing behind Duan Tian Lang watching the scene.

“Lin Feng!” furiously shouted Duan Tian Lang while releasing a deadly energy.

“You don’t need to shout, I know that you wish you could hack

me into a million pieces, I understand your hatred because I feel that hatred inside me, and my hatred is much more terrifying than yours.” said Lin Feng sounding calm.

He then continued: “Now, it is between you and me. If you have an opportunity to kill me, feel free to try. Because if, someday, I have the opportunity to kill you, I will unleash my hatred and show you no mercy.”

While talking, Lin Feng turned around, his silhouette flickered and he moved back to his original position. Immediately after, he said to Duan Wu Ya: “Your Highness, I am now taking my leave.”

Duan Wu Ya slightly nodded and said: “Lin Feng, I will be waiting for your return in the Lovesick Forest by the lake.”

Lin Feng muttered something to himself, but immediately after nodded and said: “Alright.”

Lin Feng then waved. Those who were wearing bronze masks, even though their faces were covered, all had an aura of satisfaction, they looked inspired and enthusiastic.

Many of them used to be Yun Hai Sect disciples. Duan Tian Lang and Duan Han had annihilated the Yun Hai Sect which was why they had the slave marks carved into their faces. Duan Tian Lang and Duan Han were their sworn enemies.

When they saw Lin Feng kill Duan Han and force Duan Tian Lang

into such a situation, how could they not feel satisfied?

They coldly glanced at Duan Tian Lang, then turned around and followed Lin Feng. Then, altogether, they galloped away.

Duan Tian Lang was showing no side of indignation or anger, he didn't do anything irrational. Meng Qing had already badly injured him. While Meng Qing was there, it was impossible for him to kill Lin Feng. If he attacked Lin Feng, Meng Qing would continue to inflict injuries.

Who was that beautiful girl, whose face was covered with a fine veil, and why was she following Lin Feng? She was extremely strong.

“Lin Feng, if I, Duan Tian Lang, don't kill you, my life will not be worth living.” said Duan Tian Lang while feeling that his son's skin was growing colder and more lifeless. He uttered a long and mournful cry.

A strong wind blew over the area, everybody was feeling cold. They were looking at the silhouettes slowly disappearing. They all understood that Xue Yue had an incredible young genius.

He had confined enemy troops in a city, set it on fire, and killed hundreds of thousands of them. He had galloped over an endless distance, saved the princess and brought her back alive; he had killed an officer of the Imperial City; he had saved Liu Cang Lan who was about to get executed by Duan Tian Lang; he had become a Marquis and possessed a city and then he killed Duan Han in

front of his father's eyes. Lin Feng's name was definitely going to be famous in the entire country.

Outside of the Imperial City, the army had gathered. At that moment, the city gate was open, a group of armored horses passed through it. Immediately, the crowd looked towards the gate.

Lin Feng looked at the whole crowd, he was a bit surprised, he looked startled, and moved forward.

Besides, three silhouettes rushed out to welcome him. These three people were precisely: Officer Ren Qing Kuang, officer of the middle troops; Officer Feng Yu Han, officer of the left troops; and Officer Lei Qing Tian, officer of the right troops.

“Is Uncle Liu in charge of all these troops now?” asked Lin Feng to the three officers. At that moment, outside of the city, all the soldiers were wearing red armor, riding Chi Xie armored-horses, they were all Chi Xie troops. Besides, the other officers were not leading them.

Nobody said anything, at that moment, the troops looked towards Lin Feng, and all jumped down from their horses and then all knelt down.

“We, the Chi Xie troops, welcome our new officer!” said the troops in unison, extremely loudly, making the ground shake. That drew the attention of many people, even of some who were far away. Lin Feng was astonished as well.



“Everyone stand up! What on earth are you doing?” said Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng.”

Ren Qing Kuang galloped towards Lin Feng and then said: “Lin Feng, the General dismissed these troops.”

“Dismissed the troops?” asked Lin Feng a bit surprised. What was Liu Cang Lan doing?

“But apart from a small minority of them who wanted to follow the general, everybody refused to leave. He only brought those troops who would only follow him back to Duan Ren City, leaving us behind to wait for you.”

“Wait for me.”

“Indeed, wait for you.” said Ren Qing Kuang in a calm and solemn way. He then slowly said: “Lin Feng, the general said there was no point staying in Duan Ren City because if Mo Yue tried to attack again, there would be no force left to resist them. Therefore, the general told the whole army, to stay here.”

“Lin Feng, now, you are a Marquis, you are the officer of the Chi Xie troops and since you own the fief of Yangzhou City... you can have your own personal army. The General told us to stay with you and pledge our loyalty to you rather than the country of Xue Yue. As your personal army, we can go to Yangzhou City, your fief.

From now on, the Chi Xie army will listen to your orders, as well as ours.”

Ren Qing Kuang’s words made Lin Feng’s heart pound. Liu Cang Lan was giving the elite troops of Xue Yue, the Chi Xie army, as well as its three officers, to him as his own private army?

In any case, he was now a Marquis, he had the space to accommodate his own personal army in Yangzhou City.

Then, the Yun Hai Sect.....

“Sighh....” Lin Feng raised his head to the sky and took a deep breath. He looked at Ren Qing Kuang and said: “I agree.”

# Chapter 250: The Snow-Dragon Guards

---

In the Lovesick Forest, it was as usual, misty, there was a thick fog floating above the ground. It looked like heaven on earth.

In the pavilion, two people were drinking Lovesick Alcohol. Duan Wu Ya was one of them.

The other one was a smart, elegant, handsome and spirited man. That man looked natural and unrestrained. At that moment, he was still wearing his armor, the armor of an officer. He looked majestic. It was the officer of the Imperial Guards: Yu Ji.

“What do you think?” said Duan Wu Ya sounding indifferent while sipping on his glass of Lovesick alcohol.

“Your Highness, before the battle, I had already secured the situation, all the Imperial Guards are now in our faction. Now, it is only about consolidating and purging. From today, the guards are yours, Your Highness.”

“Oh.” said Duan Wu Ya while lightly nodding. It was impossible to see if he was happy or worried. He was expressionless and uncommunicative.

At that moment, someone wearing black clothes was approaching and arrived at the pavilion, he slightly bowed in front of the second prince and said: “Your Highness.”

“Nan Shan, sit down.” said Duan Wu Ya while waving and smiling softly and warmly.

Nan Shan slightly nodded and immediately sat down opposite Yu Ji. He said: “Your Highness, Liu Cang Lan went back to Duan Ren City but he gave his army to Lin Feng. He wants them to stay with him.”

“Great news.” Duan Wu Ya paused and then said, while nodding: “Maybe then he’ll be able to use them for a good cause.”

“Yu Ji, the imperial guards need you, you should go back.” said Duan Wu Ya to Yu Ji. Yu Ji slightly nodded and took leave. Immediately after, he left the pavilion.

Nan Shan, while looking at Yu Ji’s silhouette leave, said: “Your Highness, congratulations on gaining the Imperial Guards.”

Duan Wu Ya shook his head and said: “Today’s greatest achievement is not the Imperial Guards.”

“Duan Tian Lang, Meng Han and the others didn’t care about Your Highness and worked against Your Highness. Meng Han is already dead, Duan Tian Lang is mourning over his son’s death, the others should be perfectly aware of the situation as well.” said Nan Shan. Duan Wu Ya was usually always so kind and soft. Because of that, many people forgot that he was also extremely powerful. Nan Shan had been following Duan Wu Ya for many years, he perfectly understood that the people who underestimated Duan Wu Ya would end up in tragic situations.

Even the extremely strong, powerful, ruthless and cruel high-official, the crown prince, didn't dare look down on his brother.

"That's not how it is." said Duan Wu Ya while shaking his head. Nan Shan was a bit surprised and immediately said: "Lin Feng."

"Indeed, that's Lin Feng."

Duan Wu Ya, while slightly nodding his head, said: "Everybody now knows that Lin Feng is one from my faction."

"Even though the Imperial Guards protect the city and constitute an important provision of force, in comparison with these troops, they are still too weak. These troops are my goal. Duan Tian Lang is too arrogant and looks down on everyone else, he's a moron. Surprisingly, he dared touch Duan Xin Ye, he doesn't know but from that moment, he doomed himself. He still thinks that there is a chance with my brother, but he's nothing but a dead man."

Duan Wu Ya, at that moment, didn't look like a friendly person. His eyes were filled with sharpness, brutality and coldness. He hadn't been worried about Duan Xin Ye being kidnapped by Mo Yue troops, they wouldn't have killed Duan Xin Ye but he hadn't thought that Duan Tian Lang would try to kill Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye on the way back.

Nan Shan could sense Duan Wu Ya's coldness. He knew that if Duan Tian Lang was still alive, but it was only a matter of time.

What Duan Tian Lang didn't understand was that he wouldn't be able to achieve his aim if the princess died, he would be doomed. No matter the winner, Duan Wu Dao or Duan Wu Ya, Duan Tian Lang would have been killed for murdering Duan Xin Ye.

Duan Tian Lang still thought that Duan Wu Dao would agree with him killing the princess. Maybe if Duan Tian Lang had the princess' blood on his hands, Duan Wu Dao wouldn't say anything initially but in the end, he would end up like everyone else who had committed a serious crime.

Such things were typical in political affairs. They were doing things behind the curtains, in secret, and things were difficult to understand. It was difficult to see where each piece was placed on the board.

"Nan Shan, you tell me, how can I get these troops?" said Duan Wu Ya. Nan Shan was surprised, shook his head and said: "I don't know."

Nan Shan knew what Duan Wu Ya meant, the most mysterious army of Xue Yue, the Snow-Dragon Guards.

The Snow-Dragon Guard unit was composed of the best cultivators within Xue Yue.

"It is absolutely normal for you not to know." said Duan Wu Ya while smiling: "The old man will, sooner or later, stop reigning over the country, allowing my brother and me to struggle for

power and influence. Leading the ministers and so on will not be a problem but the one who manages to obtain the Snow-Dragon Troops, will be the real Emperor.”

Nan Shan remained silent. He didn't know much about the Snow-Dragon Troops apart from the fact that they were extremely strong.

At that moment, Duan Wu Ya raised his head and gazed into the distance.

“Your Highness, I will leave now,” said Nan Shan while getting up but Duan Wu Ya shook his head and said: “No need, stay here.”

In the distance, Lin Feng had appeared. He was slowly and silently walking towards the pavilion, like a leaf floating on the wind, as if he was in perfect fusion with the earth. The energy which was emerging from his body was mysterious. Duan Wu Ya was a bit surprised.

“What is Lin Feng's cultivation level now?” thought Duan Wu Ya. Duan Wu Ya couldn't sense Lin Feng's cultivation level but it seemed like since he had gone to Duan Ren City, he had changed a lot.

“Your Highness.” said Lin Feng, who had arrived at the pavilion a moment later. Duan Wu Ya nodded.

“Lin Feng, hurry up and sit down.” said Duan Wu Ya looking

friendly again. He once again looked easy to get along with. He seemed to be a warm and soft person.

Lin Feng slightly nodded and sat down opposite Nan Shan. This time, when Lin Feng entered into the forest, he didn't feel strange at all, it was obviously thanks to Duan Wu Ya.

“Your Highness, you asked me to personally come to the Lovesick Forest, what do you need to speak to me about?” asked Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, you don't need to be so meticulous with me. Above all, I invited you to show you my gratitude for having brought Duan Xin Ye back safely.”

Duan Wu Ya poured some alcohol into Lin Feng's glass and immediately downed his glass.

Lin Feng grabbed the glass of alcohol and brought it to his lips, while drinking, he said in a low voice: “Your Highness, the princess was missing, it was my duty to bring her back.”

Lin Feng continued drinking the Lovesick Alcohol and a mysterious feeling invaded his heart.

“How's the feeling?” asked Duan Wu Ya while smiling.

“Even though I can't appreciate alcohol that much, I know that Lovesick Alcohol is unique and original.” replied Lin Feng while smiling.



“What I want to ask you is if Xin Ye appeared in your heart while drinking Lovesickness.” said Duan Wu Ya with a smile yet not a smile on his face. “Lin Feng, it seems that you do not have the same feelings as my sister.”

Lin Feng was a bit shocked and then smiled wryly. That alcohol was supposed to make a person’s most loved one appear in one’s heart.

In Lin Feng’s heart, except for the image of a pure and holy silhouette wearing long white clothes, there was also a small part which belonged to the princess.

He remembered that day at the Zi Government, Duan Xin Ye had really moved him to the extent that her silhouette appeared in his mind.

Besides, in his heart, there was another girl, wearing red clothes, she was gentle and demure.

Lin Feng was a bit perplexed, he believed in true love.

“Alright, this also none of my business, Lin Feng, I officially granted you a title, you can now officially claim it, you can also go to Yangzhou City to get your fief.”

When Duan Wu Ya saw that Lin Feng remained silent, he also didn’t insist, he instead changed the subject.

“At the end of the year, soon the annual new year’s holiday will be upon us, I will go back at that moment.” replied Lin Feng. He and his father had been expelled out of the Lin Clan so it was better to wait for a complete year to be over before returning.”

Maybe he would be able to arrive for the Lin Clan annual meeting too.

“Alright, in a few days I will send people to the Celestial Academy to come and pick you up to officially to receive your title.” said Duan Wu Ya.

“Alright.” said Lin Feng while slightly nodding. “Your Highness, I would like to ask you for help... I need your connections to help me find someone...”

“Tell me who.” said Duan Wu Ya while nodding.

“My father, Lin Hai.” said Lin Feng slowly. Lin Hai said that he was going to the Imperial City but some many things had happened to Lin Feng and he didn’t even know where his father was. Lin Feng had no news so he hoped that Duan Wu Ya would be able to help him as the city was extremely large.

“Your father, Lin Hai?” said Duan Wu Ya looking pensive, and then immediately nodded and said: “Alright, Lin Feng, leave it to me.”

“Your Highness, thank you.” said Lin Feng while nodding and saluting Duan Wu Ya with a cupped-hand salute. “If you, Your Highness, don’t have anything else to add, I will take my leave.”

“Alright, you can go.” said Duan Wu Ya while nodding and not preventing Lin Feng from leaving.

Lin Feng abruptly left the Lovesick Forest, outside of the Lovesick Forest, there was a pure and holy looking silhouette waiting for him. When Lin Feng came out, they left together.

## Chapter 251: She Must Be Blind!

---

In the Peach Orchard of the Celestial Academy, leaves were floating in the air like beautiful women dancing in the wind.

The melody of the zither was floating on the wind just like the leaves of the peach trees. The melody could bring peace to anyone's heart.

In the middle of that elegant pavilion, a graceful hand was floating over the strings of the zither, the melody was enchanting.

Lin Feng, just like a diligent student, was sitting on the ground with his eyes closed respectfully listening to the melody.

At that moment, Lin Feng's eyes were closed and he was breathing peacefully, his body was surrounded by a cloud of Qi. If people had been there, they would find it very mysterious but there was nobody in sight. For Lin Feng, it seemed like there was nothing but the earth, he was in fusion with the earth.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng was a Xuan Qi layer cultivator.

If Lin Feng hadn't seen it with his own eyes, he would have never thought that Yan Yu Ping Sheng, the teacher who was also the examiner for the military students' entrance exam, had such terrifying strength and power.

While his fingers were floating over the strings of the zither, he

could disintegrate soldiers and make them disappear into nothingness like dust.

Lin Feng felt endless respect for Yan Yu Ping Sheng, he was extremely powerful. Lin Feng held him in awe and veneration.

After a long time, the sound of the zither stopped. Yan Yu Ping Sheng raised his head and looked at Lin Feng, who, as before seemed calm and serene, as if he was sound asleep.

At that moment, Lin Feng opened his eyes. He had a smile on his face and looked even more handsome. He looked charming and intelligent.

“Lin Feng, originally, you were not in harmony with your heart’s true intentions and that caused a hindrance in your cultivation, that was the reason why I had proposed to play the zither for you and teach you how to play, so that you could wash your heart clean from all the pollution, but now your power of comprehension is stronger than mine and you can already penetrate into the earth fusion dimension. Now, you can continue alone, you need to think, to learn more and understand more about heaven and earth, to the extent that you don’t even need to listen to the zither any longer.” said Yan Yu Ping Sheng, who was speaking slowly.

The Earth Fusion dimension was extremely difficult to reach. Since Lin Feng had managed to break through to that complex cultivation layer, after that, breaking through to the different layers would be a piece of cake, at least until he reached the Tian Qi layer.

It wouldn't be like Yan Yu Ping Sheng for whom it was very difficult to reach higher levels after having broken through to the Xuan Qi layer.

He had seen many geniuses, but he had never met someone like Lin Feng. Since Lin Feng could comprehend the earth fusion so well, people who had stronger talent than him were almost nonexistent.

“Teacher, I want to learn how to play the zither.” said Lin Feng while slightly smiling. Lin Feng was very sensitive to the arts, especially to the zither. Not only did it help with meditating, but it could also be used to kill.

“Alright, if you want to learn, I will teach you. Besides, with the power of the earth fusion, it will be easy for you to learn. After a while, you'll play much better than me.” said Yan Yu Ping Sheng. He had faith in Lin Feng. Lin Feng was a once in a lifetime genius. Lin Feng wasn't arrogant at all, he was very humble, he had a strong willpower and determination, besides, he was extremely talented, he was a real treasure.

Looking at such an outstanding young man was a pleasure for other people, they felt happy when seeing such a talented genius. Yan Yu Ping Sheng was particularly happy about the fact that Lin Feng wanted to learn how to play the zither, so Yan Yu Ping Sheng hoped to see Lin Feng surpass him in the future.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng took out some books and waved his hand

which made them immediately float through the air towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng received the books and listened to Yan Yu Ping Sheng: “Lin Feng, learning how to play the zither requires the ability to listen. Now, you have proven that you are able to listen, you will now need to get to know the zither, you need to learn how to understand it, these books are very easy but amongst them, there are songs, and there are deadly zither skills as well. You can learn as much as you want and if there is anything that you don’t understand, you can always ask me.”

“Alright.” said Lin Feng while slightly nodding. He packed the books and immediately after said to Yan Yu Ping Sheng: “Teacher, I’m leaving.”

“Alright, you can go.” said Yan Yu Ping Sheng while smiling. Lin Feng had said that he was leaving without being scared of offending Yan Yu Ping Sheng. He wasn’t the kind of person who cared about such small things. Yan Yu Ping Sheng wasn’t offended by something like that, on the contrary, he liked Lin Feng this way; honest and carefree.

The news that Lin Feng had already come back to the Celestial Academy had quickly spread. Everybody also knew about the great things that he had accomplished during the war.

Everybody also knew about the fact that, during the war, on the battlefield there was a song sung by Lin Feng which inspired passion within the troops. Besides, Lin Feng had created this himself, which definitely contributed to his artistic reputation.

These days at the Celestial Academy, many people were talking about Lin Feng's achievements but there were also many people who were talking about Lin Feng's cultivation level.

The Celestial Academy had four cultivation towers, three of them were separated according to the three different student paths.

There was another one, that one was a great catalyst for cultivation.

In that fourth cultivation tower, the pure Qi was also the thickest. It was the best tower for practicing cultivation. Besides, anybody could practice in that cultivation tower. Of course, the rule was always the same, one had to be strong enough to obtain a room.

At that moment, at the tower, there were some people looking up at the majestic cultivation tower, their eyes were filled with impatience.

Not all of them had the power to enter it, they were just admiring it.

Yun Xi was a new student at the Celestial Academy, she had broken through to the second Ling Qi layer which was not bad at all considering that she was only seventeen but at the Celestial Academy, that was nothing extraordinary.



“If only one day I could go into that cultivation tower and practice on the top floor, it would be great.” said Yun Xi while looking up at the tall tower. That tower was different from the three others. The pure Qi was flowing against the current. At the top of the tower, pure Qi was denser than at the bottom.

Besides, in that tower, rooms didn't require additional purity stones depending on the floor, and by standing at the bottom, it was possible to see which rooms on which floor were available. Only one glance sufficed. Once someone was in a room, the door closed itself and the pure Qi started to circulate. Everybody could see from outside whether there was a free room or not.

Each floor only had a single room.

That cultivation tower was very special though, it was in the middle of all the other towers and was only used by extremely powerful cultivators. Many people, like Yun Xi, were only there to admire it. They all hoped that they would be able to practice cultivation in that tower someday.

“Yun Xi, stop dreaming.” joked a girl wearing blue clothes next to her. “You should become the girlfriend of one of them and then he would take you inside.”

“Yun Xi, last time, didn't Du Gu Shang show that he was interested in you? You could go with him.” said the other girl immediately. She sounded like she was joking in a jealous tone.

Du Gu Shang was one of the ten ranked disciples of the Celestial

Academy, he was ranked fourth.

In her thoughts appeared a noble young man, Yun Xi shook her head and said: “There is someone I like more than Du Gu Shang, it’s Lin Feng.”

“Lin Feng.” the girl in blue clothes was stupefied. She looked at the top of the tower and said: “I heard that Lin Feng battled against Hei Mo last time and that he was extremely strong. Now he is known for his meritorious service during the war, he burnt an entire enemy army of hundreds of thousands alive. It’s hard to imagine. He seems to be such a handsome and delicate young man, yet he is so daring and courageous. Besides, he seems he is about the same age as us.”

“Yes, he is now a Marquis and owns a city. I heard that he came back to the Celestial Academy.”

Yun Xi had a soft smile on her face She remembered that day, when Lin Feng battled against Hei Mo. She would never forget him. He was so young yet so frivolous and courageous.

“Moron.” said the girl next to her. She sounded a bit cold: “Lin Feng is a marquis, so what? And even though he battled against Hei Mo, so what? That’s a battle between cultivators of the fifth or sixth Ling Qi layer, however, Du Gu Shang is the fourth ranked disciple of the Celestial Academy and has already broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer. He is the most majestic man alive, the fourth cultivation room is his, how could Lin Feng rival him? Besides, Du Gu Shang is also a noble cultivator, he is from the Du Gu Clan, which is extremely influential.

“Yun Xi, if you could even have a one night stand with Du Gu Shang, that would already be good. Don’t expect anything more.”

“Why don’t you go and have a one-night-stand with him.” said Yun Xi while frowning and feeling annoyed.

“You know nothing, if Du Gu Shang was interested in me, I wouldn’t feel offended.” said the girl while smiling coldly.

“Really?” said a voice, coming from behind, in the tone of a joke. These girls were surprised. They immediately turned around and saw an arrogant looking young man.

Du Gu Shang.

At that moment, Du Gu Shang was looking at Yun Xi. He said, in the tone of a joke: “Lin Feng is nothing. How could he rival me? You dare be interested in him instead of me, you must be blind.”

## Chapter 252: The Fool!

---

The silhouette that Yun Xi saw in front of her looked conceited, filled with arrogance, the arrogance of the aristocracy.

Du Gu Shang was a rich and powerful person.

Du Gu Shang had heard about Lin Feng's achievements, people were talking about him everywhere. He had even just heard that people were comparing him with Lin Feng. Surprisingly, there were people who dared say that Lin Feng was better than him, like Yun Xi.

Du Gu Shang was in a bad mood because of that. What kind of person did this girl think he was? In the entire Celestial Academy, he was always practicing at the top of that tower, nobody dared to take his position, even the second in the ranking, Qiong Bi Luo and the third Wen Ao Xue. Du Gu Shang thought that because they had never had conflicts, he was different and better than them.

He respected Lin Feng even less, for him, comparing him with Lin Feng was a humiliation.

“Why couldn't I compare you with Lin Feng, as I see it, Lin Feng is better than you!” said Yun Xi when she heard that Du Gu Shang was criticizing Lin Feng which made Du Gu Shang furious.

“Shut the hell up!” he shouted.

“Smack!”

At that moment, a loud sound filled the air. Yun Xi had been slapped in the face, not by Du Gu Shang but by one of the girls who was with her.

“Yun Xi, you shut the hell up! Du Gu Shang is much better than Lin Feng. In front of Du Gu Shang, Lin Feng is mere trash, a nobody.” said the girl extremely coldly. Her words and actions were harsh.

When Du Gu Shang saw that, a big arrogant smile appeared on his face. Indeed, in front of him, Lin Feng was a nobody.

At that moment, about a hundred meters away from them, a handsome silhouette had appeared, they raised their head and looked at the tall and majestic tower.

That young man was precisely the one they were discussing, Lin Feng.

Lin Feng then slowly turned his head and looked at Du Gu Shang and the others. He wanted to go to the cultivation tower and practice there until the end of the year, then he would go back to Yangzhou City but at that moment, on the road, many people were talking about him, even at the bottom of the tower, some people were arguing about him.

Lin Feng heard every word already but he couldn't be bothered

with them. He didn't feel like going and proving anything to them, they were not worth his time. Many people were talking about him, he couldn't care about everyone, nature would take its course.

But at that moment, a girl was protecting his reputation and had been slapped in the face for defending him, she was being humiliated, Lin Feng frowned.

“Yun Xi, tonight, I will sleep with you, after that, we won't talk of this again and I will not punish you.” said Du Gu Shang sounding extremely arrogant. How ridiculous! It was difficult for him to get a woman with his ugly face. He was interested in Yun Xi but if he had said it clearly, it would have been giving her face, but she surprisingly dared say that she found Lin Feng better than him, therefore, he would teach her the power of a noble over the course of the night.

“You....”

Yun Xi was stupefied, she was looking at that ugly and disgusting guy who wanted to take advantage of her. It would rather be an honour and a favour for her to sleep with him. What a shameless young man. He thought that he could freely humiliate those beneath him.

In fact, it was really that way, Du Gu Shang, really thought he could humiliate anyone as he wished, except for a few exceptions.

“If you don't reply, I will just help myself.” said Du Gu Shang

with a particularly evil smile on his face, Yun Xi's facial expression changed again, she turned deathly pale, what a disgusting and hideous man, however, she also felt powerless.

Not only did he have a very high status but he had also broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer. Relying on his cultivation level and physical strength, he could easily capture her by force and use her as his toy.

“Yun Xi, Du Gu Shang is giving you a great opportunity, you are lucky, you'd be really shameless if you made him lose face.” said the mean girl trying to flatter Du Gu Shang at the same time.

Yun Xi looked even paler. Being sexually assaulted by Du GU Shang for an entire night and then abandoned was a stroke of luck? The mean girl was shameless!

“You're so young and already so cheap, you are one promiscuous flower.” said a voice interrupting them. It sounded cold and detached. It shocked the mean girl. She turned around and immediately saw a handsome young man, she frowned and said: “Who are you talking to?”

Last time, she hadn't seen Hei Mo and Lin Feng's battle so she couldn't recognize him.

“Apart from you, is there another cheap and trashy girl here?” asked Lin Feng in the tone of a joke. With those kind of girls, the only solution was to be harsher than them.

The mean girl was stupefied but Yun Xi suddenly seemed happy. She was blankly staring at the young man in front of her.

It was Lin Feng, surprisingly, it was Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had heard her and come to her rescue.

As before, he looked natural and unrestrained, but in comparison with before, he looked more mysterious and had a heroic spirit.

Du Gu Shang frowned as well. He didn't recognize Lin Feng either. Last time, during the battle between Hei Mo and Lin Feng, even though almost everybody had seen it, Du Gu Shang despised Hei Mo so he didn't go to watch his battle.

"Why don't you mind your own business?" said Du Gu Shang, who looked like he was in a joking mood.

Lin Feng coldly looked at Du Gu Shang, immediately after, he shook his head in disdain. That guy didn't know him yet he was talking behind his back, Lin Feng despised these types of filthy people and attached no importance to them.

Lin Feng looked at the mean girl and said: "I understand that for you, a one-night-stand with anyone is a stroke of luck, and since it is about giving face, it's clear that you have given a great deal of face and so you are very lucky!"

Lin Feng was speaking loudly and clearly so that everybody could



hear, then, everybody looked at her and laughed. What she said was indeed utterly ridiculous, she was really shameless.

“I’m talking to you.” said Du Gu Shang whose voice was sounding colder and colder. Lin Feng surprisingly wasn’t paying attention to him. Du Gu Shang had a prestigious social status, how could Lin Feng ignore him in front of everybody?

Lin Feng slowly turned around and said to Du Gu Shang: “Do I know you?”

Du Gu Shang was astonished and then smiled coldly: “I, of course, don’t know you so you most likely don’t know me either. People who know me don’t dare ignore me. What’s your name?”

“You overestimate yourself.” said Lin Feng while smiling and continued: “Even though I don’t know you, I unfortunately heard your unsavoury name which is normal considering the you show off in front of everybody, Du Gu Shang.”

“Huh?” Du Gu Shang narrowed his eyes. Lin Feng surprisingly knew who he was but still dared act that way towards him.

“Since you know who I am, I will show you my methods. Slap your own face, kneel three times and kowtow nine times, once you’re done, I will forgive all of your mistakes from today.” Du Gu Shang sounded cold and was releasing oppressing energy. His mouth was filled with endless arrogance and coldness. He thought that releasing a little bit of Qi and force would be enough to make Lin Feng collapse.

However, Lin Feng was calmly standing there, motionless, with a cold smile on his face. His facial expression hadn't changed at all. It actually seemed like Lin Feng hadn't sensed the oppressive energy at all.

“Slap my own face? Kneel three times and kowtow nine times?” Lin Feng raised his head and slowly walked towards Du Gu Shang. Du Gu Shang was surprised and released more and more of his Qi.

“With so little Qi and force, don't you think that you're making a fool of yourself?” said Lin Feng making the whole crowd look on while astonished. What an insane guy, humiliating Du Gu Shang.

Besides, Lin Feng was a military student so his fellow military students were all excited, especially since Du Gu Shang was a political student.

“You can only talk big.” said Du Gu Shang who released an even stronger energy which pressures the entire atmosphere.

Around Lin Feng's body appeared sword Qi, it was extremely powerful, his entire body was like a sword, extremely sharp.

The crowd was astonished. Their hearts were pounding. These energies were... terrifying.

Was this the same Lin Feng who had fought against Hei Mo?

## Chapter 253: The Tyrant

---

Du Gu Shang also started shaking violently, he was stupefied by Lin Feng.

“How is this possible? How could you be so strong?” Du Gu Shang couldn’t believe it his eyes. He had never seen Lin Feng. Besides, he was so young. At that moment, he was releasing sword energy, the energy looked extremely solid and thick.

At the academy, there wasn’t such a strong student.

While Du Gu Shang’s heart was pounding, Lin Feng had arrived in front of him in the blink of an eye.

The Earth Fusion wasn’t only embodied by Lin Feng’s sword-play. It also affected Lin Feng’s speed, he had broken through to a special cultivation dimension. Since he was in perfect symbiosis with the earth, he could move using the power of the earth.

“WHAP!”

Du Gu Shang’s body was blown away. A large red mark appeared on his face, the mark was from an open hand slap.

The crowd was stupefied. How scary. He was a cultivator of the eighth Ling Qi layer and he was also ranked fourth amongst the top disciples of the academy... Surprisingly, he couldn’t withstand a single slap from Lin Feng and was sent flying.

The mean girl was also astonished. Her mouth was wide open. She looked as if she had seen something absolutely extraordinary.

Du Gu Shang, who was extremely powerful and influential, had been slapped in the face by a young man. Who was he?

Yun Xi looked happy and amazed, Lin Feng was so frivolous and unruly.

The view of Du Gu Shang getting slapped was even more shocking than seeing Hei Mo being defeated.

“Alright.”

“He deserves to be one of the military students, these students in governmental affairs can only talk big but in reality, they cannot withstand a single blow.” said the people in the crowd, as expected, many people couldn’t stand Du Gu Shang.

Du Gu Shang’s facial expression was terrifying, he looked like an injured animal, he was looking at Lin Feng in a ice-cold way and said: “Who are you?”

“Me?” said Lin Feng while pointing at himself and then immediately said, sounding cold and detached: “I am a nobody, I cannot rival you.” said Lin Feng in the tone of a joke. Yun Xi giggled, she couldn’t help but burst into laughter. If Lin Feng was a nobody, what was Du Gu Shang?

“A nobody?” for a moment, Du Gu Shang didn’t understand, then he heard some people laugh who were saying: “How ridiculous, he was making fun of him, saying that that he couldn’t rival with him but now that he’s facing him, he got slapped silly and cannot even withstand a single blow. If I were him, I wouldn’t in the imperial city, I would get the hell out of here and run as far as I could go.”

When Du Gu Shang heard that person making fun of him, a hideous expression appeared on his face.

Lin Feng.

He finally understood thanks to that person who was making fun of him. The one who had just slapped him was Lin Feng. He had just said that Lin Feng couldn’t rival him.

At that moment, the mean girl was shaking. Lin Feng, that was Lin Feng...

Actually, he was much stronger than Du Gu Shang.

“You will regret what you did today.” threatened Du Gu Shang sounding cold and detached. Immediately after, he turned around and started leaving. He had been humiliated, he couldn’t stay there.

“Wait, wait.” said Lin Feng in a cold tone.

Du Gu Shang thus stopped and slowly turned around. He then looked at Lin Feng in a cold way.

“Are you thinking of leaving like that?” said Lin Feng as if he was amused.

“What do you want?” said Du Gu Shang who was surprised. Would Lin Feng dare to continue?

“A moment ago, you wanted me to slap my own face, kneel three times and kowtow nine times in front of you. Now, you found out that you are much weaker than me, do you think that you can leave that easily?” Lin Feng made it sound like he had no choice but to follow Du Gu Shang’s lead and continued: “What kind of person do you think I am?”

When the crowd heard Lin Feng, they got excited. They wanted to see what Lin Feng would do to Du Gu Shang.

“Show me how it is done, slap your own face, kneel three times and kowtow nine times in front of me.” said Lin Feng sounding imposing, domineering, and whose voice was even colder. His smile had disappeared, and his tone had become sharp, like his sword.

“You want me to slap my own face, kneel three times, and kowtow nine times in front of you?” said Du Gu Shang, who couldn’t believe it, Lin Feng dared request such a thing from him?

“It seems that when I speak, people like you think they can ignore me, therefore I will have to do it myself.” said Lin Feng in a low voice. Suddenly, he rushed forward like a madman, his silhouette vanished in a flash, without hesitation, he unleashed an attack.

Du Gu Shang’s heart was pounding, how fast was Lin Feng! In a flash, Lin Feng had arrived in front of him and Lin Feng’s finger was pointing at him.

The tip of his finger was filled with sword Qi and it suddenly rushed towards Du Gu Shang at incredible speed.

Hastily, Du Gu Shang raised his fist to block the attack but suddenly, a long and horrible shriek filled the air, Du Gu Shang’s face suddenly turned deathly pale. His fist had been impaled by Lin Feng’s finger.

“WHAP!”

Lin Feng slapped Du Gu Shang once more and the sound echoed through the atmosphere.

“WHAP! WHAP! WHAP!.....”

Lin Feng was unceasingly slapping Du Gu Shang’s face, the crowd was watching, blankly staring at that scene. Du Gu Shang’s arrogant face was going through a thorough beating and his heart

was filling with coldness.

Du Gu Shang had been ignorant. Lin Feng was playing with him as if he was a toy. Lin Feng was violently slapping his face in front of everyone.

“Since I have to do it myself, there is an extra fee included.”

When Lin Feng stopped talking, two loud sounds successively filled the atmosphere. Du Gu Shang was kneeling down and crawling on the ground and kowtowing in front of Lin Feng. He was extremely proud and usually so arrogant, this was a huge humiliation for him.

His heart was pounding and he was sweating cold sweat. What a cruel guy!

“If I am a nobody who cannot rival you, what are you doing kneeling down and kowtowing me?” said Lin Feng in a disdainful way while glaring at Du Gu Shang who was crawling on the ground. Du Gu Shang had just broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer, when facing a cultivator in the Earth Fusion Dimension, he basically couldn’t withstand a single finger.

Lin Feng had already fought against cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer and nearly killed one.

Du Gu Shang lowered his head, his heart was filled with endless hatred and wrath. A moment later, a foot pressed against his



lower-jaw and he heard Lin Feng's cold voice.

“Get lost!”

Lin Feng only said these two words and Du Gu Shang's body was sent flying away.

Lin Feng didn't look at him anymore, he then turned to Yun Xi, warmly smiled at her and said: “If you want me to take care of her, I'll immediately handle her.”

By “her”, Lin Feng obviously meant the mean girl. At that moment, the mean girl was shaking and her heart was pounding.

Yun Xi just said, in a cold and detached way, in the tone of a joke: “It's best not to touch such filthy people.”

“Alright, forget it then, I don't like touching them either.” said Lin Feng while laughing softly. Immediately after, he pointed at the fifth room of cultivation tower, it was empty, it was the place Du Gu Shang had seized.

“You want to go into the cultivation tower?”

Yun Xi shivered, she looked at Lin Feng and said in a soft voice: “I cannot go in.”

“I'll help you.” said Lin Feng while smiling. He grabbed her hand

and started walking. Immediately after, Lin Feng jumped into the air.

Yun Xi was having a panic attack, she closed her eyes in fear and she could barely open them, she realized that she was high in the air and flying, her heart was pounding from fear of falling. Then, she looked at the handsome young man on her side and her heart was filled with endless softness and tenderness.

“What an amazing agility technique.” thought the crowd when they saw Lin Feng and the girl. He was high up in the air, how powerful!

When he arrived high in the air, Lin Feng stood on the energy from the atmosphere and started walking on the invisible force. Lin Feng and Yun Xi shot across the sky like an arrow and landed on the fifth room of the cultivation tower which was a few hundred meters in the air.

When Yun Xi saw the small silhouettes on the ground beneath the tower, she had the impression she was in a dream and nothing was real.

“Train hard.” said Lin Feng while smiling at Yun Xi. Immediately after, he moved again and was immediately on the third room. He immediately entered in a room.

There was nobody in the third room either. It belonged to the death god Wen Ao Xue. Lin Feng obviously could use the room if he pleased.

If there had been nobody in the other rooms, he would have gone there as well, regardless of who they belonged to.

Concerning Yun Xi, when she saw Lin Feng move away, her dream to practice in that cultivation tower had become reality but she wasn't excited, in her heart, she felt like she had lost something.

Everything was like a dream, but that natural, unrestrained and frivolous young man was just a passerby. He was so outstanding that she would only be able to look up at him in the sky spreading his wings and flying away.

What Yun Xi didn't know was that, at that moment, the two girls with whom she had come with were still down on the ground and were jealous of her. They envied her because having the opportunity to practice in that tower was something that they were all yearning for.

Concerning the mean girl, at that moment, her heart was filled with regret.

The people in the crowd had different facial expressions. Lin Feng seemed to be a person that nobody could prevent from moving forwards.

At that moment, nothing of what had happened was present in Lin Feng's heart. At that moment, in his heart and thoughts, there were only three things, the strong cultivator's memories that were

separated into three parts.

They were all extremely powerful.

# Chapter 254: Back To Yangzhou City

---

The Surplus Souls technique could divide the soul into many surplus souls filled with extreme power, the power to control the ten thousand things of creation.

Lin Feng was drowned in these memories. He was inspecting the martial skills and agility techniques that the Zun cultivator had been using, they were extremely powerful. There were also things about fabricating weapons and concocting pills. They required the usage of surplus souls. After he learnt how to master the Surplus Souls technique and having to strengthening his soul, then it was possible to practice the other techniques. Everything would be easier to learn with a stronger soul, besides, the power to control energy would be enhanced.

Therefore, Lin Feng, after analyzing the situation, had decided to practice the Surplus Souls technique.

Before being able to learn how to use Surplus Souls, Lin Feng had to first comprehend the soul and how it functioned. It would enable him to have a clear and distinct perception of the existence of his soul. It would enable him to pierce through the mysteries of the soul. He would be able to transfer his thoughts directly into his soul.

This was however the most basic step. The technique included a method to visualize the soul and understand its complexities.

Besides, Lin Feng had access to the earth fusion dimension and

had a strong power of comprehension. He only needed a few days to master the method of visualizing his soul.

Lin Feng didn't know that the strong cultivator during his training, had required two years to be able to see his soul. Lin Feng could do it in such a short time thanks to the earth fusion and because his soul was already very powerful.

At that moment, in Lin Feng's mind, he could see a dark illusion of himself, as if it was his dark self, a black silhouette, as if was the essence of his soul.

In his previous life, Lin Feng didn't dare to imagine looking at a spirit. On the path of cultivation, it was said that after dying, one could see their own soul, besides, it was also said that it was possible to transfer the power of the souls.

The second step of the technique of the Surplus Souls was the spirit movement, it was about comprehending the soul on a much higher level, it was about being able to control the soul and move it to your will, otherwise it wouldn't be possible to use the surplus soul and it would be useless.

In comparison with the first step, which was also about understanding the soul, Lin Feng found the second step was much easier. He was quickly able to achieve the spirit movement and even managed to make his soul leave his body and move as a spirit.

The third step of the technique of the Surplus Souls was the incomplete soul, it was the most critical step.

This step was different from the two others. The incomplete soul was the main part of the technique which made it so powerful. This step was extremely important. While practicing cultivation, the soul would separate into many surplus souls, one or two, but a strong cultivator could obtain a hundred or a thousand surplus souls. The most terrifying cultivators who existed could obtain billions of surplus souls to an almost endless number. The strength of the soul was as vast and powerful as the universe.

Lin Feng was sitting cross-legged. At that moment, in the air, there was a shadow floating in the atmosphere. If somebody had been there and could see that shadow, they would have realized that it looked like a perfect double for Lin Feng. That was Lin Feng's soul.

At that moment, Lin Feng closed his eyes and took a deep breath. There was an image in Lin Feng's hand, he then exhaled and said in a low voice: "Split!"

After that, an invisible strength spread through his body and a violent pain overcame all of his senses, he started shaking and his heart was pounding so hard it felt like it would burst.

How painful! Lin Feng had the feeling he was being cut into pieces by a thousand swords. The pain was similar to when his Celestial Spirit was awakened. Lin Feng immediately fainted. He couldn't stand the intense pain that filled his consciousness.

At that moment, Lin Feng felt another pain within his soul.

Lin Feng's soul started to struggle, a small black piece was reluctantly torn from Lin Feng's soul. That black piece turned into a surplus soul. At that moment, Lin Feng's body was shaking and shivering, he was agonizing, the pain was unreal.

Finally, the surplus soul was formed and floated in the air. It was a very small part of Lin Feng's soul.

His entire body was covered with a cold sweat. Lin Feng couldn't help but smile wryly. Practicing cultivation required an infinite amount of determination. He had only managed to make a single surplus soul. The technique of the surplus souls was revered but many cultivators wouldn't dare practice it because of the risks. If a cultivator wanted to divide his spirit into a thousand surplus souls, he had to endure terrible pain for each soul. Besides, there was still a chance that it could fail and not form a surplus soul. Sometimes, they would even stop when splitting their soul as the pain was too much.

Only those who had an iron determination could practice such techniques, without determination and willpower, the body and the mind would not be able to handle such incredible pain.

Lin Feng's heart fluctuated again. That small black surplus soul floating in the air moved towards the whole soul, they seemed to be in harmony with each other as if they were connected, yet they remained separate.

Lin Feng calmly took a few breathes, which allowed him to calm



down. His heart started to violently pound again as his body became tense, this was what it took to understand the soul, suddenly a new surplus soul appeared.

With an incredible strength, it was possible to reach the heavens, to receive other people's worship, but how difficult was it? One had to go through incredible pain, but to what extent?

Only those with an indestructible willpower and determination could reach the heavens and were able to reach great achievements.

The Zun layer cultivator could kill millions of people and be worshipped, while a weak cultivator could only get bullied and humiliated. For example, during the war, Han Mo and Yan Yu Ping Sheng had appeared, they could kill a few thousand soldiers very easily, with them involved, it was easy to determine the outcome of a battle. One attack carried out by them from the sky could annihilate an endless amount of soldiers on the ground. A melody from a zither could leave the battlefield littered with corpses.

These people were extremely strong, Lin Feng needed to become stronger. He needed to reach the heavens and have the power to kill anyone who would bully him.

Lin Feng wasn't aware of how much time had elapsed. At that moment, outside of the tower there were many people who were calmly waiting.

Amongst them was a from the government of the Imperial City.

Lin Feng's titles were ready and he could receive them officially, but he was still in the cultivation room which could not be disturbed.

The person sent by the government didn't leave, he also didn't disturb Lin Feng. He was only waiting there calmly. He didn't look impatient or annoyed at all.

Many people were waiting outside of the cultivation tower as well and were surprised. That person had already arrived a few days back and was surprisingly still waiting for Lin Feng. Lin Feng was really prestigious.

That person from the government didn't even dare to disturb Lin Feng in his cultivation room. He was waiting there even though he didn't know how much time Lin Feng would need before being done with his practice.

At that moment, when looking up at the majestic tower, more precisely at the fourth room, the door of the closed cultivation room started moving and slowly opened itself. The crowd was stupefied.

A silhouette came out of it. That silhouette immediately jumped in the air and at the moment when it fell down to the ground, an invisible energy emerged and positioned itself to cushion the shock. The silhouette gently landed on the ground.

That person was wearing a long gown, carrying an ancient sword

on his back. It was precisely Lin Feng.

When the person from the Imperial City saw him come down, they smiled and went towards him while saying: “Lin Feng, Your Highness has asked us to come and hand this certificate to you which certifies your titles. From now on, you are the owner of Yangzhou City.”

After that, the person handed over a certificate to Lin Feng which was purple and gold in colour.

“Thank you and sorry for the trouble.” said Lin Feng while receiving his certificate. It was written in big and majestic characters, “Chi Xie Officer, Marquis, Yangzhou City Fief”.

“You’re welcome. I have fulfilled my duty. I’m leaving now.”

That person smiled again and immediately turned around as they abruptly left. That person had been waiting there for a few days to personally deliver the titles to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng packed up his titles and smiled. He turned around and looked at a person who was glaring at him. It was Du Gu Shang who was staring at him with an evil look.

On that day, after having been humiliated by Lin Feng, he had gone back to his clan to bring people to kill Lin Feng but his clan refused to fight against Lin Feng. In the future, his clan forbade him from causing Lin Feng any trouble.

Written on Lin Feng's robe was a name, "Duan Wu Ya", if he killed Lin Feng, he had to remember that he was part of Duan Wu Ya's faction.

Even though Du Gu Shang hated him, he still had no say in the matter. If he didn't receive the help of his clan. Relying on his own strength, he couldn't kill Lin Feng.

Lin Feng raised his head, looked at another room of the cultivation tower. The door was still closed. Yun Xi was probably still inside.

"Du Gu Shang, if anything happens to her, no one can save you." said Lin Feng extremely coldly, deadly Qi was released from his body. Du Gu Shang was astonished and terrified, he was shaking. Lin Feng had only said a few words but it had been enough to terrify him.

Du Gu Shang's facial expression was extremely ugly. He really wanted to teach Yun Xi a lesson., but Lin Feng was threatening him. Besides, being threatened by Lin Feng was a new humiliation. His cheeks were burning. Everybody was looking at him and laughing.

"Don't forget what I said." said Lin Feng indifferently. Immediately after, he left. The end of the year was approaching, Lin Feng had to go back to Yangzhou City.

# Chapter 255: Blade of the Wind!

---

On an ancient road, there were many people on horses galloping towards Yangzhou City.

Galloping on the ancient road was notably one girl. She was wearing a red chang pao. She looked powerful and was also very beautiful. Her eyes revealed her arrogance.

“Qian Qian, this time, when we arrive in Yangzhou City, you will be able to demonstrate your extraordinary talents and abilities. Everybody in the clan will be extremely proud of you.”

At that moment, a young man said that to girl in the red chang pao. He looked excited. That young man was Lin Hong.

Next to Lin Hong was Lin Qian, his sister. Everybody in the Lin Clan was proud to be associated with Lin Qian.

These days, Lin Qian had become more mature, the Qi emerging from her body was extraordinary.

One year in the Imperial City had enabled Lin Qian to advance from the first Ling Qi layer, to break through to the fourth Ling Qi layer. She was a real genius. She had gone through such difficult training to accomplish those results. Lin Qian wanted to become a dragon amongst mortals. She was arrogant and wanted to look down on other people from above. Such a personality required her to have a strict determination, in order to unceasingly become stronger.

“Brother, you are also quite strong. There aren’t many who can rival with you in Yangzhou City.” said Lin Qian calmly. The sound of her voice floated in the wind and reached Lin Hong’s ears which made a smile appear on his face. After having acquired both wealth and prestige, they were going back to their hometown where everybody would be proud of them.

“Qian Qian, I’m still too weak in comparison with you.” said Lin Hong while smiling. Actually, she was indeed much stronger than him. Besides, one of the eight high-officials, Chu Zhan Peng, was interested in her which made a lot of people envious. Lin Qian and her friends were all disciples of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and they were more talented than Lin Hong, but he was happily following his sister in the group. Chu Zhan Peng was their source of inspiration.

Lin Feng was the piece of trash that the Lin Clan expelled. The last time they saw him, he was extremely strong. They hadn’t seen him for a while but no doubt that he had become even stronger.

Lin Qian didn’t know about Lin Feng’s new title of Marquis, Lin Hong and her had been practicing in a cultivation room until the annual meeting. They wanted to be as strong as possible when they went back to Yangzhou City.

Right after leaving her cultivation room, she jumped on horseback and rushed to Yangzhou City.

On the same ancient road, there was another girl wearing fire-red

clothes, she was also riding a horse and rushing to Yangzhou City.

Na Lan Feng looked at the young man next to her. She was smiling softly and tenderly.

“Du Gu, thank you for accompanying me to Yangzhou City.” said Na Lan Feng.

She was a girl in love. Du Gu Xiao was a member of the Du Gu Clan. The Du Gu clan was a clan tied to the imperial court. He had powerful connections. Besides, he was also extremely powerful. He was Na Lan Feng’s boyfriend.

Na Lan Feng and Du Gu Xiao had been in a relationship for two years now but it was secret. Na Lan Feng didn’t take offense though because she was proud to be Du Gu Xiao’s girlfriend and she was in love.

Na Lan Feng was the daughter of the Na Lan clan of Yangzhou, but in comparison with the Du Gu clan who had ministers within the court, the Na Lan clan was nothing. They were not even worth looking at. Na Lan Feng knew this was the case, but Du Gu Xiao had accepted to go accompany her to Yangzhou City which was giving her a great deal of face. She was very touched by him accompanying her.

“We’ve been together for so long, I told you, I will help you rise through the social ladder.” said Du Gu Xiang calmly. Na Lan Feng looked delighted. Obtaining a higher social status was her biggest ambition.

“Eeeya!”

Na Lan Feng urged on her horse which dashed faster, making her long hair and red clothes flutter in the wind. Her heart was galloping at full speed, just like the horse.

“Lin Qian of the Lin Clan, I wonder if you can fight against me?”

Na Lan Feng looked extremely impatient. This time, in Yangzhou City, everybody would see Du Gu Xiao escorting her and would be surprised.

At that moment, Lin Qian and Na Lan Feng were going back to Yangzhou City as heroes and expected everyone to worship them. They thought that everybody was going to consider them as goddesses.

Lin Qian and Na Lan Feng didn't know that, at the moment when they had already been travelling for a while, rushing over to Yangzhou City, outside of the Imperial City, two extremely precious dragon-colt horses had just departed.

There was a handsome young man and a beautiful young girl riding these two Dragon-Colt horses.

The boy was handsome and clean, he looked heroic. The girl was wearing clothes whiter than snow and was extremely beautiful. She looked like a celestial being.



Lin Feng turned around and looked at the Imperial City from outside. Life was so fleeting. Time passed at the speed of light. Nobody could predict anything.

Lin Feng could still remember the year before when he and his father were expelled from the Lin Clan. Back then, he had shown Yangzhou City how strong he was and returned to the Yun Hai Sect.

But when he arrived at the Yun Hai Sect, it was destroyed and its members had been slaughtered. Lin Feng had then gone to the Imperial City and had joined the Celestial Academy. Concerning the future, it was filled with uncertainties.

A year had already passed and Lin Feng was just as determined and motivated as before. He was high-spirited and full of determination. That year hadn't been like the others, he had gotten familiar with this new world and gained his own power.

For someone who had come from another world, he had quickly become accustomed to the world of cultivation. He had broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer and had learnt how to penetrate into a special cultivation dimension, the earth fusion dimension. Everybody found his talent amazing.

Lin Feng was looking at Meng Qing, who was riding next to him, he had a soft and tender smile on his face. It had only been a short time since he had met the young girl, but she was following him everywhere. Without complaining, she just silently and secretly

followed him everywhere. Everything she did was for Lin Feng as if that girl had been sent from heaven to watch over him.

Meng Qing noticed that Lin Feng was staring at her. She had a strange facial expression for a second and then looked at the vast and boundless road before them. She was calm, serene yet as cold as ice, like an ice goddess.

“Meng Qing, do you remember the first time we rode a horse?” said Lin Feng while smiling. Meng Qing slightly nodded, of course she knew.

“Well then we should ride one horse, like we did back then.” said Lin Feng with a sly smile. He then jumped up in the air and immediately landed behind Meng Qing.

The Dragon Colt horse neighed and galloped even faster, which made Meng Qing’s body lean backwards against Lin Feng’s chest, he took advantage of the situation and took Meng Qing into his arms. Both of them were extremely close to each other as if they were in an embrace.

That move made Meng Qing shiver from head to toe. This guy.....

“I will lead the horse.” said Lin Feng while smile wholeheartedly. He then grabbed Meng Qing’s hands which were holding the reins and the horse galloped even faster.

When Meng Qing sensed Lin Feng's hands holding hers, she felt an electric shock run through her body. She could feel Lin Feng's chest pressed against her body, she had a strange sensation in her heart, as if she was floating on clouds. She didn't push him back. She just calmly sat on the horse, leaning against Lin Feng's chest.

It was very calm, peaceful, and warm.

.....

In a distant place, quite far from Yangzhou City, there was a chain of mountains. Surprisingly, there were many people on one of the mountains and they were very agitated.

These people all released a strong Qi, some of them were fighting, some others were practicing cultivation to the side.

On the mountain, there were also many horses, Chi Xie armored-horses.

In the mountains, above a precipice was a single silhouette. That man was closing their eyes and could feel the wind against his body. He had the impression of being absent from the material world.

That person stayed like that for a while and then abruptly opened his eyes, the dazzling light of a blade flashed through his eyes. On that person's face, a huge word was carved: Dao. That person looked extremely brutal and aggressive.

“Blade of the Wind!” said that person in a low voice. A long blade cut through the air like it was a blade made from wind. It was almost invisible and inaudible, except for a magnificent and resplendent silver light which was diffused.

“Kacha!” a small sound emerged and in the distance, a huge rock was cut into pieces.

“Hehe....” Ba Dao seemed satisfied of himself. He put his blade back in his back and gazed into the distance. Immediately after, in the distance, he saw two silhouettes riding one horse coming towards the mountain where there were many people.

“He finally arrived.” When Ba Dao saw the two people approaching, he seemed really happy and smiled. The Chi Xie troops had been waiting there in the mountains for them, they were waiting to go to Yangzhou City.

## Chapter 256: Make Him Apologize!

---

The end of the year in Yangzhou City was a happy event. The juniors who were practicing outside of their hometown usually came back to see their families. At that moment, Yangzhou City was lively.

The guards raised their heads on the top on the gate. They looked domineering and majestic.

There was a continuous flow of pedestrians whispering things in the city.

“Have you heard that the prodigy of the Lin Clan Lin Qian, came back to Yangzhou City? Now, Lin Qian is terrific. She is a student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and has a high social status. She is even stronger than some elders of her clan. Besides, some students of the Holy Courtyard followed her. That’s really amazing.” said some to one of the crowd in a low voice. They looked envious. Lin Qian was amazingly strong and was the pride of the Lin Clan. Thanks to her, the rise of the Lin Clan was destined.

“Hehe, so what? Don’t you know that when Na Lan Feng came back, Na Lan Xiong organized a grand banquet and many noble people attended? Besides, the Lin Clan wasn’t invited. Na Lan Xiong did it on purpose because his daughter Na Lan Feng has brought back a young man with her. His name is Du Gu Xiao, he is related to some of the Imperial Ministers, one person who controls several thousands upon thousands. I don’t dare think about such people.” said the person next to them. They were surprised.

Everywhere in Xue Yue, an Imperial Minister was an extremely high status, they were extraordinary people. Na Lan Feng had the good fortune to get acquainted with someone, whose relatives were Imperial Ministers. It would enable the Na Lan Clan to rise splendidly.

“How terrific! The Na Lan Clan and the Lin Clan both want to rise, the two other clans cannot rival them any longer, all they can do is side with those in power.”

“Absolutely, last year, during the annual competition of Yangzhou City, Na Lan Feng and Lin Qian were both extremely strong but after that, Bai Yuan Hao had appeared, he was even stronger than them. Oh I just remembered, there was Lin Feng as well, the one who was expelled from the Lin Clan, I don’t what he’s been doing recently.”

“Lin Feng? What could he do? He doesn’t have an influential background, he must be leading a vagrant life and roaming the streets. Maybe Lin Qian and Na Lan Feng have already gotten rid of him, and even if they haven’t, Lin Qian and Na Lan Feng have become so strong that Lin Feng could never catch up with them.” said someone while sighing and shaking their head.

At the annual competition of Yangzhou City, neither Lin Qian nor Na Lan Feng had been the most brilliant young talent, instead, it had been an extremely frivolous young man, Lin Feng.

These days, they hadn’t received any news. Maybe he had died somewhere outside. Of course, nobody was really sure.

Everyone was talking about Lin Qian and Na Lan Feng, the two prodigies of Yangzhou City. Every year at the end of the year, people used to gossip about the strong cultivators each year, but that year was particularly exciting, there were these two extremely strong and powerful female cultivators and they were coming back stronger than ever.

Occasionally, on the road, Lin Feng's name could be heard as well. People were usually just mentioning his name without being too interested.

“Boom....boom....”

Noises were emerging from the distance and spread through the atmosphere. It sounded like galloping horses but it didn't seem plausible.

How could horses emit such a concentrated and synchronized sound while galloping? Only a magnificent army with veterans could emit such sounds.

The crowd in Yangzhou City was, however, still walking around in the city, leisurely and carefree. They didn't notice anything strange.

“Boom, boom boom boom...”

The sound was getting louder and louder. Many people were a bit

surprised, trying to concentrate and listen to see if there was anything strange.

Besides, the sound was getting more and more intense. The ground was even starting to shake.

The crowd was stupefied. They looked in the direction of the Yangzhou City gate. In the distance, it seemed like there was a cloud of dust rising into the sky.

“What’s going on?””

All the people were gradually noticing it. There was a massive cloud of dust. Besides, that sound was really the sound of galloping horses, how loud, it made their hearts tremble.

Some red silhouettes gradually appeared in their field of vision. They were all wearing red armor. The horses were red as well. They all emitted a strong Qi as they rushed through the air. They were galloping towards Yangzhou City at full speed and a cloud of dust was rising around them, looking like a hurricane.

“Boom boom boom.....”

Even though the guards at the top of the city gate had a position which enabled them to see into the distance, what was moving towards them seemed like a boundless dust cloud. Their hearts were pounding like crazy.



An army. Surprisingly, it was an army. That was a terrifying and well trained army of veterans.

It was the first time that the city guards saw such a strong Qi. Such a huge army in a perfect formation was also something breathtaking. They had the impression that their hearts were beating in their throats.

The guards weren't the only ones, the population was also panicking while the army was moving nearer and nearer.

Surprisingly, they were armored-horses, it was a huge army of armored-horses. Most people had never seen such a huge army of armored-horses, it seemed like the ground would cave in under their hoofs.

The ground was violently shaking, everybody was absolutely dumbstruck. Why would such an army come to Yangzhou City?

"Quickly, quickly, close the gate!" shouted some guards on top of the gate in panic.

"Shut the hell up, we have to keep it open, if somebody closes the gate, I'll kill him!" shouted the leader of the guards. He was furious at those bastards who wanted to die. With such an army of armored-horses, if the gate was closed, a single attack would be enough to destroy it. Besides, if they made the army angry, such an army could massacre the entire city.

Amongst the guards on the city gate, none of them had the courage to fight. They were scared to death and their faces deathly pale. None of them had ever seen such a huge army in perfect formation.

That sort of army was only seen on a battlefield but not in a small town like Yangzhou City.

“Quickly, go and tell the head of the city, hurry up!” shouted one of the guards. Obviously, they didn’t know what to do. All they could think about was telling Na Lan Xiong.

“Roger.” said a few guards when they heard the order and then immediately left. After all, who wanted to stay there? If the army attacked, they would all die.

After that, when the vast army arrived near the Yangzhou City gate, they slowed down. They stopped before the gate of the city and didn’t enter it.

Even though the army was just calmly waiting there, they were still releasing extremely strong Qi. It enveloped the gate of Yangzhou City as well as the crowd on and around it. Everyone within the city felt like they were being suffocated by the intense Qi.

How monstrous. The red armor, red horses, the image was shocking almost like a psychological attack. It was too much for the crowd.

They had never thought that someday, such an army would appear in Yangzhou City.

At that moment, amongst the army, a silhouette emerged and raised their head, looked at the people on top of the gate and said: “Listen, from now on, Yangzhou City is the fief of the Chi Xie Marquis. Everything in Yangzhou City now belongs to the officer of the Chi Xie army. Now, bring the head of the city to come and greet him.”

The Chi Xie Marquis, the Chi Xie Officer, how powerful and majestic. Besides, he was making the head of the city come to greet them. They definitely had an extremely high social status.

So that’s how it was, the Chi Xie Marquis was the owner of Yangzhou City, but nobody knew who this person was.

The crowd felt a bit relieved, since the fief of Yangzhou City belonged to the Chi Xie Marquis, the army wasn’t going to attack the city. That huge army hadn’t come with malicious intent.

“Go. Quickly bring the head of the city here!” shouted the leader of the guards, on the top of the gate, to one guard who wasn’t moving. That person nodded and abruptly left in the direction of the government. He hadn’t clearly heard the words of the Chi Xie soldiers though, he had only heard when he was told to bring the head of the city to greet them.

The government was a huge and vast place. There were tables everywhere. The head of the city, Na Lan Xiong had organized an

annual banquet to which many wealthy and noble cultivators were participating. He hadn't invited the Lin Clan but the atmosphere was pleasant and lively

At that moment, many people were proposing toasts. It seemed that Na Lan Xiong was extremely proud because of his new son-in-law and he was so excited that he was unceasingly drinking.

“Master, master!”

At that moment, a worried voice spread in the air interrupting the crowd. Na Lan Xiong frowned and looked at the distance seeing a guard worriedly and hastily rushing over to him.

“A huge army is outside the city and we don't know who they are and what they are doing here.” said the guard who was uninterruptedly sweating. The crowd was stupefied, an army had come to the city?

At that moment, another silhouette appeared and was running in their direction.

“Stop!” said Na Lan Xiong. “Are you here because of the army too? What is that army doing right now?”

“They want you to go and greet them.” said the second guard who had arrived. Na Lan Xiong frowned and looked pensive.

“Tell their leader to come here, pay his respects and apologize for

his offense.”

At that moment, a cold and detached voice came from the host seat. It was Du Gu Xiao, he was furious and half-drunk already. Surprisingly, there were people who dared disturb him during the banquet and besides that, they also wanted Na Lan Xiong to come and greet them. Since Du Gu Xiao was there, they had to give him face, he was there so no matter who it was, they had to come pay respects and respectfully apologize for offending him.

Many people sighed, he was really worthy of his social status. He was extremely strong. They were all panicking and he, instead, ordered the troublemakers to come and apologize for their offense. Du Gu Xiao was wildly arrogant and presumptuous.

The guards looked petrified and nervous: “But.....”

“There is no but! Tell him to get over here and apologize for his offense. Say that Du Gu Xiao gave the order, otherwise they will regret the consequences.”

Du Gu Xiao stood up and released some cold Qi. His voice was ice-cold as well.

The guard was surprised and blankly staring at Du Gu Xiao. When he saw the coldness in his eyes, he immediately nodded and said: “Roger.”

When they finished talking, the two guards abruptly left.

“Alright, everybody can continue, let’s not let such events ruin our banquet.” said Na Lan Xiong while raising his glass and smiling.

Everybody raised their glass and laughed heartily. Concerning Du Gu Xiao, he went back to his seat and looked calm. In such a small city, no matter how strong the person was, they had to obey him and apologize for their offense.

# Chapter 257: The Apology

---

The Chi Xie troops were calmly waiting outside of the city.

At that moment, one guard came back from the government building. He climbed to the top of the gate and looked at the vast and boundless army. He couldn't help but shake from head to toe.

“Tell him to get over here and apologize for his offense...”

The guard was thinking about these words and they did not sit well in his chest. If he said these words out loud, wouldn't they just kill him?

“Open your mouth!” said an aggressive voice piercing the guard's ears. The guard was shaking. Immediately after, he closed his eyes and said: “The Head of the City said that you should go and apologize for your offense.”

When he finished talking, the guard felt as if he had been relieved from a huge burden. But when the other guards heard what he said, they were astonished. They were all shaking from head to toe while thinking about the reaction of the army. How did that arrogant bastard dare to tell the Chi Xie troops such an audacious thing? When the Chi Xie troops heard the words, they started to release an incredible amount of Qi which created a hurricane which rushed towards the city gate. The entire crowd suddenly felt extremely cold.

How cold. That Qi was piercingly-cold, to the extent that it made

everyone feel a shiver run down their spines.

Lin Feng, on his Dragon-Colt horse, moved forwards. Na Lan Xiong, was he really this brave?

He was wearing a mask, but under his mask he had an incredibly evil grin. Lin Feng said, in a cold tone: “We have been invited to go to the government building to apologize.”

“Roger.” shouted the troops in unison, which caused panic within the crowd. They brandished their spears and headed towards Yangzhou City .

Lin Feng’s voice wasn’t loud, but when the guards and the crowd heard that the troops were going to the government for an apology, they felt that this was not a good thing for the Na Lan Clan. The young man riding the Dragon-Colt horse was probably their officer. How majestic, he could say a few words and the entire army obeyed him.

“BOOM! BOOM!”

The ground started shaking once again. The Chi Xie troops were galloping in perfect harmony which sent terrifying booms through the atmosphere, sounding like thunder. The hearts of the people in the crowd were pounding.

The Chi Xie army transformed into a huge red dragon as it entered Yangzhou City. That huge red dragon seemed like it was



flying through the city.

At that moment, the people were panicking. None of them dared to block the way of the Chi Xie troops, everybody was moving aside.

“What a strong and powerful army! Where are they from? Why have they come to Yangzhou City?”

The people of Yangzhou City were asking themselves many questions. When they saw that huge army with their own eyes, they had the feeling that their heart would explode in their chest. They were way too majestic. The Qi they were releasing was so strong that the people in the crowd had the feeling that their legs lost all power. Some of them were completely frozen, not daring to move.

In the government building, the atmosphere was still lively and joyful. People were still merry and drinking.

At that moment, the ground started shaking as if there was an earthquake. The people present at the banquet were suddenly stupefied and frowned.

Immediately after, the noise of the Chi Xie horses galloping became louder and was unceasingly spreading through the atmosphere.

“What’s going on?”

“What the hell is this?”

Each and every single person who was present at the banquet stood up. Their facial expressions growing rigid, that noise was frightening. What was happening outside?

Na Lan Xiong frowned and gazed into the distance outside the building. He looked lost in thought and seemed to be contemplating the size of the army.

“Father, do not worry. Du Gu Xiao is here, the only reason why such a large army is coming here is because they want to apologize for their mistakes.” said Na Lan Feng while slightly smiling. Du Gu Xiao, with his social status, was not scared of any army.

“Alright.”

Na Lan Xiong slightly nodded and said: “Alright, everyone, let’s drink more! They are coming here to apologize.”

The guests listened to him but they couldn’t ease the fear in their hearts. Were these people really coming to apologize? Why did the guests have the feeling that cold killing intent could be felt from the direction of the army. It seemed like it was coming from the Chi Xie army.

The rumbling sounds were getting louder and louder. When the guard in front of the building saw the army galloping towards him

in the distance, he was astonished.

Red armor, red horses... They looked majestic and cruel. His heart started pounding in his chest.

Only a short moment later, an incredibly vast and boundless army arrived in front of the government building.

“BOOM!”

The sound of destruction spread through the atmosphere. A hurricane emerged and crushed the gate in front of the building.

“BOOM!”

Sounds of things being destroyed filled the atmosphere. Everything in front of the government building had been destroyed. The Chi Xie troops annihilated everything in their path and left no obstacle standing.

After having cleared the path to the entrance of the building. The troops entered the government building. Even though their army was incredibly large, they were still in perfect formation, there wasn't the least bit of chaos in their formation.

Concerning the guards, they were stunned by the sight of the sea of cavalry. They were standing motionless and let the cavalry pass by. They had the impression that the horses could crush them under their hoofs at any moment, but the army was in perfect

formation and simply moved around the guards, not even a hair was touched. They were perfectly accurate with each of their movements. The guards were terrified to be standing in the path of the horses.

People in the government building were panicking and running around like headless chickens. They were scared silly.

The happy laughter and cheerful voices of the banquet had stopped, not because it was covered by the noise from the army, but because nobody felt like laughing anymore.

Everybody was standing up and looking at that vast and majestic sea of Chi Xie horses. They had never been this scared before. Their hearts were violently pounding.

A gigantic and powerful Chi Xie army like that could easily annihilate the city.

Only a glance at these troops on their Chi Xie horses was enough to scare even a hardened soldier.

That army was composed of the most elite troops. Every single soldier was a talented and disciplined cultivator... and there was an army of these powerful cultivators heading in their direction.

The troops suddenly adopted a spiral formation, encircling everybody who was present at the banquet. Not even a single drop of water could trickle through, making everybody unable to

escape, even if they grew wings and attempted to fly out.

At that moment, there wasn't a single person who could escape.

This incredible army of elite troops could destroy anyone's courage.

Na La Xiong's heart was pounding. Such a huge and powerful army had come to apologize.

Du Gu Xiao was frowning, he put down his glass and slowly walked towards the person who was the closest to him.

He looked at the person in front of him, the person was wearing a red armor and a majestic helm. That person's facial expression was ice-cold. He then said: "What guts! You are the Chi Xie army, why have you come to Yangzhou City?"

The Chi Xie troops were elite troops in Xue Yue.

The guests were stupefied. This army was the elite Chi Xie army? That's why they were wearing red armor and had Chi Xie armored-horses.

Nobody paid attention to him. They looked at Du Gu Xiao's performance as if he was a fool. Du Gu Xiao was furious. Mere soldiers dared to make him lose face.

Especially now that he had bragged about how respected and influential he was.

“Who’s your officer? Show yourself and apologise.” Du Gu Xiao shouted. Even though he felt scared standing before such a powerful army, he belonged to the Du Gu Clan, he had the right to be arrogant. His family was incredibly powerful and it was hard to scare him when he had such a high status.

Everybody in the Na Lan Clan treated him like a deity. He was drunk and started to believe that he actually was a deity when inside such a small city. He was extremely arrogant. Besides, he was the one who dared to force the army here, how could he flinch at this moment?

Na Lan Feng stood next to Du Gu Xiao. She was looking coldly at the army. She felt proud of the man she loved. Nobody dared offend the members of the Du Gu Clan. Even the Chi Xie officers wouldn’t dare, after all, she didn’t just pick anyone to be with her.

“You are all extremely audacious, how dare you storm into the government like this?” Na Lan Feng said. She had the impression that her boyfriend was a mighty hero. She wasn’t scared at all because a member of the Du Gu Clan was beside her.

“Show myself? Apologise? Audacious?” Lin Feng mockingly said. He made his horse slowly trot to the front of the army. He was wearing a bronze mask. His expression was ice-cold and evil. He didn’t look at Du Gu Xiao and Na Lan Feng, he was looking directly at Na Lan Xiong.

“Na Lan Xiong, head of Yangzhou City, you wanted me to come here and apologize?”

Na Lan Xiong was astonished. How did Lin Feng know who he was within the crowd?

Lin Feng frowned when he heard Du Gu Xiao interrupt with a shout: “I’m talking to you, didn’t you hear me?”

Lin Feng looked at Du Gu Xiao, another arrogant cultivator acting foolishly.

“What do you want?” said Lin Feng in a cold tone. The crowd was shocked.

Du Gu Xiao was astonished. His face lost all colour. The expression in his eyes turned ice-cold.

“My family name is Du Gu.” said Du Gu Xiao in an arrogant tone.

Lin Feng was surprised, Du Gu?

That name sounded familiar. He had indeed met Du Gu Shang. Lin Feng looked at Du Gu Xiao again and a smile appeared under his bronze mask.

“So what?”

“The Du Gu Clan of the Imperial City.” said Du Gu Xiao aggressively.

“His relatives are part of the Imperial Ministers.” said Na Lan Feng arrogantly.

“Now, get down off your horse and apologize. Then I will pretend that this never happened.” Du Gu Xiao said when he heard Na Lan Feng say the word “Imperial Ministers”. His facial expression also revealing a proud expression.

“Imperial Ministers?” whispered Lin Feng while lowering his head and looking at Du Gu Xiao with a cold stare. He only noticed that, every second, Du Gu Xiao was growing even more arrogant. Indeed, Du Gu Shang and him were both cut from the same cloth.

“Cut one of his arms off.” Lin Feng said in a cold tone, while waving his hand.

Everybody was dumbstruck.



## Chapter 258: Identity!

---

“Cut one of his arms off.”

Lin Feng’s voice was calm, everybody was absolutely petrified.

Lin Feng wanted to cut one of Du Gu Xiao’s arms off?

Du Gu Xiao was related to an Imperial Minister and he would dare to cut his arm off?

Du Gu Xiao’s arrogant expression vanished. His heart was pounding. What did he just hear? After having declared his social status and demanding for Lin Feng to apologize, Lin Feng hadn’t even paid attention to him and calmly ordered his soldiers to cut one of his arms off?

People in the crowd felt like their hearts skipped a beat.

“What did you just say?” asked Na Lan Feng whose heart was pounding. Immediately after, she looked at Lin Feng with an ice-cold glare. Du Gu Xiao was her boyfriend and she was extremely happy to be with him.

When the people of the banquet had learnt that a huge army had come to Yangzhou City, they had all panicked. Only Na Lan Feng and Du Gu Xiao had remained calm and were extremely arrogant. They were the ones who demanded the army come to apologize.

“Listen to me, you want to cut one of my arms off?” said Du Gu Xiao in an ice-cold tone, while releasing some cold Qi. At the same time, a soldier wearing a bronze mask rushed out from the army while releasing some extremely thick and brutal Qi.

“Slash!”

Lin Feng didn't feel like hearing any more words. Ba Dao jumped through the air. A magnificent and bright light filled the atmosphere. In the blink of an eye, it disappeared, the only thing left in the atmosphere was gushing blood.

The entire atmosphere turned completely silent. Everybody was staring at the blood. Their hearts were shaken.

They had really cut off his arm.

That soldier didn't hesitate at all, the Chi Xie officer gave an order and his arm had immediately been completely cut off.

Besides, that bright and dazzling light which flashed through the air remained in their minds, they couldn't think about anything else.

“Ahhhh.....”

The entire atmosphere was invaded by a heavy silence. Du Gu Xiao broke that silence when he uttered a long cry of agony. He was covering his bleeding stump with his other hand, his face was

deathly pale, there wasn't the slightest trace of colour in his face.

Besides, on his side, Na Lan Feng was blankly staring at the scene. Her beautiful cheeks turned white. Had Du Gu Xiao really lost his arm?

“It's over.”

Na Lan Xiong's heart was violently pounding. The Du Gu Clan would never accept the fact that Du Gu Xiao's arm had been cut off and they would hold the Na Lan Clan responsible.

“How could this happen?” thought Na Lan Xiong while feeling enraged. He raised his head and looked at Lin Feng, the officer of the Chi Xie troops, who was wearing a bronze mask.

At that moment, Lin Feng looked at him as well. Behind his mask, his face was as calm and serene as before. He did not care about the events that had just transpired.

“You wanted me to come and apologize?” said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. Na Lan Xiong's facial expression became rigid. He was realizing that Lin Feng might also cut off his arms. This officer was insane. Would it be that simple though?

But at that moment, Na Lan Xiong was surrounded by an army and couldn't escape at all. Lin Feng just had to give the order and the Na Lan Clan would be annihilated.

Na Lan Xiong had listened to Du Gu Xiao and told them to come apologize.

He had asked the officer of the Chi Xie army to come and apologize? Of course, all of this was happening because Na Lan Xiong had trusted Du Gu Xiao too much. After all, his family was tied to Imperial Ministers.

However, he wouldn't have thought that an officer would actually dare to cut off one of Du Gu Xiao's arms, especially when considering his social background.

"Who are you?" said Du Gu Xiao sounding evil while staring at Lin Feng. He wanted to slaughter Lin Feng.

"I am Du Gu Xiao of the Du Gu Clan, our clan has Imperial Ministers... and you dared to cut off my arm?"

"You are dead!" shouted Na Lan Feng while staring at Lin Feng. Her facial expression was hideous.

"Du Gu Clan, Imperial Ministers, I know all of that." said Lin Feng indifferently. He then looked at Du Gu Xiao and said: "What is your relation to Du Gu Shang?"

"Huh?" Du Gu Xiao was surprised, he was staring at Lin Feng: "My older brother. Since you know, how dare you cut off my arm?"

At that moment, his wound was extremely painful.

“Your older brother? You are all the same. You whole clan must be incredibly stupid.” said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. He then added: “Could it be that your brother hasn’t told you? A few days ago, at the Celestial Academy, I slapped him into a stupor and then made him kneel down and kowtow to me.”

Du Gu Xiao was violently shaking and staring at Lin Feng. He was dumbstruck.

Surprisingly... it was him.

He should have thought about this earlier. Chi Xie Officer, Yangzhou City must be his fief, why didn’t he think about it sooner?

That was because in his head, the Chi Xie army should belong to Duan Ren City, but surprisingly they had come to Yangzhou City. He was now realizing that the Chi Xie army hadn’t gone back to Duan Ren City, instead, they had come to the new fief of their officer, a small city that was not worth mentioning.

Lin Feng had set a whole city on fire, had crossed a huge distance to save the princess, he rushed over to the Imperial City to save Liu Cang Lan from being executed, Then he killed Duan Tian Lang’s son in front of him. He was the Marquis of Yangzhou City.

Lin Feng had become a legend in the imperial city. Lin Feng was

absolutely fearless. He didn't even fear Duan Tian Lang and killed his son in front of him, was there anything that Lin Feng didn't dare to do?"

Du Gu Xiao's face was deathly pale. Why did this happen to him? There were Imperial Ministers in his family.

The crowd also noticed that Lin Feng was silent. They were stupefied, he had slapped Du Gu Xiao's brother? He even made him kowtow?

Who was this person? He was truly insane. He wasn't even scared of facing the Du Gu Clan?

Na Lan Feng and Na Lan Xiong saw that Du Gu Xiao had also become silent. They were shaking in fear. Du Gu Xiao, surprisingly, was keeping his mouth closed from fear.

If he remained silent, it meant that Lin Feng was speaking the truth. His brother had really been slapped by Lin Feng and had kowtowed as an apology.

"Who is he?" whispered Na Lan Feng but Du Gu Xiao ignored her. He had a strange smile on his face.

"Good, good."

Du Gu Xiao was almost driven insane. He couldn't do anything against Lin Feng. He wasn't strong enough to rival him and his

clan would not risk getting involved. His brother had even been humiliated by him... All he could do was remain silent.

His brother had been humiliated, he, himself, had just lost an arm, how could he not be driven into madness? That Chi Xie officer was really a terrifying existence.

“Du Gu Xiao demanded the army come and apologise, it seems like he knows the officer but can’t afford to offend him.” thought the people in the crowd. The Na Lan Clan was in trouble.

A moment before, Du Gu Xiao was insufferably arrogant and aggressive, but then his arm was cut off. He didn’t even dare to make another sound. The Na Lan Clan had no escape.

Apologize?

Lin Feng was standing before them, who could stop him?

Everybody wanted to say that it had nothing to do with the Na Lan Clan so that they would be able to avoid a catastrophe.

“Na Lan Xiong, I am the Chi Xie Marquis and Yangzhou City is my fief. I arrived in Yangzhou City and instead of a greeting, you demand an apology, how audacious.” said Lin Feng in an extremely cold tone, making everybody shiver.

“What should be your punishment?” said Lin Feng. Na Lan Xiong’s heart was beating extremely violently. He was the Marquis

of Yangzhou City. He had surprisingly come to receive his fief and Na Lan Xiong refused to greet him and demanded an apology. That was an offense.

Na Lan Xiong remained silent. He only saw Lin Feng turn to the other members of his clan: “What do you think? How should he be punished?”

The crowd was shaking, Lin Feng was terrifying.

“The last person to speak, will die.” said Lin Feng, then suddenly everyone burst into uproar: “Na Lan Xiong is a criminal! He should die!”

When Na Lan Xiong heard that, he evilly stared at the person. The person was flattering him a short moment before and at that moment he was saying that he should die. What a venomous snake!

“Indeed, Na Lan Xiong should die! He definitely has to die!”

“Yes, you’re right, kill him!”

Everybody who was present was replying as quickly as possible scared to be the last person. Lin Feng was smiling under his mask. Finally, he looked at Na Lan Xiong and said: “Did you hear that? Everybody is saying that you should die.”

When Na Lan Xiong saw that Lin Feng might kill him, and when



he saw Lin Feng's calm eyes, he had the feeling that he knew him from somewhere.

“I know you. Who are you?” said Na Lan Xiong to Lin Feng. He realized that Lin Feng may have come specifically for him.

“Do you want to know who I am?” said Lin Feng calmly.

“I do.” said Na Lan Xiong while nodding. He, of course wanted to know.

“Alright, I see.”

Lin Feng smiled, he put his hands on his bronze mask and slowly took it off. His face appeared, everybody, including Na Lan Xiong could see him.

At that moment, the atmosphere became entirely silent.

# Chapter 259: Commit Suicide

---

“Lin Feng.”

“It’s Lin Feng, I can’t believe it.”

Their hearts were racing. The officer of the Chi Xie army was surprisingly Lin Feng. Back in the past, Lin Feng had begun to show his brilliant talent but then the Lin Clan and the Na Lan Clan made him their enemy and forced him to leave.

The previous year, during the annual competition, many of the prestigious figures of Yangzhou City had personally seen Lin Feng. All the people present at Na Lan Xiong’s banquet were rich, noble and prestigious figures. Therefore, they could all recognize Lin Feng, that talented young man.

The young man, who was now the officer of a powerful army which made the entire city vibrate, surprisingly was the same delicate and handsome young man they saw during the previous competition.

Nobody would have ever thought of such a thing, even in their dreams.

Besides, how old was Lin Feng? He was not even eighteen years old, and he was already the officer of the Chi Xie army, the Chi Xie Marquis. He already had an army of tens of thousands under his control. That was amazing. Everybody was looking at Lin Feng and wanted to speak but, they all knew to remain silent.

Na Lan Xiong was also shaking. Lin Feng was surprisingly the officer of the Chi Xie army. Incredibly, it was the same Lin Feng. His heart was pounding.

Back in the past, Lin Feng was considered trash and had been expelled from the Lin Clan. Now, he had become a marquis? Na Lan Xiong had the impression that the situation was contradictory with everything that he knew about Lin Feng.

Of course, the person who was most surprised was Na Lan Feng. When she saw Lin Feng take off his mask, she was dumbstruck. Her heart started pounding. Immediately after, she bit her lips and blankly stared at the frivolous and handsome young man.

During the annual competition of the previous year, she had thought that she would be the best cultivator in the competition. She had thought that only Lin Qian would be her rival. However, nothing happened the way she had thought, Bai Yuan Hou and Lin Feng appeared from nowhere. They had stolen her prestige. However, during the competition, she had thought that she was at the same cultivation layer as Lin Feng and she would easily surpass him in the future.

However, Lin Feng was appearing in front of her again. He had an incredible social status. He had an army of Chi Xie cavalry and owned the entire Yangzhou city. He had cut off the arm of her influential and arrogant boyfriend. Lin Feng was not even agitated. Lin Feng had easily ordered for his arm to be cut off. Maybe this was very normal for him.

Du Gu Xiao's social status was high, his relatives were Imperial Ministers. The fact that he had come with her had made Na Lan Feng extremely proud. The entire city of Yangzhou respected and admired her because of her boyfriend's status. That was why they were unceasingly flattering her. Even her clan had organized the banquet and invited the richest and most noble people to greet him.

Na Lan Feng wasn't prepared for such a situation. She hadn't thought that a fight would break out at all.

All of this was happening because of the Chi Xie army. Lin Feng had easily shattered her arrogance. Actually, he had crushed her entire reality and turned her world upside down.

She was much weaker than Lin Feng. She could not even touch his shadow.

Surprisingly, at that moment, the calmest person of the group was the person who had just lost an arm, Du Gu Xiao. That was because Lin Feng had mentioned that he slapped Du Gu Shang. At that moment, Du Gu Xiao understood what kind of person he was dealing with and the social status that Lin Feng had. He had never seen Lin Feng's face before.

When looking at that young and handsome man, Du Gu Xiao wanted to rip him to shreds. Lin Feng had not only crushed his arrogance but he also cut off his arm. Besides, his natural talent was far beyond Du Gu Xiao.

The crowd was astonished. When Lin Feng noticed the reactions, he was smiling coldly.

Power was determined by strength and status. In the past, he was an unknown and quiet young man. Even though he had participated in the annual competition, his strength was still not enough. He also had no social status at all. He had been so talented that Na Lan Xiong wasn't able to bear it and forced the Gu Clan and the Wen Clan to get involved. Everybody had joined forces in an attempt to kill him.

He had been reluctant to leave Yangzhou City, but now he was back.

However, the new Lin Feng had become much stronger. He could control an entire army, therefore, he could look down on everyone. He had the power of life and death.

He used to be humiliated every single day that he spent living in Yangzhou City but he still returned to the place he called home.

“Do you understand things more clearly now?” said Lin Feng in a calm voice, while looking at Na Lan Xiong.

That calm voice made everyone tremble. Everybody was looking at Lin Feng. They were all confused. They were unable to calm their racing hearts.

Nobody would have thought that the young man, who was forced

from Yangzhou City in humiliation, would come back and shock them all.

Na Lan Xiong was having trouble breathing as the shock had been too great. He didn't know what to say but he knew, more than everyone else, what was going to happen.

Lin Feng was as handsome, frivolous and determined as before. In the past, Lin Feng's strength wasn't enough to make a difference, but now he was able to control an entire army, and became the marquis of Yangzhou City. Could Lin Feng still be the same weak young man? That was, of course, impossible.

“What do you want?”

Na Lan Xiong was staring at Lin Feng. He felt extremely disheartened. Today was supposed to be a happy day but because of Lin Feng, it had become a tragic event.

“What about you?” said Lin Feng while smiling coldly and then continued: “Last year, you, Na Lan Xiong, as the head of the Na Lan Clan, organized the annual competition. I had joined but when I won, the Lin Clan wanted my life. You, as the one organizing the event, didn't try to stop them at all. You gave your tacit agreement. You wanted me to die. I beat everybody, including your daughter, I even took her as a hostage, so of course, you wanted to see me dead.”

“The Yangzhou City competition was a joke.”

Lin Feng was speaking slowly: “Besides, you organized everything to make your daughter seem stronger than she was. But now, I am stronger than your daughter. Back then, your daughter sent people to kill me because I refused to give her my table. She thought that she could put herself high above me. I could have died at any point.”

Lin Feng’s words were insufferably powerful and cold.

“Therefore, for everything that you made me suffer, I will return it back. I want you to take your own life.”

“You must take your own life.”

Lin Feng’s tone was calm and peaceful. The crowd was astonished and their hearts were pounding once again. Lin Feng was surprisingly asking Na Lan Xiong, the head of Yangzhou City, to commit suicide.

In the past, who would have thought that the delicate and handsome young man would, one day, look at Na Lan Xiong and tell him to kill himself. In the past, Na Lan Xiong was sitting at the top and it was as if Lin Feng was an ant beneath his foot.

“If I decide against that.” said Na Lan Xiong while staring at Lin Feng aggressively.

“You can choose to refuse. I don’t have much time to play with you, so I will give you ten seconds to think it over. If you don’t

reply, I will take that as your refusal. The countdown starts now.”

He had ten seconds to decide. How domineering, how powerful!

“One.”

“Two.”

Lin Feng didn't care about what other people thought. He was looking at Na Lan Xiong and counting. Na Lan Xiong's face turned deathly pale. He had never thought that suddenly, someone would tell him to end his own life. Besides, he also had the choice to refuse, the only problem was, who would dare to refuse?

“Six.”

“Seven.”

Time passed, the ten seconds had almost elapsed. Everybody was staring at Na Lan Xiong.

“No, don't!” said Na Lan Feng while looking at her father and shaking her head frenetically. She regretted everything at that moment. Everything that was happening was because of her, she had used her status to send people to kill him over nothing. If she hadn't acted that way in the past, maybe they wouldn't be in such a desperate situation at that moment.



Her pride and arrogance had a price, and what a tragic one.

“Nine.”

“Hahahaha.....” At that moment, a loud laugh spread through the atmosphere. Na Lan Xiong was laughing as if he was carefree.

“Psssh!”

A sound echoed through the banquet hall along with the echoing laughter. Suddenly, blood started spilling from Na Lan Xiong’s mouth.

“Father.”

Na Lan Feng’s face turned deathly pale. Her father had chosen to kill himself. He hadn’t dared to gamble. Lin Feng was excessively cruel. Na Lan Feng felt hatred rise up from the bottom of her heart.

# Chapter 260: The Annual Meeting

---

Everybody was looking at Na Lan Xiong. He had run himself through and pierced his vitals.

Suicide. The head of Yangzhou City had, in front of Lin Feng, committed suicide as a punishment for his crime.

A short time before, it was his future son-in-law who had made Lin Feng come to apologize.

“Father!” shouted Na Lan Feng while looking at her father piercing his vital organs. A cracking sound spread in the air. Her face turned deathly pale, the expression her eyes revealed pure hopelessness.

“Lin Feng, I chose to obey you and commit suicide but my family, including my daughter, are innocent. I hope that you can let them off.” said Na Lan Xiong and then he injected Qi into his vitals and there was a small explosion of all his organs. Immediately after, his face lost its color and he fell heavily onto the floor.

One of the great figures of Yangzhou City had killed himself because of Lin Feng’s words. His power and influence were incredible. Lin Feng wanted him to die, so he didn’t dare to live. He was scared that Lin Feng would annihilate his entire bloodline.

These days, the officer of the Chi Xie army seemed extremely cruel. His words were as sharp as a sword. Nobody could stop him, and if somebody tried to block him, he would kill them.

Na Lan Xiong had had only one choice: to die.

If he didn't agreed, he would die, if he refused, he would die. Therefore, he had decided to accept. He had to kill himself in order to protect his clan.

"I have nothing against your family, except for Na Lan Feng. How could I have mercy on her?" said Lin Feng, sounding cold and detached, while looking at Na Lan Xiong's corpse. It wasn't only because Na Lan Feng had sent people to kill him and he almost died from that encounter. Even though he had taken her as a hostage, that wasn't enough. Lin Feng hadn't forgiven her. Besides, she wasn't showing any signs that she regretted what she had done. She was still insufferably arrogant and thought that, by relying on Du Gu Xiao's social status, she could act as she wished. Lin Feng couldn't tolerate her continuously looking down on people.

Lin Feng had been in that world for over a year. He had changed and was no longer weak and indecisive. These days, if he had a feeling in his heart, he'd trust it, even it meant killing people without mercy.

The most important thing was to stick to one's convictions.

The crowd was stupefied. Lin Feng surprisingly wasn't going to let Na Lan Feng off.

Na Lan Feng was hugging her father's dead body. Her face looked lifeless and she was still staring at Lin Feng because Lin Feng had

cut off one of Du Gu Xiao's arms and had forced her father to kill himself, what did he intend to do with her?

“No need to look at me like that. Back in the past, it was just the beginning. When you tried to kill me, I would have never thought that I would have the opportunity to get my revenge so soon. You can cripple your own cultivation. I will not kill you.”

Lin Feng still looked expressionless. Na Lan Feng's eyes were filled with hatred. Lin Feng had a clear conscience when it came to what he was doing because he knew that Na Lan Xiong and Na Lan Feng would have done even worse things to him.

Since that girl was so arrogant and presumptuous, Lin Feng thought that it would be good to make her cripple her own cultivation so that she would be forced to live like the ordinary people she disdained.

“Hurry up, I don't want to have to see your face any longer than required.” said Lin Feng coldly while staring at Na Lan Feng. In the past, when she tried to kill Lin Feng, she would have never thought that such a day would come.

Mountains can be reduced to rubble over time, if there is a man with enough conviction to do so.

“Alright, alright.....” said Na Lan Feng, whose face was deathly pale. She suddenly released Qi and attacked herself. Immediately after, she groaned. All of her accumulated Qi filled the air. Na Lan Feng's face became even paler, she was extremely weak.

The incredibly arrogant girl of Yangzhou City had become a piece of trash. The only reason was because she hated Lin Feng in the past and tried to kill him.

When Lin Feng saw that Na Lan Feng was done with crippling her own cultivation, he put his mask back on and made his Dragon-Colt horse slowly turn around. He then started speaking in a calm and peaceful voice.

“Po Jun, you will stay here and reorganize everything in the government building. Then, we will use this place to station the troops. Everybody else, follow me.”

When Lin Feng finished talking, he left on his horse, looking natural and unrestrained.

Rumbling filled the area again as the army started to leave the area. The Chi Xie troops were also moving towards the exit. A short time after, they had all disappeared from the field of vision of the crowd.

But the crowd was still staring at the empty space in front of them, the images of the army were still engraved into their minds.

Lin Feng had left, where had he gone?

“Lin Clan, it has to be the Lin Clan.”

Many people had the same thought at the same time. In the past, Lin Feng belonged to the Lin Clan. Lin Feng had been expelled and disgraced, but now he had become extremely powerful. He had become of the officer of the Chi Xie and even owned Yangzhou City. He had cut off one of Du Gu Xiao's arms, had killed the head of the city and made Na Lan Feng cripple her own cultivation. Even though he hadn't moved a single finger to do all this, everything was under his control.

These days, Lin Feng could deeply affect Yangzhou City, he held the power of life and death. How could he not go to the Lin Clan, who had expelled and disgraced both Lin Feng and Lin Hai.

Lin Feng didn't know that the Na Lan Clan was planning a festive occasion, he also didn't know that the Lin Clan was extremely lively at this moment.

At the end of the year, the Lin Clan held an annual meeting and the competition between the juniors was still occurring.

Around the fighting stage of the Lin Clan were the older people of the Lin Clan. They were looking at the juniors battling. They all had big smiles on their faces.

The juniors of the Lin Clan were good and they all had relatively impressive talents. It seemed like this generation had some good qualities. It seemed like the clan would be able to rise in the future.

“Lin Ba Dao, Qian Qian is the strongest and most outstanding young cultivator we have. Not only does she have an ice and fire

spirit but she is also very young. Having broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer, she will soon catch up with me, and at that point, she will even be stronger than me, even with all my years of experience, congratulations!”

An elder of the clan was looking at the fighting stage and talking to Lin Ba Dao. The elder was flattering Lin Ba Dao which made a huge smile appear on his face.

Lin Ba Dao felt extremely proud when people flattered his daughter, he of course enjoyed it very much. He also felt flattered for raising such a genius.

“Indeed, nobody can rival with Lin Qian, she’s a real genius. Lin Feng, that piece of trash was a nobody, he was extreme weak. I don’t even care if he’s dead now.”

Many people were flattering Lin Qian and Lin Ba Dao, even if it meant they had to lie. Indeed, during the last annual meeting of the Lin Clan, everybody had seen that Lin Feng was powerful. They all knew that Lin Qian couldn’t rival with Lin Feng which is why Lin Ba Dao and the respectable elder had to expel him. He was much more talented than Lin Qian.

Nobody was trying to compare them though. Lin Qian had an ice and fire spirit and she was a student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Lin Feng was far from being at her level. Even though he had won against her in the past, people still thought at the time he was lucky and he had probably died long ago.

Lin Ba Dao's smile was huge and he said: "All our juniors are incredible and all practice cultivation very hard. They are all very good."

"That is how a good clan head should act. Lin Hai, in the past, just prevented the clan from progressing. Besides, his son was a disobedient brat who was not loyal to the clan."

"Hehe." laughed Lin Ba Dao. "Lin Feng and Lin Hai could never rival Qian Qian and me."

"Exactly, never." said the people immediately in reply.

At that moment, they didn't know it but outside of the Lin Clan, someone was standing at the entrance to the gate. He looked calm and serene.

"The Lin Clan." Lin Feng raised his head and saw the sign at the top of the gate. It felt very familiar. Lin Feng's heart was beating a bit faster.

It used to be his clan.

"Today is the annual meeting of the Lin Clan." thought Lin Feng. He took a deep breath and immediately moved forwards. He hadn't seen the Lin Clan for such a long time.

"Stop."



The guards of the Lin Clan blocked the way when they saw him. They coldly asked: “Who are you?”

Lin Feng looked at these two guards, smiled indifferently and said: “My name is Lin Feng.”

“Lin Feng?” said the two guards a bit surprised. They had been serving the Lin Clan for half a year but they had never heard a member with that name before.

Did the Lin Clan have such a person?

“I don’t know him.” said the guards while looking at each other. They were still blocking the way, not letting Lin Feng enter.

“You will know me very soon.” said Lin Feng while smiling. Immediately after, a strong wind blew past their bodies. Even though their eyes were wide open, they couldn’t see Lin Feng’s movements. He had disappeared in a flash. He had vanished before their eyes. He moved past the guards like the wind and headed into the Lin Clan territory.

## Chapter 261: I, Lin Feng, Want To Die!

---

The annual meeting of the Lin Clan was happening like every year at the end of the year. At that moment, Lin Ba Dao's son, Lin Hong was punching another junior of the Lin Clan, his fist was surrounded by a powerful ice. Immediately after, the entire crowd heard a loud shout from Lin Hong's opponent.

“Wow, how strong. Like father, like son. Lin Hong is extremely powerful.”

“Indeed, it has been a series of successes since Lin Hai and his piece of trash son left the clan. Nowadays, the head of our clan has two children and they are both geniuses. Lin Qian is famous for being a genius but Lin Hong is also a talented genius, he is amazing. Except for Lin Qian, nobody else in the Lin Clan can rival him. They are both almost as powerful as the elders of the clan.” said an elder while smiling. His clear and loud voice spread through the entire arena. Everybody could hear him very clearly.

Amongst those who heard him was Lin Feng, who was calmly walking through the Lin Clan territory.

Lin Feng hadn't thought that people would still be criticizing him and his father to satisfy Lin Ba Dao. He couldn't help but smile. He raised his head, looked at the person in the distance and said in a mocking tone: “Oh, is that so?”

His voice wasn't loud at all but everybody heard him.

People were stupefied. They turned around and immediately, they saw a silhouette, a young man, he looked surprisingly familiar.

That familiar person was called a piece of trash by everyone but during the annual meeting of the previous year, he had displayed an incredible power. After that, he had also shown an amazing display at the competition of Yangzhou City. Everybody had seen how strong he was but, he had been expelled of the Lin Clan.

At the time, the clan had decided to choose Lin Qian instead of Lin Feng. Everybody thus thought that Lin Qian was much stronger than Lin Feng and had a better talent to develop in the future. They thought that the clan would be able to rise alongside her and, someday, she would become the clan head.

“It’s him! It’s Lin Feng!”

“Lin Feng came back! He came back to the Lin Clan!” Many people were astonished when they saw Lin Feng. He looked different, he seemed more handsome and delicate.

That handsome young man also looked more mature than before. He looked very calm yet his facial expression was extremely sharp and cold.

“Lin Feng.”

Lin Ba Dao narrowed his eyes. That young man, whom he had

expelled from the clan, surprisingly dared to return.

A mocking smile appeared on Lin Ba Dao's face. Of all the places where he could go, he returned to the Lin Clan, he was courting death.

On the stage, Lin Qian wasn't reacting the same way as her father. She started shaking violently. It was Lin Feng, unbelievable!

She had asked herself if the young man, who was terrifying the people in the Imperial City, was going to come back to the Lin Clan.

She was not feeling safe and had hoped he would not return. Lin Feng had come back, and it was possible that he had come back to reclaim his and his father's lost honour.

"You dared to come back?" said the ninth elder when he saw Lin Feng. He had an ice-cold and evil smile on the corner of his mouth. He then said: "Lin Feng, your father rebelled against the respectable elder and killed members of the clan. He has committed many crimes. Besides, you are the same and don't respect the elders, you are arrogant and rude. You have also been expelled from the Lin Clan. Besides last year, you attempted to assassinate Na Lan Feng but luckily she managed to escape alive. Today, you dared to return to Yangzhou City and even come back to the Lin Clan?"

"Are you done talking crap?" said Lin Feng to the ninth elder. He

found him to be ridiculous, he had come back and they were still creating more crimes to accuse him, he didn't feel like listening to them anymore.

“Talking crap?” the ninth elder narrowed his eyes. He was staring at Lin Feng with an ice-cold glare.

“You called me a piece of trash a moment ago, today is the annual meeting of the Lin Clan. Would you dare to let your son come here and fight me?” said Lin Feng. The ninth elder's son was about the same age as Lin Feng.

When he heard Lin Feng, he remained silent. His eyes looked even colder.

“How come you're no longer talking? Your son is a piece of trash and doesn't dare fight, right? He is even worse than a piece of trash!” said Lin Feng mockingly. He then started walking slowly towards the fighting stage. After a short moment, he appeared in front of the entire crowd and slowly walked towards the fighting stage.

Many juniors of the Lin Clan, when they saw Lin Feng pass by, opened the way for him letting him pass towards the fighting stage. After that, Lin Feng moved onto the fighting stage and looked around at the crowd surrounding the stage.

“How come you aren't saying anything?” said Lin Feng to the ninth elder again.

Lin Ba Dao smiled coldly and said: “Lin Feng, we had forgotten that you were also a junior of the Lin Clan. Last time, we didn’t kill you, we let you off and surprisingly, instead of being thankful for showing you mercy, you dared come back to the Lin Clan.”

“Didn’t kill me? Mercy?”

Lin Feng was a bit surprised. When had Lin Ba Dao showed him this mercy? When had he let him off?

“When I arrived, I heard people licking Lin Ba Dao’s boots, he is really shameless. He even surrounds himself with the same type of shameless people.”

“How audacious!” shouted the ninth elder extremely loudly. He also released a cold Qi.

“Maybe I am audacious. A moment ago, you were talking about how great and majestic Lin Qian and Lin Hong were, they are true geniuses, right? ”

“Of course, they are the geniuses of our clan.” Replied the ninth elder.

“Well, and me, I am a piece of trash, right?”

“So you already know your place!” said the ninth elder mockingly.

“Since that is clearly the case, I, the piece of trash, I am willing to exchange pointers with the geniuses of the Lin Clan, Lin Hong, Lin Qian and any others who wish to come onto the stage. If I lose, then kill me.” said Lin Feng in a loud voice.

If he lost, he would die!

How arrogant, how presumptuous, how majestic!

The people of the Lin Clan remained silent. Apart from Lin Qian and Lin Hong, who would be willing to battle against Lin Feng? One year before, Lin Feng was already extremely powerful. How strong would he be after a year?

“How come nobody is speaking, I, Lin Feng, want to die.” said Lin Feng while laughing and staring at the crowd.

He wanted to die, how insane did that sound? Everybody was stupefied, but as before, nobody dared reply. All the juniors of the clan were astonished and they were all looking at Lin Qian and Lin Hong. Only they could win against Lin Feng.

But, they knew about Lin Feng’s exploits in the Imperial City. Fighting against Lin Feng would be courting death.

“I, Lin Feng, beg of you to come and kill me, but nobody is coming. What a load of crap. You all dare to speak such insane words and pretend that you are better than me, you talk about

geniuses... I admire your shamelessness. I didn't know that your shamelessness had reached unfathomable heights."

Lin Feng really was making fun of the Lin Clan and it was becoming more and more obvious. The people of the clan felt their cheeks burning. Lin Feng had been expelled from the clan but at that moment, he was on the fighting stage of the Lin Clan and asking people to go kill him, and surprisingly, nobody dared to fight against him, including the young genius who was the hope of the clan, Lin Qian!

"You impudent brat!" furiously shouted the ninth elder.

He had just finished talking and Lin Feng was already shouting and mocking the ninth elder.

"Didn't you, a moment ago, say that I was a piece of trash and that they are geniuses, but now, where are they? I am here and I want to die but they don't dare to fight. If you are willing to, you can also come down, I really want to die!"

How insane! How shocking!

Lin Feng was inviting the ninth elder to come onto the fighting stage to kill him aswell. He really had a death wish.

The ninth elder narrowed his eyes and looked at Lin Qian and Lin Hong. He then immediately smiled coldly and said: "Lin Feng, Lin Qian and Lin Hong are geniuses of the Lin Clan. It would be a



humiliation for them to fight against you but since you want to die, I should help you.”

When he finished talking, the ninth elder jumped onto the fighting stage immediately landing in front of Lin Feng.

“What an impressive agility technique”

“How beautiful.”

“Lin Feng surprisingly challenged the ninth elder to a battle, how insane, he really wants to die.”

“The ninth elder has broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer, he definitely deserves his reputation as a strong cultivator. He is extremely powerful. Lin Feng is already dead.

The crowd had various thoughts about the ninth elder when they saw him jump onto the fighting stage. At the same time, an insane quantity of Ice Qi concentrated itself on his fist and suddenly bombarded the atmosphere moving straight towards Lin Feng. It seemed like Lin Feng was going to freeze on the spot.

Lin Feng was calmly standing there, looking at the ninth elder, who had an evil smile on his face.

“Die!” shouted the ninth elder but at that moment, Lin Feng waved his hand and cut the atmosphere. A bright and resplendent sword Qi flashed in the air, immediately after, the ninth elder

didn't even have the time to give a horrible shriek before his blood filled the air. He just pitifully groaned and collapsed. His facial expression looked calm, his body was lifeless.

The crowd was astonished and their hearts were violently pounding. They were shocked, dumbstruck... had the ninth elder died?

The ninth elder had been killed by Lin Feng with a single blow?

The crowd was dumbstruck and terrified. They only saw Lin Feng look at the corpse on the ground and say with an indifferent tone: "A piece of trash!"

Lin Feng walked forwards again, he looked at the crowd with an insane smile on his face.

"I, LIN FENG, WANT TO DIE!"

# Chapter 262: Kill Lin Feng!

---

“I, LIN FENG, WANT TO DIE!”

His furious shout was echoing throughout people's hearts like the waves of a tsunami, the words “I want to die!” were so arrogant. He had been expelled from the clan and at this moment. He was looking down on everyone.

The one everyone used to call a piece of trash was at this moment, looking down on the clan and mocking them as if they meant nothing.

“I, Lin Feng, the piece of trash who was expelled from the clan!”

Lin Feng kept joking. In the past, during the competition of Yangzhou City, he had also said things that sounded insane at the time, but his power shocked everyone. Back then, he was already much stronger than Lin Qian. Lin Qian could not rival him. Besides, these days, even though Lin Qian had broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer. Lin Feng had just killed the ninth elder who was at the fifth Ling Qi layer with a single attack. How strong was he really? Could Lin Qian rival such a monster?

Lin Feng was the most outstanding disciple of the Lin Clan, but such a genius had been expelled.

“Why is nobody speaking?” said Lin Feng. The crowd only stared at him, they all remained absolutely silent. Lin Feng couldn't help but keep mocking them: “Before I arrived, were you not all

flattering Lin Qian and Lin Ba Dao? Were you not all just criticizing my father and me to gain his good graces? Now, I am standing before you, but each and every single person here has suddenly become deaf and mute.”

“If I am a piece of trash, you are a bunch of shameless, low life, worthless cultivators.”

Lin Feng’s voice was piercing through the silent atmosphere. Everyone’s faces were turning bright red. They were looking at Lin Feng with killing intent in their eyes.

“Your father and you are the same, traitors, who don’t respect the elders of the clan. You are both filthy animals!”

At that moment, a furious voice interrupted. It came from Lin Feng’s third uncle, Lin Hao Ran. When he saw Lin Feng, he remembered his son, who had been crippled by Lin Feng and became filled with jealousy, but this jealousy quickly turned into hatred.

Lin Feng was stupefied. A sharp expression filled his eyes and he glared at Lin Hao Ran. A traitor, his father and he were animals?

“Incredibly, it is possible to reach such a high level of shamelessness.” said Lin Feng coldly and then added: “Back in the past, my father and I never offended you, but because you wanted his position as head of the clan, you humiliated me and threatened my father. You wanted to replace him as the clan head using despicable methods. Have you ever thought about the fact that he

was your brother?”

“After that, because you created an opportunity to reach your goal, the respectable elder attacked and injured my father. Then you expelled us from the Lin Clan, you are really shameless. Besides, during the annual competition of Yangzhou City, I started to reveal outstanding talent but you were afraid, afraid of my talent, which is why you tried to kill me. Did you think about our blood relations at that time?

“Now, you are calling me a traitor? Why is that? You attack your own brother, the head of your clan and you dare to call other people traitors. You chose to replace my father with someone else? I, Lin Feng, have nothing to do with scum like you, there is only humiliation to gain from associating with you. I, Lin Feng, have returned. Lin Hao Ran, if you criticize my father again, I will kill you.”

When Lin Feng said those words, an immense quantity of sword Qi whistled through the atmosphere. Lin Feng looked like a powerful sword at that moment . He was infinitely sharp, dazzling, brutal and aggressive.

Lin Feng surprisingly dared to threaten his third uncle, threatening to kill him.

That was a huge humiliation for Lin Hao Ran, to be threatened by Lin Feng in public like that. He coldly said: “Your father is an animal, and the son of an animal is an animal, so you are both filthy animals.”

How could Lin Hao Ran be intimidated by a little boy to the extent that he wouldn't dare to speak?

“BOOM!”

Lin Hao Ran's words reached Lin Feng's ears. An invisible pressure suddenly fell onto everyone's shoulders. Lin Feng was spinning around and seemed to have transformed into a sword, an extremely sharp one.

An incredible sword energy overwhelmed the entire atmosphere. The crowd was gasping in astonishment.

How powerful! It seemed like they had underestimated Lin Feng. He seemed to be much stronger than all of them.

The invisible sword energy was surrounding the entire crowd. They were all fixedly staring at Lin Feng. He had become so monstrously strong.

Lin Hao Ran's heart was pounding. Nobody knew that the energy which was now oppressing his body was painfully sharp. He was controlling himself, but his facial expression was changing drastically, his heart was pounding. Panic-stricken, he was fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

“How strong. That sword Qi is way too strong.” Lin Hao Ran thought. How strong had Lin Feng become?

Lin Hao Ran was absolutely terrified and regretted what he just said to Lin Feng.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. The invisible sword energy turned into a sharp sword, Lin Feng jumped into the air, it seemed like his entire body transformed into a sword, an extremely sharp and devastating sword.

The crowd was dumbstruck, to the extent that they forgot to try to stop Lin Feng. Even if they did see him coming, they couldn’t afford to take the risk of getting in his way.

An incredibly brilliant and resplendent light filled the atmosphere.

There was no sword, only the light glow given from sword energy.

Lin Hao Ran felt hopeless and his facial expression gradually dropped and blood started to pour from a hole that had been pierced between his eyebrows.

One strike and his life had ended!

As before, only one strike!

Lin Feng moved back to his original position on the stage, there

was nothing in his hand, but sword Qi was still present in the atmosphere.

That incredibly daring young man confused everyone in the crowd, where was his sword? He was such a genius, yet he had been expelled from the clan. At that moment, he had come back to regain his dignity.

“You killed your third uncle?” said Lin Ba Dao while looking at the corpse. He was looking at Lin Feng in an ice-cold way with killing intent in his eyes.

“Third Uncle?” said Lin Feng while laughing and then added: “Lin Ba Dao, you and Lin Hao Ran, have you ever acted like my uncles?”

Lin Ba Dao was stupefied. He and Lin Hao Ran had indeed plotted against Lin Feng’s father. Lin Feng had never been like a nephew for them.

“You have never regarded me as your nephew. You always regarded me as a piece of trash and humiliated me. You expelled me from the clan and even tried to kill me. At that moment, you never thought that you were my uncle, right? Now that I have killed him, you just now remember that he was my uncle? Lin Ba Dao, don’t you think that you are being ridiculous?” Lin Feng said mockingly and continued: “Besides, now I am no longer a member of the Lin Clan, if anyone dares to insult my father, I will kill them!”



Once again, Lin Feng was openly threatening everyone, his words were extremely harsh. At that moment, Lin Feng's words were like sharp swords.

Amongst the people of the Lin Clan, many were regretting that Lin Feng had been expelled from the clan. If he had been in the Lin Clan, he would have been much more prestigious than Lin Qian.

However, everybody remained silent. The atmosphere was horrifyingly silent.

Lin Feng's expression looked like he wanted to burst into laughter. He said: "Now, the cowardly atmosphere is contagious in the Lin Clan. There is only a bunch of little people left who don't know how to do anything but unceasingly flatter Lin Ba Dao, the clan head. None of you has any strength of character and the clan has no future. This is ridiculous and sad. Lin Ba Dao, this is the result created from you becoming the clan head."

When Lin Feng finished talking, everybody was astonished. They realized that what Lin Feng said was the truth. At that moment, he was standing on the fighting stage and nobody could rival him, everyone remained silent.

If Lin Hai had been there, he would have been a source of inspiration, even though he did not show himself often. He didn't resemble Lin Ba Dao.

The people of the Lin Clan, when they heard Lin Feng's making fun of them, all felt humiliated.

“Lin Ba Dao, in the past, you plotted against my father and me to make us leave the clan. Now, I am back to reclaim our dignity and honor on the fighting stage. Lin Ba Dao, can you act like a real man for once in your cowardly life and join me on the fighting stage?”

Lin Feng was challenging Lin Ba Dao.

Lin Ba Dao looked uncertain. Lin Feng, who had been expelled by him, surprisingly challenged him. How strong was he?

The crowd looked at Lin Ba Dao.

Lin Ba Dao slowly stood up, but suddenly heard Lin Qian shout: “Father, don’t fight against him!”

The crowd was stupefied and looked at Lin Qian. They only saw Lin Qian was unceasingly shaking her head and stopping her father.

Lin Qian wanted to prevent her father from fighting against Lin Feng?

When Lin Feng arrived, he challenged Lin Qian. Lin Qian had not even considered fighting against Lin Feng, could it be that she knew his real strength?

Did Lin Qian know where Lin Feng had been this whole time?

Did she also know his real strength?

“Traitor!” shouted a voice which filled the atmosphere. A silhouette was rushing through the air. He looked majestic. Many people were delighted to see the silhouette appear.

It was the respectable elder, Lin Rui.

In the past, he injured Lin Hai and also contributed to Lin Feng and Lin Hai’s expulsion from the clan. Now, he was showing himself again, Lin Feng was definitely going to die.

“Respectable elder!” all the members of the Lin Clan were slightly bowing in front of Lin Rui, who was descending from the sky. His voice was ice-cold and he said: “The son of the traitor has come back. Everybody, hurry up and kill him. You have to kill any traitors that enter our territory.”

“Everyone? They had to capture him together?”

The crowd was stupefied. Lin Ba Dao, however, immediately nodded and said: “Members of the Lin Clan, listen to the order, kill Lin Feng!”

When Lin Ba Dao finished talking, many people started to reluctantly walk towards the fighting stage.

Lin Feng glanced at the crowd and a demonic smile appeared on his face. Together? Everyone against him?

So they wanted an unfair fight, right?

At the Na Lan Clan, Lin Feng had not personally fought. Using his authority, he had controlled everything with only his words.

However, he had gone to the Lin Clan for a different reason, he wanted to regain his honour and dignity, this time, he wanted to regain his honour on the fighting stage, not using his status and authority.

But at the moment, the Lin Clan wanted to attack him, the whole clan against him?

Lin Feng laughed, gazed towards the sky and shouted “Order!”

# Chapter 263: Officer!

---

“What’s going on?”

“What’s happening?”

The members of the Lin Clan were stupefied. Suddenly they heard a rumbling noise fill the atmosphere, but it was coming from every direction. It seemed like there was an earthquake and the ground was trembling.

“BOOM!”

“BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!”

The incredibly loud booms filled the atmosphere. It seemed like the buildings were about to collapse from the vibrations.

Someone was coming to attack the Lin Clan. They were destroying the barricades in their district.

The crowd was shaking. The sounds were moving closer with each second. The noises spread throughout the atmosphere along with the thumping of everyone’s heartbeat. It sounded as if there was a stampede of thousands upon thousands of cavalry charging at full speed, and were approaching from the four corners of the Lin Clan district. They immediately forced entry into the Lin Clan’s district and galloped towards the crowd.

“Respectable Elder!”

The crowd looked around and looked at the majestic respectable elder. They were panicking. It seemed like an extremely heavy Qi had fallen from the sky and landed on them. It was unceasing and getting nearer and nearer to the crowd. The crowd was in pain as the Qi filling the atmosphere was so sharp that it could cut. They felt like they were suffocating under the intense pressure.

The respectable elder, Lin Rui, was frowning. He could also feel the extremely strong Qi moving towards them. Besides, he could tell that armored-horses were charging towards them from all directions.

How come so much cavalry were coming to the Lin Clan?

“Look over there!” shouted someone in the crowd. The crowd looked at the north of the area. Immediately after, red silhouettes appeared in the distance.

Red horses, red armor, how domineering and imposing. That was an entire army of Chi Xie cavalry. They were charging towards them, the people’s hearts were racing.

The people of the Lin Clan were dumbstruck. How was that possible? Why would an extremely strong army of armored-cavalry come to the Lin Clan?

“There are some over there as well!” shouted the terrified crowd.

There was an army to the south as well.

“And over there!”

The Chi Xie cavalry were coming from the east, from the west, from everywhere. Everybody was surrounded by Chi Xie troops.

It was an endless sea of red. It was a magnificent and terrifying sight.

The people's heart were violently shaking. They were all suffering in silence. There was only the sound of the cavalry approaching.

The crowd was just blankly staring at that whole scene. There were even some short moments when they had blackouts from the panic. That was an army, an extremely strong army.

That army seemed to be endless as if there were millions of them. Besides, all of them had piercingly strong gazes and released brutally strong Qi.

“That army must be painted red from the blood of their enemies!”

When the crowd sensed the brutally strong Qi, their hearts started beating even faster. A blood-red army had appeared at Lin Clan during their annual meeting, and was encircling them.

If the army wanted to annihilate the Lin Clan, it would be as easy as wiping away dust.

“Who are they? Why has such a powerful army come to the Lin Clan?”

Everybody was absolutely astonished. None of them thought that there could be a relation between the extremely strong army and the young man standing on the fighting stage. They didn't dare to think about such a terrifying thought, not even in their worst nightmares. Even though Lin Feng had just shouted “Order!”, they had already removed that from their minds. They had other things to worry about and the crowd was completely focused on the powerful army.

That strong and powerful army had encircled them. There were some horses moving out from the crowd, they were probably high-ranking personnel in the army. The members of the Lin Clan were all moving aside, not daring to obstruct their path. They were surrounding the fighting stage, but they all gathered, facing Lin Feng.

Lin Feng raised his hands and the high ranking personnel moved towards Lin Feng.

“That fool, is he tired of living?” the crowd was cursing at Lin Feng in their hearts. He was surprisingly still standing on the stage. They just hoped that he wouldn't get them involved.



At that moment, the cavalry stopped at the edge of the fighting stage and glanced at the crowd. Immediately, everybody's heart started pounding. These people's facial expressions were so sharp and cold.

They were all extremely strong cultivators. The weakest in the army were at the same level as an elder of the Lin Clan. The ones in charge were even stronger.

Lin Rui was also extremely strong. Amongst the army, there were at least three people who were of similar power or slightly weaker than him. Besides, if there was a battle, there was one person in the army that might be able to kill Lin Rui alone.

The Chi Xie troops were releasing their powerful Qi. These people were born from battles and frequently bathed in the blood of their enemies, they were fighting gods, they were much stronger than an ordinary army. They had incredible battle experience and they were a step above normal cultivators.

“You have come to my Lin Clan today, however I don't know what we can do for you, but I will do my best to help you in any way possible.”

Lin Rui looked at the army and spoke with a very respectful tone. He had adopted the strategy of diplomacy. If he made them angry, they could annihilate the entire clan. It was better for him to stay humble.

At that moment, he was even bowing in an extremely respectful

way. He was bowing the same way the people of the Lin Clan had bowed to him previously. He seemed to be a different person when dealing with such a powerful army.

However, the soldiers didn't pay attention to him, they didn't even spare him a glance. Immediately after, they jumped down from their horses, placed their hands on their chests and bowed while shouting in unison: "Officer!"

"Officer? Where was the officer?"

The crowd was stupefied. They looked around them like crazy and were looking for someone who looked like an officer of these powerful troops. Could it be that someone even stronger was about to arrive?

Some small sounds spread in the air. There were tens of thousands of soldiers here. Besides, what amazed the crowd was that some of them were kneeling on the ground.

"Officer!"

At that moment, a thunderous roar came from thousands of people shouting at the same time and the ground shook from the entire army kneeling down. The entire army was all kneeling down and saluting. That was an amazing vision.

In Xue Yue, people only had to kneel down only in front of the Imperial Family to pay respect. In front of others, a simple bow

was sufficient. But the troops were kneeling down as a sign of devotion and respect for their officer. They had dedicated their lives to their officer, it was their way of honouring their officer.

At that moment, the entire army was kneeling down facing the same direction, the fighting stage.

The tens of thousands of Chi Xie soldiers were kneeling and their brains were all thinking at incredible speeds, but their hearts were moving much faster than their minds. Surprisingly, these soldiers were saluting their officer by kneeling down.

The crowd was looking around yet they couldn't see anyone who looked like a battle hardened officer. Finally, they looked in the direction that the soldiers were facing, they were all facing the fighting stage.

Everybody was blinking as if they couldn't believe their eyes.

"Impossible. Absolutely impossible." the crowd was finally looking at the young man standing on the fighting stage. Even though they had already guessed, nobody dared accept the truth, they didn't want to.

A gentle breeze was blowing which made Lin Feng's robe start to flutter. He then slightly raised his hand and said: "Everybody, stand."

"Roger, Officer!" said all the soldiers in unison and they all

moved to their feet in perfect synchronization.

The people in the crowd felt like a dagger had just been plunged into their chest, they were shaking as if they were about to collapse.

Lin Feng, it was Lin Feng, surprisingly, it was actually Lin Feng!

The crowd was dumbstruck. They couldn't believe their eyes. The one whom all the troops were kneeling down and saluting was surprisingly the only person standing on the fighting stage, Lin Feng.

That was the young man whom they used to call a piece of trash and had expelled from the Lin Clan.

The crowd couldn't believe what was happening.

Lin Rui groaned, his blood was boiling, he almost coughed a mouthful of blood. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

"Officer. How is such a thing possible?" thought Lin Rui astonished.

Lin Ba Dao also couldn't believe it. The officer surprisingly, was Lin Feng!

They suddenly realized what was happening and what was about

to happen.

Lin Feng had come to the Lin Clan to regain his honour, but he did not come alone.

“Cough cough.”

Lin Ba Dao was coughing up blood. He turned deathly pale. They were finished, this would be the end!

## Chapter 264: Regret and Resentment

---

“Together, come onto the fighting stage and kill me, what are you waiting for?”

Lin Feng was looking at the crowd while sounding cold and detached. The people of the Lin Clan were shaking. Would they dare?

Such a strong army just required a few seconds to annihilate the Lin Clan and slaughter all of its members. Would they still dare to attack Lin Feng together?

“Respectable Elder, you are very majestic, originally, you gave the order for them to attack me in a group, now you are standing there and doing nothing at all, what is that supposed to mean?”

Lin Feng was smiling mockingly. The respectable elder's face became rigid. His lips were shaking but the words wouldn't come out. At that moment, everyone's lives were in Lin Feng's hands.

“Respectable Elder, you are very strong. You attacked my father from behind and injured him in a single strike. You also expelled my father and I from the Lin Clan, how domineering, how imposing! Now, I will give you an opportunity to show your invincible power to everybody again.”

When Lin Feng saw that Lin Rui was remaining silent, he continued talking. Back in the past, his father had displayed amazing power and strength, nobody dared fight him to the extent

that even the respectable elder Lin Rui had to personally appear to injure Lin Hai. After that, he had expelled them from the clan. How could Lin Feng forget Lin Rui?

“You expelled my father and me from the clan!”

When the crowd heard those words, they all looked puzzled. Indeed, the officer, who was controlling such a terrifying army belonged to their clan, but he had been expelled.

Lin Feng, while relying on his own strength, had become incredibly strong. He had easily killed the ninth elder and Lin Hao Ran. Besides, he had also become the officer of the Chi Xie army. He was respected by thousands upon thousands of people. Even without mentioning the tiny little Lin Clan, at that moment, Lin Feng could even annihilate the entire city of Yangzhou.

But such an amazing genius had been expelled from the Lin Clan. He was forced to leave. What sort of joke was that?

However, that was the bitter reality and it certainly saddened many of the clan members. Such geniuses appeared once every thousand years. But, they expelled him and caused him to feel hatred towards the clan.

“If Lin Feng was in the clan, how prestigious would our clan be?”

Many people were trying to imagine what would have happened if Lin Feng hadn't been expelled from the Lin Clan.

With Lin Feng's current power, he had managed to obtain Yangzhou City, so if Lin Feng was still in their clan, it would mean that the entire city of Yangzhou would have belonged to the Lin Clan. Their dream was to overtake the Na Lan Clan as the top clan in the city, but the task of making that dream come true had been assigned to Lin Qian.

The Lin Clan could have actually owned the entire city of Yangzhou, compared to their dream, this was a much larger achievement. However, because of one wrong decision, they had taken the wrong path.

Lin Rui was looking at Lin Feng yet remained silent. He had expelled Lin Feng from the clan, was he blind?

“Since you're not talking at all, I will help you. I will give you two choices, the first one is you attempt to get onto the fighting stage together and see the result. The second choice is you and me battle, if you win, I will immediately withdraw the army from the Lin Clan.”

When Lin Feng saw that Lin Rui remained uncommunicative, Lin Feng offered a choice which astonished the crowd.

They wouldn't have thought that Lin Feng would give such a choice to Lin Rui. Lin Rui had the opportunity to defeat Lin Feng and make him withdraw the army.

Lin Rui was the respectable elder of the Lin Clan, he was



extremely strong and was only a step away from breaking into the Xuan Qi layer. Each of his attacks were extremely powerful. Besides, how old was Lin Feng? Even though he was a genius, how could he fight against Lin Rui?

“Lin Feng is so young and proud. He refuses to back down because he is a genius. He already controls an entire army, that’s why he acts so confident.” thought the members of the Lin Clan. In their eyes, Lin Feng was a genius, but he would never be able to defeat Lin Rui. Lin Rui was about eighty years old, how could he let a young boy defeat him?

“Lin Feng, are you joking?!”

Lin Rui hadn’t even spoken yet and Lin Ba Dao had already interrupted. They were facing an incredible army so none of them actually dared to think about fighting. If Lin Feng wanted them to die, they would die. Lin Ba Dao only hoped for one thing, that Lin Feng would withdraw the army.

Lin Feng slowly turned around and looked at Lin Ba Dao. Lin Feng smiled as if he was going to mock them again.

“I’m sorry Lin Ba Dao, included in my terms is one detail, no matter if I win or if Lin Rui wins, you, Lin Ba Dao, will die here.”

Lin Feng’s voice wasn’t loud, but Lin Ba Dao was astonished. His heart felt ice-cold. Cold Qi was emerging from his body.

No matter who won the battle, Lin Ba Dao was going to die.

“Of course, I will give you an opportunity, if you manage to kill the respectable elder, I will forget about our past.” said Lin Feng while laughing. Lin Ba Dao was astonished. He immediately glanced at Lin Rui.

“Impossible. I, Lin Ba Dao, am not that kind of person. Lin Rui is my elder, I would never attack him.” said Lin Ba Dao with a tone of morality and justice. His devotion to righteousness inspired reverence. All the people of the Lin Clan were slightly nodding in agreement.

“Slash!”

At that moment an attack was cutting through the atmosphere. Lin Ba Dao’s hand was surrounded by a cold twinkling light. A dagger was rushing towards Lin Rui’s back at full speed. It was a cold blooded surprise attack aimed to kill Lin Rui.

The crowd was stupefied. Lin Ba Dao’s words were still fresh in their minds, but he was already launching a sneak attack. He had proved his own hypocrisy. In order to save his own life, Lin Ba Dao was ready to reveal his shameless nature.

“How dare you!” shouted Lin Rui. At the moment when Lin Ba Dao’s dagger had almost reached Lin Rui, Lin Rui released a piercingly-cold ice energy as well as his spirit. In a flash, Lin Ba Dao’s dagger and hand were frozen solid.

“Die!”

The respectable elders furious shout spread through the atmosphere. Lin Rui’s palm reached Lin Ba Dao’s chest, immediately after, he was covered with a layer of ice, as if he was about to be sealed within the ice.

“Old fool.”

Lin Feng was smiling coldly. Lin Ba Dao had attacked, but Lin Rui retaliated at the exact same time... He had been protecting Lin Ba Dao this whole time.

On the path of cultivation, there were too many people who, for their lives, were ready to sacrifice the people around them. Lin Rui had lived for almost eighty years, how could he believe the words which just left Lin Ba Dao’s mouth?

“Lin Ba Dao, I have always been good to you and you dare to try and attack me by surprise. Don’t blame for being rude now.” said Lin Rui with killing intent in his voice. The piercingly-cold energy emerging from his body was becoming more and more intense.

“No! Father!”

“Lin Rui, don’t you dare!”

At that moment, two people shouted furiously. It was Lin Qian and her brother. They both threw themselves at Lin Rui.

“Screw off!” Lin Rui raised his hand and released his ice energy. How could he still care about Lin Qian at that moment? All he cared about was his own life.

“Die!” shouted Lin Rui evilly. His ice energy was condensed into all of his attacks. Lin Ba Dao was shaking, his body twitched twice. In a flash, the condensed ice energy burst forth and he was frozen to death.

Lin Ba Dao, because he wanted to become the head of the Lin Clan had unscrupulously employed unethical methods and plotted against members of his own family. In the end, the result was tragic.

“Father.....” cried the two voices. Lin Rui was expressionless. He slowly turned around, he looked brutally cold.

Was the Lin Clan really a family? How could they kill each other so easily and without mercy?

Lin Ba Dao wanted to kill Lin Rui but Lin Rui killed him. All these people were now showing their true colours and how treacherous they really were.

Lin Rui looked at Lin Feng and jumped onto the fighting stage. He then said to Lin Feng: “Lin Ba Dao is dead. I killed him for you. Besides, Lin Feng, you are an outstanding genius, I admit that I was blind. Today, let’s fight. If I lose, I will accept my death.”

Lin Rui's words were inspiring and filled with a lofty and righteous aura, but Lin Feng didn't seem to care at all. What an old fool! Saying such nice things to try and awake some compassion in Lin Feng's heart, he had lived for so many years and was adept at scheming. He had cold-bloodedly killed Lin Ba Dao without the slightest bit of hesitation.

"No need to say such flowery words, don't worry, if you win, I will withdraw my army, if you lose, it is not that you will accept death, you will beg for it."

Lin Feng sounded calm. He then added: "Alright, let's begin."

"I'm attacking, be careful." said Lin Rui while nodding. His ice spirit was invading the atmosphere with a powerful energy. The coldness was piercing to the bones. He took a step forwards and ice Qi rushed towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng shook his head. They were fighting, Lin Rui didn't have to be so polite to him.

Lin Feng moved his right foot forward and raised his arm with a fierce sword energy. At the moment, when the sword energy was about to reach Lin Rui's body, Lin Feng slashed his hand down.

A hero at dusk, under the setting sun, the brilliance was slowly fading.

When Lin Rui saw Lin Feng's hand, he felt like he was seeing an illusion. He had the feeling that the sun was starting to set.

“Sword of the Setting Sun!”

Lin Feng had used his hand as the sword. His hand cut through the atmosphere, blood sprayed into the air and Lin Rui's arm was sent flying through the air.

One strike was enough to remove one of Lin Rui's arms.

## Chapter 265: The Terrible Loss!

---

When the crowd saw that arm flying in the air, they were astonished once again.

That attack didn't diffuse resplendent light, they hadn't even seen a sword. Lin Feng's sword was his hand. His entire body was a sword. It was a sword without brightness and splendour.

In a short time, Lin Feng surprisingly had become extremely strong. Even the respectable elder couldn't rival him anymore. He hadn't even been able to withstand a single attack.

Lin Rui had the strength of the ninth Ling Qi layer, he just needed one more step to reach the Xuan Qi layer. But what was Lin Feng's level? Lin Feng was only seventeen years old and was young like many of the juniors of the Lin Clan, but the people of the Lin Clan always relied on their parents and on the clan.

Lin Feng was absolutely different from the others because he was already extremely strong and already controlled an army. That was a huge difference and the young people of the Lin Clan would be unable to catch up with him.

That young man who had been expelled from the Lin Clan was already above their entire clan and made them prostrate themselves before him.

“Ahhhh....”

Lin Rui gave a horrible shriek. He raised his remaining arm and released all the ice Qi that he could, not hesitating and putting everything into his attack.

But Lin Feng moved again, he was quick and agile. He seemed moved in fusion with the earth, he looked mysterious. A light flashed, immediately, Lin Rui's hand slightly touched Lin Feng's shoulder and ice started to appear, but then Lin Feng slightly moved his hand and a sword light filled the atmosphere.

“Slash!”

Lin Feng's hand slashed like a meteor, blood sprayed and filled the air. Lin Rui's other arm had just been cut off. Lin Feng had cut it off as easily as the first arm.

Lin Feng was much stronger than Lin Rui.

Lin Feng dashed past Lin Rui and at that moment, he was behind Lin Rui's back, Lin Feng's hand had pierced his back and he looked calm and peaceful.

“Ahhhh....”

A cry of agony spread in the air. Lin Rui had the impression that the world around him was vibrating. His body was violently shaking.



Blood didn't stop flowing onto the ground, but Lin Rui's heart felt even more painful than his arms which had been cut off. If Lin Feng didn't kill him, he crippled his cultivation.

“Respectable Elder, back in the past, you were very strong and controlled everything. You could do whatever you wished. You expelled my father and me from the clan, you chose a new clan head, you attacked and hurt my father. Now, I came back and I am stronger than you, therefore, I now control everything. I can now do as I wish. If I want to cut your arms off, I can, if I want to kill you, I can.”

Lin Feng's voice was coming from Lin Rui's back, these words were the harsh reality. Strength was the most important thing in that world. If one was strong, one had power over weaker people and could thus do as they wished. Lin Rui used to have the advantage, he had injured Lin Feng's father and had expelled him. Now, Lin Feng was stronger than him and had easily cut off his arms, who could do anything against that?

If he wanted to cripple anyone's cultivation, he could if he wanted to kill anyone, he could.

Lin Rui's heart was bleeding. At that moment, his heart was filled with venom but his mouth was firmly closed. He didn't dare say anything to Lin Feng. Lin Feng was right, in that world, the strong could control everything. If Lin Rui wanted to stay alive, he had to keep his mouth shut, even if he hated Lin Feng.

Becoming a cripple is still better than dying. Lin Rui was already old and cherished life, he didn't want to die.

“Lin Rui, today, I will have mercy on you and will not kill you. You are now half-dead. I cut off your arms because of what you did in the past. Now you need to vanish from my sight. If, someday, you have the possibility of getting your revenge, come at me.” said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. No matter what his status was, in that world, all that mattered was strength.

Lin Rui was shaking. He turned around and looked at Lin Feng. Immediately after, he started walking and slowly left. He looked lonely and desolate, that was the price he had to pay for having made such a grave mistake in the past.

After Lin Rui left, Lin Feng gazed into the distance and then looked at the great elder and the third elder. He said, sounding cold and indifferent: “Great Elder, Third Elder, you two can cripple your own cultivation. Don’t make me do it personally, otherwise, there will be an extra fee of two arms.”

Lin Feng sounded calm and serene while the two elders were deathly pale. They should have expected it, Lin Feng was getting his revenge for all the bad things they had all done to him in the past.

Back then, they kept humiliating Lin Feng, forced him to leave, these two people had been Lin Ba Dao’s accomplices, that’s why Lin Feng wanted to make them cripple their own cultivation.

When the Great Elder saw the armless silhouette in the distance, he suddenly burst into an insane laughter. Immediately after, he

moved his hand and bombarded his own cultivation. He groaned and blood gushed from his mouth. He had crippled his own cultivation.

The third elder was shaking, he was slowly and hesitantly moving his hand, but not attacking.

“Third Elder, if you don’t want to die, cripple your own cultivation immediately.” said the great elder sounding tense. The third elder was shaking even more, he glanced at the great elder and crippled his own cultivation as well.

The head of the clan, Lin Ba Dao, had died, the third uncle Lin Hao Ran had died, the ninth elder had died, the respectable elder no longer had arms, the great elder and third elder had crippled their own cultivation.

Lin Feng had come back and spread terror amongst people’s hearts.

Lin Feng was standing on the fighting stage and looking at the crowd, sounding indifferent, he said: “All others, I will not touch you, even if you hate me, that is, of course, providing that you behave properly. Of course, if you want to get your revenge, you can also come and find me. The best thing is for you to think carefully about your future though.”

When Lin Feng finished talking, he turned around and moved down from the stage, he raised his hand, in a flash, the myriad of troops climbed onto their horses. They were a perfectly trained

elite army. Lin Feng and the troops were making history together.

Lin Feng also jumped onto his horse that was brought, he looked domineering.

“Let’s go.” said Lin Feng sounding indifferent. At that moment, a voice spread in the atmosphere.

“Wait, wait!”

When Lin Feng heard that voice, he stopped but didn’t turn around. He just waited for the other person to talk.

“Lin Feng, will you consider coming back to the Lin Clan?” said a hopeless-sounding voice which made everybody else shiver and look towards Lin Feng.

Indeed, would Lin Feng ever return to the Lin Clan?

If Lin Feng accepted to go back to the Lin Clan, not only would it give him nothing but it would give incredible prestige to the Lin Clan. It would make them become one of the most prestigious clans in the entire region.

That hopeless voice was resonating in people’s hearts but nobody dared speak, the same person spoke again.

“If you are willing to come back to the Lin Clan, we can make all

those who opposed you in the past leave the clan, including Lin Qian.”

The person spoke again because they had seen that Lin Feng remained silent. The whole crowd was quiet. Indeed, if Lin Feng accepted, they could forget about Lin Qian, just like they did to Lin Feng in the past. Back in the past, they had chosen the proud and arrogant Lin Qian, who couldn't rival with Lin Feng any longer.

Lin Qian looked at Lin Ba Dao's corpse and felt extremely sad. She used to be the pride of the Lin Clan. Even in Yangzhou City, many people respected her, but because of Lin Feng, her glory had been destroyed. Lin Feng was much more prestigious than her.

Lin Qian could still vaguely remember when she had gone to the Yun Hai Sect and humiliated Lin Feng while looking down on him, but all of this was already the past.

“Back in the past, when I was expelled from the Lin Clan, nobody said a word. Now that you see that I am strong and have a high status and you want me to come back to the clan, is that even possible? There are some things which cannot be taken back.”

Lin Feng was on his horse, he didn't even turn around to look at them. Immediately after, he left at full speed with his horse emitting whistling sounds through the atmosphere.

The myriad of Chi Xie troops seemed to be flying. The ground was shaking along with people's hearts.

The Lin Clan were all looking at the leaving silhouettes. Their hearts were filled with mixed feelings. Some things could not be taken back. Lin Feng was right, when everybody kept humiliating him, who had said a word? Who spared even a single word to help Lin Feng? When the Lin Clan wanted to kill Lin Feng, who had said anything to try and save him?

These days, Lin Feng was extremely strong and was the officer of a huge army, only now they wanted him to go back to the clan, was that even possible?

They could never get back what they threw away and discarded, never!

## Chapter 266: Lin Feng Is Dangerous!

---

At the end of the year, Yangzhou City was always extraordinarily lively. On the road, people were standing around in small groups.

At that moment, in Yangzhou City, there was a majestic army composed of Chi Xie armored cavalry. They were making an inspection tour of the city, all of them looked domineering and imposing. Everybody was looking at them with a deep respect.

“The Chi Xie troops are extremely majestic. It is said that they are all elite soldiers. Now, they are in our city.”

On the road, the Chi Xie horses were trotting. The crowd was looking at these majestic horses. Some people were talking about them.

“That is an honour for our city. Now that the Chi Xie troops are here, we are incredibly prestigious within the entire region. Who will dare provoke us?”

“You’re right, last year, I had the chance to see the Chi Xie officer with my own eyes. He was only about sixteen years old but at the annual cultivation meeting of Yangzhou City, he had displayed incredible abilities. He was much stronger than Na Lan Feng or Lin Qian. They couldn’t even withstand a single attack. At that moment, I already knew that the officer would become an incredible person. I just wouldn’t have thought that it would happen in such a short period of time.” said a man with a long moustache. He sounded so proud that it made people around him

feel exasperated.

One year before, there had been a young man at the cultivation meeting of Yangzhou City but the members belonging to the biggest clans had attacked him and forced him to escape.

One year later, that young man had become more mature, more determined and extremely strong. He looked extremely majestic and imposing on his horse, controlling several thousand soldiers. He had returned to Yangzhou City as a glorious young hero.

Since that moment, the four big clans of Yangzhou City had sunk to new lows. There was only Lin Feng controlling a military government. He had replaced the former government and shut out the clans from city affairs.

But the people were excited and delighted by all of this. They had heard that Lin Feng wanted to build a Chi Xie castle and take measures to make Yangzhou City grow more influential. Yangzhou people were, of course, happy because they would be able to enjoy more benefits, including benefits for their practice of cultivation.

At that moment, the government infrastructure was in constant change, the Chi Xie troops were busy enlarging the government palace.

Within one day, all the walls surrounding the government had been destroyed.



At that moment, Lin Feng was standing in an underground passage. While looking at the tunnel, Lin Feng looked pensive.

The Chi Xie troops had just finished digging this passageway and it was pitch-dark. Strong as they were, they had already done half of the work for him.

Since Lin Feng had become the officer of such powerful soldiers, he, of course, used them to accomplish difficult tasks.

His silhouette flickered and he disappeared down the passageway. After a short moment, he appeared in the middle of a room. In front of him was a huge table.

Standing on the left and right of the table, there were three silhouettes, they looked pensive.

These three people were the former middle, left and right officers, Ren Qing Kuang, Feng Yu Han and Lei Qing Tian. They all used to have their own armies but now, they were assisting Lin Feng and staying by his side.

“Lin Feng, look, we are here, here we can dig a river. Then, we can build towers on these eight strategic locations. The government building is in a valley so even people of the Xuan Qi layer come, in normal circumstances, we should be able to defeat them.” Feng Yu Han sounded full of confidence. The Chi Xie troops were elite soldiers. Ren Qing Kuang was an expert at planning and defensive military strategy. The left officer, Feng Yu Han, was an expert at organizing military formations and offensive strategies.

The right officer, Lei Qing Tian, was an expert at organizing a geographical strategy and modifying terrain to protect the troops. They were all extremely skilled officers.

Obviously, controlling such a huge army required them to divide the tasks. All these officers had their own tasks to fulfil.

Lin Feng was carefully observing the table. He slightly nodded and said: “Uncle Feng, you can reorganize the city as you wish. I just need you to help me build a secret underground city.”

“Constructing an underground city will not be difficult now because the troops are extremely happy to follow your orders. However, the Imperial City will not help us again. We have to rely on ourselves. If we spend too much time and money on all of this, it might become complicated. Besides, the troops could also lose their enthusiasm over time.

Lin Feng slightly nodded. That was indeed a problem. Currently, the troops were in a perfect state of mind. Even if they accepted to help and invest from their own pocket, that wasn't a solution for the long-term.

An army was extremely strong but also required a lot of things. They required pills, purity stones, weapons, armour and battle horses, besides, constructing all these things in Yangzhou City also required a colossal amount of resources.

“I understand. I will find a solution for all of this.” said Lin Feng. Immediately after, he looked at Ren Qing Kuang and Lei Qing Tian

and said: “Uncle Ren, you can take care of the weapons and constructions. Uncle Lei, you can take care of the guards and protection of the city. You are all working very hard, thank you.”

“Alright.”

“Don’t worry, I can do it.”

The two officers replied to Lin Feng. These days, Yangzhou City was Lin Feng’s fief, he could not let the army suffer. He had to make his army become even stronger and expand his power. He still remembered the memories from the strong cultivator. They were all extremely valuable and precious memories with vast knowledge.

Sooner or later, the city of Yangzhou would rise and draw the attention of the entire country.

Lin Feng didn’t intend to go back to the Imperial City in the following months. He wanted to concentrate his attention on Yangzhou City.

“Uncles, you are all working very hard, thank you.”

Lin Feng looked grateful. These three people used to be officers and these days, they were following and assisting him. That would always remain engraved in Lin Feng’s memory.

“Lin Feng, the three of us, as well as Jiu Chi Xie followed the

general even at the cost of our lives. Now, the general's heart had died with Jiu Chi Xie. The three of us, in short, are willing to help you because the general trusts you with the future of the army, and because of that we trust you too."

Ren Qing Kuang was looking at Lin Feng and his eyes were filled with hope. Lin Feng was extremely frivolous and had dared to kill Duan Tian Lang's son, Duan Han, for Liu Cang Lan. If Lin Feng didn't become extremely powerful, the three of them would give up because it was clear to them that these days, Liu Cang Lan's heart was no longer the same, he didn't have the same ambition as he used to. If they were on Liu Cang Lan's side, there wouldn't be much to do.

Therefore, they had listened to Liu Cang Lan and had decided to follow Lin Feng and help him achieve his ambitions. Only they could understand the glory of such things.

Lin Feng understood that as well, which is why he had to be extremely ambitious.

.....

In a clean and tidy room, all the furniture was brand new. Lin Feng pushed the door and entered that room. There was a gorgeous silhouette sluggishly lying on a bed and looking at the ceiling. It was impossible to say what that person was thinking.

Meng Qing looked at Lin Feng and then turned around again. She looked as cold as before.

Lin Feng smiled wryly. How come he hadn't managed to make her heart melt yet?

But it was also very clear to Lin Feng that these days, he could freely enter Meng Qing's room. That was already a good thing. If it had been someone else, that person would probably have been frozen stiff by Meng Qing.

Only Lin Feng could go into her room.

Lin Feng walked towards Meng Qing and spoke in a low voice: "What are you thinking about?"

Meng Qing slightly shook her head and said: "Nothing."

Lin Feng got closer to the bed and slowly sat down. Meng Qing moved her legs away allowing Lin Feng to sit down.

"Are you thinking about me?" asked Lin Feng with a smile on his face.

But Meng Qing was just calmly looking at him coldly which made Lin Feng's face become rigid. That girl was way too difficult to understand.....

Meng Qing still lying on the bed looked at the ceiling again, ignoring Lin Feng.

Lin Feng slightly moved closer to Meng Qing which made her move back a bit more.

She was staring at Lin Feng approaching, she then glared as if she was looking at a dangerous enemy.

Lin Feng scratched his head and kept approaching Meng Qing which finally made her react, she was blinking nervously.

“Can I hug you?” said Lin Feng while looking at that breathtaking beauty.

“Only if you do it without speaking.” said Meng Qing. Lin Feng had anticipated that reply and was already hugging her, pushing her head onto his chest.

## Chapter 267: The Nine Palaces

---

Meng Qing and Lin Feng were locked in an embrace. Meng Qing was shaking from head to toe. She had no strength anymore. She couldn't do anything but follow Lin Feng's movements and lean on his chest.

Meng Qing raised her head and looked at Lin Feng. Their faces were very close. At that moment, something very rare happened, emotion flashed through Meng Qing's eyes and she looked shy. Her pure and holy face suddenly turned red, which made Lin Feng's heartbeat accelerate.

“Let me go!”

Surprisingly, Meng Qing was struggling to move away from Lin Feng but he was holding her too tightly. Very quickly, she stopped struggling and lowered her head not daring to look at Lin Feng's scorching hot eyes.

Lin Feng smiled, that girl was cold but she still listened to Lin Feng.

“I like holding you.” said Lin Feng while smiling. Meng Qing slowly turned her head around and raised it while looking at Lin Feng. Her eyes betrayed her at that moment.

Meng Qing then calmed down and laid against Lin Feng's chest again. Lin Feng was hugging her and she was feeling calm and at ease. It was such a perfect moment.

That short moment seemed like an eternity. Lin Feng was tightly holding onto that absolutely gorgeous young woman. His heart was beating quickly. She was enchanting. However, Lin Feng was not thinking of the act between a man and a woman, but was still feeling a strange warmth rising within him.

“Meng Qing, look at me.” After being silent for a while, Lin Feng spoke.

Meng Qing, who was lying on Lin Feng’s chest raised her head and looked at Lin Feng. She looked a bit surprised.

“You truly are beautiful.” said Lin Feng while smiling. Meng Qing felt unfamiliar emotions. She looked shy again. Every girl liked it when the person they loved thought they were beautiful.

Meng Qing, even though she was an unusual girl, was, after all, still a girl. She also understood the feelings of love and hatred. Once a girl fell in love with a boy, she wouldn’t be that different from the others, everyone became a child when in love.

Lin Feng was lowering his head getting nearer and nearer to Meng Qing’s face. Meng Qing looked extremely embarrassed, she was shaking and her heart was pounding. She wanted to escape but at the same time, she didn’t want to go anywhere.

Finally, Lin Feng pressed his lips against her lips. Meng Qing was shaking. It was like an electric shock. Her eyes were wide open, her face was rigid, she didn’t know what was happening, but it felt



right.

They didn't kiss for a very long time before Lin Feng moved his head back and looked at Meng Qing. He smiled at her in a very sweet way.

Meng Qing looked at Lin Feng and saw that he was smiling. She looked extremely shy. She didn't dare look at him. She had the feeling that she was drowning in emotion. She was extremely shy and nervous.

Actually, Lin Feng was nervous too. It was the first time that he had fallen in love with someone. It was also the first time that he embraced and kissed a girl. How could he not be nervous?

Even though he could use his sword and remain calm in the middle of a bloodbath, when it came to girls, Lin Feng was very nervous. Maybe he lacked experience.

"Meng Qing, have a good rest." said Lin Feng while standing up and looking at Meng Qing. Immediately after, he turned around and started to leave.

After Lin Feng left, Meng Qing raised her head, she was excited and embarrassed at the same time. She sat down and put her hands on her knees. She looked pensive.

She wanted to remember a smile. In her thoughts slowly appeared a smile, a warm smile.

.....

Three months later, many things had been constructed in Yangzhou City. There were vast new buildings that had been constructed. Besides, there were also eight huge towers, which were a few hundred meters high, and when looking up at them, they seemed to reach the stars.

Besides, the old government building had become the headquarters for the new government. It was much more extravagant than in the past. Besides, it was very lively inside and there were things constantly going on. However, the people didn't know what was happening there apart from the fact that the government was undergoing reconstruction.

In an underground place, Lin Feng was sitting cross-legged, motionless.

At that moment, Lin Feng had the feeling that he had reached an extremely high level of earth fusion. In his mind, there was a dark world in which a myriad of bright lights were flashing. These lights were all in different corners, seeming unorganized.

These disorderly and unsystematic lights seemed like they had been put there randomly but actually, when looking at them from the right angle, one could notice a special form, it looked mysterious.

Many surplus souls were moving towards these lights and finally,

a strength attracted them.

A light appeared between two lights and all of the lights seemed to be fused into a shape. The dark atmosphere slowly became brighter.

Immediately after the lights appeared, the lights were getting more and more intense in that dark atmosphere. They were gathering together making the dark atmosphere extremely bright, and even dazzling.

The lights were also moving faster and faster. The lights were slowly adopting a peculiar shape, the shape of nine palaces.

In Xue Yue, cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer were considered as extremely strong cultivators because they could control and condense Qi from the world to transform it into pure Qi that could be used, thus benefitting from its strength. Each thread of pure Qi contained a colossal amount of strength. At the same time, cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer could also gradually learn how to control the strength of their soul, which helped them concoct pills and increased the power of pills, weapons and their attacks.

Besides, before breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer, even though some people could use various strong methods, they still couldn't benefit from the strength of the soul which strongly limited their abilities.

Every cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer had a few basic cultivation techniques. At least, they all practiced until they could perfectly

control pure Qi. There wasn't a single one of them who couldn't control it.

However, pure Qi control could be stronger or weaker, there could be large quantities and small quantities controlled by the cultivator. Weak pure Qi control only enabled the cultivator to condense pure Qi a little bit quicker. However, the strength was limited. Strong pure Qi control enabled cultivators to unceasingly use stronger pure Qi, but it required more time.

At that moment, Lin Feng was practicing his pure Qi condensation.

Even though Lin Feng had a lot of purity stones, it wasn't enough to supply his army. Therefore, the thing was to provide his army with the best cultivation practices, in order to save the use of purity stones.

At the moment, he was still in fusion with the earth. Lin Feng's eyes were closed. His consciousness was in a world filled with darkness and bright lights.

His mouth moved, he then immediately said: "Condense!"

At that moment, Lin Feng was insanely shaking, he groaned, his eyes slightly opened.

Lin Feng coughed and raised his head. He looked around him. There were dazzling lights surrounding him and they were slowly

condensing. When the last light was fused with the others, an incredibly dazzling aura appeared, there were nine palaces and they started absorbing the pure Qi of heaven and earth.

Lin Feng couldn't bear the pain, but the shapes that appeared made him smile.

“The nine small palaces of Qi condensation, what a powerful technique.”

Lin Feng could feel the pure Qi from the earth starting to gravitate towards him. The cultivation towers of the Celestial Academy provided incredible amounts of pure Qi. The pure Qi would be drawn towards the tower and would fill the rooms for cultivation practice.

Lin Feng was now also able to condense pure Qi. These nine small palaces were already extremely powerful.

“The knowledge that the cultivator of the Zun Qi layer transmitted to me is, as expected, extraordinary. I have now been learning Surplus Souls and can make a hundred surplus souls appear. My soul has also become much stronger, coupled with earth fusion. If I didn't have all these things, I wouldn't be able to condense Qi to such a degree.” whispered Lin Feng. His extremely strong soul was giving him the chance to become much stronger. The Surplus Souls technique as well as the Earth Fusion had been indispensable to him when it came to condensing pure Qi.

A moment before, people in the government building were

stupefied. Above them in the sky there was a pattern that appeared, it looked like nine palaces, but then, in the blink of an eye, they disappeared again. They had just sensed the pure Qi as if all the Qi of heaven and earth was moving towards them.

At the same time, around the government building, many people were stupefied as well. They had also sensed the pure Qi emerging from the earth, as if there had been a strange strength absorbing the powerful pure Qi of heaven and earth.

Only an extremely strong cultivator of the Xuan Qi Layer could have managed to condense pure Qi like that.

After the people sensed the Qi, they all looked in the same direction, the government building!

## Chapter 268: Celestial River

---

Two months after, the government buildings looked completely different, it was like a new small city was built within the city of Yangzhou.

The government area was much bigger than before. There were palaces, pavilions and even a castle within the area. It looked majestic and it gave the feeling of power and military might.

Besides, it seemed like it was still not complete. They hadn't constructed any ramparts yet as they were still expanding outwards and reconstructing.

Apart from the Chi Xie troops who were constructing things, within the government area, there were other people as well. There were some people who had been hired to help and some others who were working as volunteers.

At that moment in Yangzhou City, everybody wanted to go to the government area and were happy to do some manual labour because there was an incredible quantity of pure Qi that seemed to be gathered there, which meant that it was an extremely beneficial place for cultivators.

On the path of cultivation, the pure Qi of heaven and earth could alter bones, flesh, blood, and improve cultivation. A cultivator would have never refuse a environment rich in pure Qi.

Besides, in Yangzhou City, there weren't many people who had

purity stones. Those who practiced cultivation using purity stones lived a life of luxury. Ordinary people could only absorb the pure Qi of heaven and earth which was present in the atmosphere. However, these days, the government area was filled with pure Qi in which the manual workers could bathe all day while working. Then, in the evening, they could practice cultivation in the outer area.

The government area was already divided into an inner-government area and an outer area. The inner-government area could be accessed only by Chi Xie soldiers, the core members of the government, it was strictly prohibited for other people to enter it. If someone tried to enter it, they would be executed on the spot.

At that moment, some silhouettes were passing through the door of which led from the inner-government area to the outer area. They were Chi Xie troops galloping at full speed while creating a hurricane of dust. In a flash, they had left.

“Officer Lin Feng is such a heroic and majestic young man.”

“Indeed, as he’s as young as the rumors said. It’s such an honour to be able to see Officer Lin Feng.”

Outside, there was a lively crowd who saw the Chi Xie horses pass by. Their eyes were alight with excitement. These days, in Yangzhou City, Lin Feng had become a legend, a myth. His name was on everybody’s lips. Seeing Lin Feng was, for them, an honour. Besides, even though Lin Feng was the Marquis of Yangzhou, they liked to call him “Officer Lin Feng” even more.



The term “officer” was majestic and imposing, it perfectly corresponded with Lin Feng’s status.

“By the way, have you ever seen the officer’s girlfriend? She wears a fine veil just like a celestial being.”

“Of course I have seen her. Even though we can’t see her face, I can guess that she’s an exceptional woman. The officer couldn’t be with a girl who doesn’t match him. They definitely suit each other.”

People were making various comments. At that moment, Lin Feng’s horse had already rushed past.

“Meng Qing, everybody is saying that you are my girlfriend.” said Lin Feng on his horse while glancing at Meng Qing who was galloping next to him. Lin Feng was smiling, he had clearly heard what these people were saying.

Meng Qing glanced at Lin Feng but didn’t say anything. But Lin Feng kept smiling wholeheartedly. In the past, Meng Qing used to be ice-cold and expressionless. These days, she was at least looking at him which could be considered as an improvement.

A group of Chi Xie horses were leaving the government area, and then immediately they left Yangzhou City as well, galloping towards an ancient road.

.....

Celestial River was an ancient city with a history which dated back to millions of years.

That majestic ancient city, even though it had gone through the challenges of time, still had the atmosphere of an ancient city. At the entrance gate, there was an incredibly artistic ferocious beast carved into the stone. It was a legendary wild beast, a Phoenix. There was fire was burning on the back of its wings. That beast was filled with ancient Qi.

Celestial River also had another nickname: Phoenix City.

Celestial River was situated in the middle of the Xue Yue Country. It was surrounded by what seemed to be an endless desert. When one stretched one's eyes as far as one could see, there was nothing but yellow sand. However, that geographical position didn't affect the development of the city which was a huge trading center, one of the biggest in Xue Yue. The city was filled with flourishing businesses of all sorts, including fields of real estate and different trade industries.

Local people were very rare. Since the beginning of time, Celestial River had been a city in which people came to carry out transactions and find the objects they desired the most. With time, the local population had almost gone extinct and most of the population was businesses.

There was a saying in Xue Yue which said: "If you need

something, you will find it at Celestial River.”

In Celestial River, the average quantity of extremely strong cultivators was also higher than the national average to the extent that it had some of the strongest cultivators of the country. Those who didn't have a high cultivation were embarrassed to go there, considering they would encounter strong cultivators on frequent occasions.

On the street, when a person saw another unknown cultivator, maybe he was a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer or even of the Xuan Qi layer. That contributed to making the city even more appealing.

At that moment, outside of Celestial River, a group of Chi Xie horses were galloping on the yellow sand surrounded by a cloud of yellow dust. They were galloping towards Celestial River. That group was composed of only three people, Lin Feng and two others.

Lin Feng and Meng Qing were galloping at the front and Ba Dao, who was wearing a mask and following them. These days, Ba Dao seemed introverted. He was also able to better control his aggressiveness and his temper.

“Meng Qing, Celestial River carries out very liberal politics, you can enter as you wish. However, inside, it can be perilous, people are cruel and merciless. A person should not hide their presence or they may be attacked by others.” said Lin Feng to Meng Qing. Meng Qing's lifestyle used to be completely different so Lin Feng was doing his best to tell her as many things as possible.

“Alright.” said Meng Qing while slightly nodding. Lin Feng turned his head and looked in front of him. Coming from the left, two armored horses were rushing into the city before them.

“Two cultivators of the ninth Ling Qi layer.” whispered Ba Dao behind Lin Feng and Meng Qing. Lin Feng was stupefied. As expected, the rumors about Celestial River were true.

At that moment, they were rushing through the yellow desert, then arrived on a road made of bluestone leading towards the city gate.

But at the same time, two silhouettes descended from the air landing under the Phoenix City gate blocking their way.

Lin Feng, Ba Dao and Meng Qing reined in their horses which started trotting and eventually came to a stop.

They looked at the two silhouettes who were in front of them. They were two men, who were about thirty years old. One of them looked ice-cold and dark while the other had an evil smile on his face. These people were definitely not here with good intentions.

“What do you want?” said Lin Feng sounding cold.

“Every person who wishes to enter the city must pay a fee of ten purity stones of medium quality which means that you three have to pay thirty purity stones in total. Three hundred purity stones of

lower quality would be fine as well.” said the one who was smiling evilly.

Lin Feng frowned.

“Celestial River is the city of freedom, you can enter and leave as you wish. Since when do you have to pay a tax? Besides, even if there was a tax, why would I give it to you?” said Lin Feng sounding detached.

“Because I say so. So no need to speak nonsense.” said the evil looking person furiously when he heard Lin Feng.

Lin Feng’s facial expression turned ice-cold. A moment ago, two people had entered the city and these two didn’t stop them. When they arrived, these people came down. They most probably thought that they were weak.

As expected, Celestial River was a heaven for strong cultivators and hell for weak ones.

“What if I don’t give you anything?” said Lin Feng sounding indifferent.

“If you don’t give me anything?” said the man with the evil smile. Even though Celestial River was full of extremely strong cultivators, not all of them were strong. Lin Feng was very young and had high natural talent but how strong could young cultivators be when compared to their elders? Young people like

Lin Feng were the favourite targets of these two men.

They were always stationed above the city gate and stealing purity stones. It was extremely easy to get purity stones because people who came to Celestial River often had all their money to purchase goods.

“If you don’t give it, you will die!” said the one with the evil smile on his face. He released some deadly Qi.

“Sacrificing three lives for thirty purity stones of medium quality, are you sure that it is the right decision?” asked the one with the evil smile. His Qi was getting denser and denser.

“No need, I’m sure.” said Lin Feng while turning around and moving his horse forwards. These two men smiled coldly and said: “Do you think that you can just leave like that?”

But at the moment they finished talking, Ba Dao rushed over to them releasing a terrifying Qi. At that moment, Ba Dao’s Qi turned into blade energy, it was extremely sharp and ice-cold.

At that moment, these two men’s facial expressions changed drastically. His blade Qi was extremely powerful, there was also blade force. Besides, that Qi had the force was at the seventh Qi layer, which was the same level as theirs.

“Die!” said Ba Dao. In these two men’s eyes, an expression of hopelessness appeared. A bright, resplendent and dazzling light cut

through the air and removed their heads from their body.

Ba Dao remained expressionless.

“Let’s go.” said Lin Feng and the three people entered Celestial River.

At that moment, in the distance, there were a few silhouettes, two boys and one girl. When they saw these two heads fly away, they took a deep breath.

“What a strong and powerful blade!” said the girl in a low voice. These three people had arrived in Celestial River earlier but because of these two people, they hadn’t dared enter the city and were trying to hide in the distance. Ba Dao had immediately killed the two men.

“Who’s the person who’s wearing the mask? He should already be a master of blade force. I heard that the second core disciple of the Hao Yue Clan, the Blademaster, was also coming to Celestial River, could that be him?” whispered the girl. The two boys on her side said: “If he is the Blademaster, who are the two others?”

The young girl shook her head indicating that she didn’t know either. Immediately after, these three people entered Celestial River.

# Chapter 269: The Blademaster

---

The big power closest to Celestial River was the Hao Yue Sect. The second was the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, therefore, in Celestial River, there were always plenty of disciples of the Hao Yue Sect and of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village.

In Celestial River, they could find all the things they needed. They obviously enjoyed spending time there.

A year before, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had been inaugurated, the Yun Hai Sect had been annihilated, and at the same time, the Hao Yue Sect and the Ice and Snow Mountain Village had to give up many of their outstanding disciples to send them to study at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. In a year, the biggest sects of the country had completely shaken.

For example, now, the best core disciple of the Hao Yue Sect was Jiang Shan and the second was Leng Yue aka the Blademaster. Amongst the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, Bing Yuan was one of the best talents. All of them were illustrious disciples, they were rising stars.

Amongst all of them, the Blademaster was particularly amazing. He was even more monstrous than Jiang Shan. Leng Yue's blade was piercingly-cold, the cold pierced to the bones like needles. Leng Yue rarely needed a second blade strike in his battles, one was enough to kill his opponents. Very often, he didn't even need to take out his blade to kill his opponents.



The Blademaster's blade had reached perfection. It was said that, when he had the power of the third Ling Qi layer, he had understood how to control blade force, then when he had the strength of the sixth Ling Qi layer, he had learnt how to use energy attacks and these days, he was extremely strong and had broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer. However, with his energy attacks, he was already able to defeat cultivators of the ninth Ling Qi layer. People who dared to fight against him were rare.

Leng Yue's blade didn't appear randomly, if he took his blade out, it meant he was going to kill. Therefore, in a short time, within the last six months, he had gained the nickname "The Blademaster".

Everybody knew the eight high-officials of Xue Yue, many people thought that, in the future, the Blademaster could become one of them.

On the central road of Celestial River, there was the Celestial Mountain Restaurant. Many people were having a break there and drinking some alcohol.

At that moment, a silhouette stepped onto the wooden floor of the restaurant, when the people in the restaurant saw that silhouette, everybody went quiet.

"There is some blade energy."

"That blade energy is so cold."

The crowd was stupefied. Everybody was staring at the person who had just entered the restaurant. That person looked like an ordinary young man.

That young man didn't look like a noble cultivator. He didn't seem normal either. The only noticeable thing was that he was carrying a blade on his back. It was an ancient one, it was even partly rusted. People were trying to guess how old that blade really was.

Everybody was staring at that common and ordinary young man and remained silent, it was because he was releasing an extremely strong and powerful blade Qi which seemed like it could explode at any moment and kill people.

When that young man looked at the crowd, they had the impression that his eyes were like blades.

The young man came in and indifferently glanced at the crowd. Everybody could feel the sharpness of his blade. Everybody was avoiding looking into his eyes, they didn't dare.

But at that moment, the young man stopped. His blade-like eyes started looking at someone. That person was wearing a bronze mask and was releasing an incredibly brutal blade Qi.

That person was like him, a blade cultivator.

But that person's blade was a brutal blade, his was a sharp blade.

The young man smiled as he found the situation amusing and then stopped looking at him, went away and chose a place to sit. Because of him, the atmosphere in the restaurant had become quite oppressive.

“Ba Dao, how strong is he?” asked Lin Feng to Ba Dao in a low voice. They were sitting at a table on the second floor and were next to the banister.

“Very strong, I cannot defeat him, my strength and blade Qi is not as strong as his.” replied Ba Dao and then continued: “He has broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer.”

“Oh.” said Lin Feng while nodding. He had, of course, noticed that that young man was stronger than Ba Dao. Considering the blade energy that he released and in view of the fact that he had broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer, he could probably already use energy attacks and was at the point of condensing pure Qi.

Everybody could sense his strong blade energy. He wasn't releasing as much blade energy as he could though. He was actually very relaxed yet was releasing such a powerful blade energy, as if he couldn't control it. It was not under his control, because he had not mastered how to successfully condense his Pure Qi, small amounts of the pure Qi he was attempting to condense would be released along with each heartbeat.

Coupled with the fact that he had the strength of the eighth Ling

Qi layer, he could easily kill people of the ninth Ling Qi layer. Besides, people who were as strong as him, yet as young as him, were extremely rare.

“But he is too arrogant. He cannot rival you.” said Ba Dao, which made Lin Feng smile.

“Shamelessly boasting.” joked someone at the same time. That voice came from the table beside Lin Feng and his friends. At that table there was four people, two boys and two girls.

The one who had said these words was a young girl. She was looking at Lin Feng and Ba Dao. She then said, sounding ice-cold: “You’re really shamelessly boasting. You really are ridiculous. Leng Yue is my fellow disciple, from the Hao Yue Sect. He’s extremely strong and has amazing natural talent. His nickname is the Blademaster. In the future, he will be the same as Chu Zhan Peng the high-official of our sect. He will become one of the eight high-officials. Who do you think you are?”

These four people were acting extremely arrogant, they really thought they were above everyone else. Besides, they were disciples of the Hao Yue Sect which is why they were proud of the Blademaster and Chu Zhan Peng.

“The Blademaster? What an arrogant name.” replied Ba Dao. He immediately added: “But I’ve never heard of him before.”

The name was as sharp as a blade, “Blademaster” was indeed an arrogant nickname.

“Kacha!” a cutting sound emerged in the atmosphere. The banister next to Lin Feng’s table was broken. The place where it had been cut was neat and clean, as if it had been cut with an extremely sharp blade.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at the first floor over the banister. He saw that Blademaster was sitting at his table and drinking some alcohol. At that moment, the Blademaster put his glass down onto his table and said while sounding indifferent.

“Next time that you open your mouth, be a little bit more respectful.”

He sounded calm and didn’t try to hide his arrogance.

“He definitely deserves his nickname, he’s extremely powerful. I didn’t even seen him take his blade out.” thought some people. Some young girls were looking at him with sparkling eyes. If only they could marry such a young man, that would be wonderful.

Ba Dao stood up, some brutal Qi was emerging from his body.

“Sit down!” said Lin Feng sounding indifferent. Ba Dao was surprised. He immediately sat down again, yet still released some cold Qi.

“Drink some alcohol.” said Lin Feng calmly. Ba Dao grabbed his glass, had a sip and then his glass broke between his fingers. Ba

Dao was a slave but had been given to the arena because he was too disobedient. He had ended up with Lin Feng who had given him freedom, but Ba Dao was still aggressive and had a strong personality.

“That guy is overestimating his own abilities.” joked the Blademaster. Ba Dao was getting angry but Lin Feng and Meng Qing were very calm. These words weren’t affecting them at all, as if they hadn’t even heard them.

“Hao Yue Sect, The Blademaster!” thought Lin Feng. He slightly smiled, it had been almost half a year since he had been out of the spotlight yet it seemed like it had been ten years, many things had changed.

For a few months, Lin Feng had stayed in the government practicing his Surplus Soul technique, increasing his Qi condensation method and studying his memories granted to him regarding pills and weapons. However, Lin Feng had the feeling that his abilities still weren’t high enough. There were too many things which he wanted to improve.

Lin Feng didn’t want to owe anything to Xue Yue, which was a tiny country. In the memories of the cultivator of the Zun Qi layer, there was one person that was almighty, by slightly waving his hand, he could make heaven and earth turn upside down.

## Chapter 270: The Dream Pavilion

---

When the boys and girls, sitting at the table next to that of Lin Feng and his friends, saw that they remained silent, they sneered at them and stopped looking at them.

“Brother, do you know why Leng Yue came to Celestial River?”

“Of course, he came to Celestial River because of a blade.” replied a boy.

“Oh?” smiled a young girl while looking at the others, and then said: “Leng Yue’s blade skills are already so high, are there still blades which can draw his attention? It probably must be an amazing blade.”

“Moon-Breaking Blade, it’s a spiritual weapon of highest quality, what do you say?” said a young boy of the Hao Yue Sect while smiling. Everybody was captivated and surprised. As expected, the Blademaster had come for the Moon-Breaking Blade. They had all heard that that blade was available in Celestial River at that time. Many people had come because of it.

“A spiritual weapon of highest quality, not many people can get it, right?”

“Hehe, if Leng Yue is here, who will dare try and get it? Unless they want to become Leng Yue’s enemies as well as the enemy of the Hao Yue Sect.”

When the crowd heard these people talking, they all understood what they meant. They were boasting about Leng Yue so that nobody would dare to try and steal the blade, the crowd understood that they had to think carefully before trying. That girl of the Hao Yue Sect knew why Leng Yue had come, so it was obviously clear that she was saying these things on purpose. The people who were with her looked proud and arrogant as well.

But in the crowd, nobody dared to contradict these people. The Hao Yue Sect had a certain influence in Celestial River. Besides, at that moment, the Blademaster was also present.

“A spiritual weapon of highest quality!” thought Lin Feng. He, obviously knew the classification of spiritual weapons. There were ordinary weapons and spiritual weapons. Spiritual weapons could cut through iron as if it were mud. They also gave a cultivator a certain superiority during battles and besides, they were also divided into three categories: low, medium and high quality.

At the Yun Hai Sect, Lin Feng had obtained spiritual weapons in the temple near the Precipice of Zhangu. Most of them were low and medium quality spiritual weapons but there were also a few high-quality spiritual weapons.

In Xue Yue, spiritual weapons and pills, no matter what quality, were all very scarce. Seeing spiritual weapons of high quality was an extremely rare thing.

There were also better weapons than spiritual weapons: mystical



weapons. In Xue Yue, there were very few of them. Cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer rarely used mystical weapons. Lin Feng had never seen any in his life.

“Ba Dao, that Moon-Breaking Blade, do you want it or not?” asked Lin Feng to Ba Dao in a low voice. Ba Dao was stupefied.

Ba Dao was a blade cultivator, he obviously loved blades, how could it not want it?

“I want it.” said Ba Dao while nodding greedily. Ba Dao was like that, if he wanted to do something, he just did it.

“Alright.” replied Lin Feng sounding indifferent while nodding. He didn’t add anything else.

After a short while, Leng Yue put his glass onto his table, stood up and left the restaurant. After that, someone else came in and took his table.

He had just left and thus the strong blade energy had vanished. The atmosphere wasn’t as oppressive anymore.

“Sister let’s go too.”

The Hao Yue Sect disciples, who were at the table next to Lin Feng, also stood up and left.

After they left, Lin Feng asked Ba Dao: “Are you going to go ask where to find your new blade?”

Ba Dao was surprised. He immediately stood up and walked to a table near them, he asked the people sitting there: “Where can we find the Moon-Breaking Blade?”

The two people sitting at the table raised their head and looked at Ba Dao. They smiled coldly and said: “You’re also wondering where the Moon-Breaking Blade is?”

“Boom.”

He had just finished talking and he released an incredible quantity of blade energy which oppressed the people who were sitting at the table. It was extremely brutal. They were shaking and looked absolutely terrified.

“In the Dream Pavilion! Today, there will be an auction sales at the Dream Pavilion!”

That person was panic-stricken and gasping with astonishment. A moment ago, Ba Dao’s blade energy was unceasingly flowing towards Leng Yue so these two people hadn’t realized how strong Ba Dao’s blade force was. At that moment, all the energy which was emerging from Ba Dao’s body had fallen onto them which gave them the impression that they would be crushed to death. What a monstrously strong blade force! That man, who was wearing a bronze mask, had already mastered blade force.

“Lead the way.” said Ba Dao. These people were surprised but obediently stood up. Fortunately, they had told Ba Dao the truth, if they had lied to him, he definitely would have killed them.

“Alright.” the person nodded in fear and led him outside of the restaurant. Lin Feng and Meng Qing also stood up and followed.

When the people in the restaurant saw Lin Feng and the others leave, the atmosphere became lively.

“Who were those people? What a strong blade energy! He is probably interested in the Moon-Breaking Blade as well.”

“Indeed, there was also that guy and that girl, they didn’t seem like ordinary cultivators. Even though they were probably weaker than the Blademaster, they also said that they wanted the Moon-Breaking Blade, it seems like there will be a great show soon.”

All sorts of comments were spreading amongst the crowd. There were even some people standing up and then leaving towards the Dream Pavilion. The rumors said that, on that day, apart from the Moon-Breaking Blade, there were going to be two other treasures at the auction of the Dream Pavilion.

The Dream Pavilion was one of the big marketplaces in Celestial River. It was a vast and broad place covering a huge area.

Celestial River was a city which was millions of years old and treasures were more numerous than in the Imperial City. There

were new treasures being sold each day.

There were some precious things which could only be acquired at the marketplace, at an auction market or through trade.

At that moment, Lin Feng and his friends entered the pavilion. It was very noisy inside.

In the pavilion, there were all sorts of people, handsome young men who had an elegant carriage, delicate and beautiful young women, shabbily dressed old men and filthy beggars.

Some people were there to sell things, while some others were looking for various things.

“Sir, a Xuan skill of high quality, are you interested?”

At that moment, a middle-aged man walked next to Lin Feng and talked in a low voice. Lin Feng was surprised. He then smile, shook his head and said: “I don’t need it, thank you.”

When that middle-aged man heard Lin Feng, he didn’t insist and immediately left as if nothing had happened.

“What’s wrong?” said Lin Feng perplexed while looking at a person near them.

“Sir, it must be your first time in Celestial River.”

“Indeed.” said Lin Feng while nodding.

“No wonder.” said that person as if they had suddenly understood. He continued: “Celestial River is the biggest marketplace in Xue Yue, here, there are various methods of selling things. Goods that are on the ground are ordinary goods and inexpensive. Of course, there are exceptions as well, some of the sellers are also extremely strong cultivators and are therefore not afraid of putting the items they sell on the ground, they don’t mind, who would dare come and steal their things?”

“The second way to sell things is to find people with whom you can exchange things, for example, that person a moment ago needed purity stones which is why he was looking for someone in need of skills, who would be willing to give him purity stones in exchange. There is also a third way to sell things and it is at the auction sales. You can auction your things in the Dream Pavilion and sell them in their auction.”

“Why do people exchange things with other people and don’t bring them to auction sales?” asked Lin Feng confused. The fees of Dream Pavilion were quite low and besides, they could sell things at a higher price.

“There are many reasons. One of them is that they only sell ten items a day. If you want to give them things to sell, you need to give it to them three days in advance and then they select the objects that they want to sell, if your thing is rejected, they give it back to you. Many people are unwilling to go through that troublesome procedure. Besides, ordinary things cannot be sold at

the auction.”

“Then, there are some people who are paranoid and don’t want to show what they have to everybody else, it makes them worried. If they bring things to the auction marketplace, they feel unsafe. Therefore, they prefer going and finding someone on their own which comes down to finding a needle in a haystack.”

When Lin Feng heard these words, he nodded as a sign that he had understood. Indeed, there were all sorts of possibilities. There were people who were realistic and felt good only if they had the object they were selling on themselves, near them. Many people were realists.

“It seems like we’ll have to stay at the Dream Pavilion for a few days.” thought Lin Feng. That time, he had come prepared, he absolutely needed to get a few things.

“Look, it’s Bing Yuan, the top disciple of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village.”

At that moment, a surprised voice spread in the air. Many people were looking in one direction. They saw a group of people being led by an ice-cold and fierce-looking man, Bing Yuan, who had joined the Ice and Snow Mountain Village after the high-official Luo Xue left for the Imperial City.

# Chapter 271: The Humiliation

---

Lin Feng looked in the same direction as the other people and saw Bing Yuan. What a cold young man!

In the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, only possessors of ice and snow spirits were accepted. All the skills they practiced were ice skills. When that group of people arrived, it seemed like the atmosphere had suddenly become much colder.

“Ninth Ling Qi layer.” said Ba Dao. Lin Feng faintly nodded. The fact that the Yun Hai Sect had been annihilated wasn’t a random and groundless event. One year before, the Yun Hai Sect was, indeed, the weakest of all the largest sects. It was obvious when seeing the disciples of the other sects.

Bing Yuan and his friends were walking forwards. At that moment, many people were moving aside opening a path for them. Very quickly, Bing Yuan arrived in front of Lin Feng but the crowd noticed that Lin Feng wasn’t moving aside. He was standing in the same place he was before, motionless.

“Huh?”

Many people were stupefied. Who were these audacious people? They saw that Bing Yuan and his friends wanted to pass but these people were making them go around them.

Bing Yuan frowned and some ice-cold Qi moved towards Lin Feng and the two others. The atmosphere around them was surrounded

by a layer of white frost. Very quickly, Lin Feng's body was surrounded by a layer of ice.

Lin Feng was still standing at his initial position looking calm and serene. An invisible strength appeared, Lin Feng's clothes were fluttering in the air. In a flash, the ice around his body completely vanished without trace, as if there hadn't been anything at all.

“What's going on?”

The crowd was astonished, in the blink of an eye, the ice around Lin Feng's body had disappeared.

“It seems like that person is extremely strong. No wonder that he isn't moving even though Bing Yuan is trying to pass.” thought many people at that moment. They were starting to pay attention to Lin Feng. He seemed quite mysterious.

“I'm Bing Yuan of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, who are you?” asked Bing Yuan to Lin Feng sounding extremely cold. Frost was floating around his body.

“Lin Feng.” said Lin Feng indifferently. Surprisingly, when Bing Yuan heard his name, his pupils shrank.

Lin Feng!

He had heard that name many times in his sect. The elders of the sect often talked about him. Half a year before, he had set a city on



fire and was famous in the Imperial City for all the his actions. Strong cultivators who belonged to the largest sects obviously knew who he was.

“Lin Feng, I’ve never heard that name. I don’t know which sect he belongs to.” thought people in the crowd. They were puzzled. They didn’t know which sect had an outstanding disciple called Lin Feng

But from Bing Yuan’s facial expression, they had the impression that he knew Lin Feng, he was frowning.

Then, Bing Yuan walked around Lin Feng. People who were with him angrily glared at Lin Feng. They were asking themselves why Bing Yuan hadn’t killed him, he surprisingly dared to act so arrogantly before them.

But Bing Yuan remained silent. His friends had no choice but to follow him and ignore Lin Feng.

At that moment, a strong ice energy flew through the air towards Lin Feng’s body.

Lin Feng smiled coldly and slightly shook his hand.

“Ahhhhh....” at that moment, a horrible shriek spread filled the atmosphere. It came from the disciple who had just attacked Lin Feng by surprise, the arm he had used for the attack was hanging from his shoulder by a layer of skin and cultivation had just been

crippled.

All the disciples of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village turned around and looked at Lin Feng with ice-cold glares.

“Brother, what’s going on?””

“He attacked me by surprise.” said the disciple whose face was deathly pale. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

Attacked by surprise?

Lin Feng took a step forward and released swift and fierce Qi. It invaded the entire atmosphere, that person started shaking and then groaned. He was terrified. He was staring at Lin Feng and blood started flowing from his mouth.

“You...dared... kill me....” said that person with a trembling voice. Immediately after, his facial muscles relaxed and he collapsed onto the person who was behind him. He had just died yet his eyes remained open with a shocked expression.

Lin Feng had just killed him in front the group of disciple. They would have never thought he would be so daring.

The crowd was astonished, dumbstruck, and fixedly staring at Lin Feng. How audacious, he had killed that disciple in front of all his fellow disciples of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, including Bing Yuan.

“As if I needed to attack you by surprise.” said Lin Feng sounding indifferent. That guy had just said that Lin Feng had attacked him by surprise. Lin Feng didn’t feel like wasting words so he immediately killed him.

Lin Feng was much stronger than him and was not scared of the disciples, he had dared to kill him immediately while they all watched. Had Lin Feng needed to attack him by surprise? The other guy obviously just wanted to slander Lin Feng.

People in the crowd were indiscernibly nodding. Indeed, with Lin Feng’s strength and courage, it was impossible for him to have attacked that guy by surprise. The disciple was just lying.

Lin Feng looked indifferently at the disciples of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, and more precisely at Bing Yuan. What did they intend to do?

Bing Yuan looked glum. Even though he knew that his fellow disciple had provoked Lin Feng first, Lin Feng had killed him in front of everybody else, that was a humiliation for Bing Yuan and for the Ice and the Snow Mountain Village as well.

“Lin Feng, it seems like you don’t care about humiliating me?” said Bing Yuan while releasing some cold energy. The crowd was stupefied, did he want to fight?

“Why would I care about humiliating you?” replied Lin Feng sounding cold: “Since you know me, you also know my

background, now, why would I need to care about humiliating you or even your entire sect?”

Bing Yuan was surprised. Indeed, Lin Feng was a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect. The Ice and Snow Mountain Village had also contributed to the destruction of the Yun Hai Sect. Its patriarch, Han Xue Tian had even personally gone there to participate.

Did Lin Feng need to give him face?

“It seems like Bing Yuan knows Lin Feng. It’s just that we don’t know him, we have to remember that name.” thought the people in the crowd. Lin Feng surprisingly dared contradict Bing Yuan, it meant that he was probably extraordinarily strong yet they had never heard his name, that was very strange.

“Bing Yuan, brother, kill him!”

“Yes, brother, he killed our fellow disciple, kill him!”

Each and every single disciple of the Ice and Snow Village Mountain was furious. Lin Feng was too audacious. He had killed their fellow disciple and was still acting arrogantly. They were furious and wanted to kill him.

“Kill me? Are you not done talking shit.” said Lin Feng while glancing at the disciple. Lin Feng was provoking them to try and kill him, he was extremely aggressive. He was inviting these people to attack him and see the results. Their facial expressions were

hideous.

They didn't dare attack him though. Lin Feng had just slightly moved his hand and killed their fellow disciple. Besides, Bing Yuan seemed hesitant. That person was extremely strong, they could only try to convince Bing Yuan to attack, but Bing Yuan did not dare attack either.

“Lin Feng's power is unfathomable. He has broken through to the seventh Ling Qi layer already and that was over half a year ago, he's probably much stronger now.” thought Bing Yuan while staring at Lin Feng. He then thought: “Besides, I came to Celestial River for a reason and it has nothing to do with Lin Feng, the most important thing is for me to buy the thing I need.”

When Bing Yuan thought about the situation, he suddenly felt relieved. He had to stay in his peak condition because he had even more important things to do. In comparison with he had to do, the death of his comrade was meaningless.

“Let's go.” said Bing Yuan as he started leaving.

That move made everyone stupefied. Let's go?

Bing Yuan surprisingly left. Was he scared to fight against Lin Feng?

The disciples of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village were even more surprised. Bing Yuan wasn't fighting? Their deceased fellow

disciple wasn't going to be avenged?

“Let's go!” said Bing Yuan extremely coldly which made them shiver. Immediately after, they glared at Lin Feng again yet left.

They didn't dare contradict Bing Yuan. In the mountain village, Bing Yuan was extremely powerful and aggressive. Those who dared oppose him were punished. That time, they didn't know why he wasn't avenging his fellow disciple. Was he afraid of Lin Feng?

Lin Feng looked at them leave, he looked calm and serene. Immediately after, he continued walking around the Dream Pavilion. A moment later, he arrived in front of an old man's rug that was selling pill ingredients and squatted down.

“Old man, how much is that spiritual lichen?” asked Lin Feng to the old man. The old man raised his head, looked at Lin Feng and said: “One purity stone of lower quality per stem. Help yourself!”

“I would like a hundred thousand stems.” said Lin Feng. The old man was astonished and was blankly staring at Lin Feng. A hundred thousand stems.... even though spiritual lichen wasn't extremely valuable, a hundred thousand was a huge number.

“Why do you need so much lichen?”

“To concoct some Spiritual Sanguine Pills.”

“Spiritual Sanguine Pills? What other ingredients do you need?”

Lin Feng’s pupils shrank, he knew that he had found the right person.

“I am making Pure Earth Pills, Spirit Breath Pills and Red Sun pills.”

When the old man heard Lin Feng, he remained silent for a second, lights were flashing in his eyes. He then said: “Wonderful, then you need some Scorching heat herb, Sanguine plants and Pure Qi grains.”

“Indeed. I need a lot of ingredients.” said Lin Feng while nodding. While walking around, Lin Feng was observing the vendors and their strength. That old man’s strength was unfathomable, Ba Dao hadn’t been able to tell. Therefore, they had come to him, it seemed like he was an extremely powerful cultivator who, on top of that, could also concoct pills!

## Chapter 272: The Recipe

---

The old man smiled and looked at Lin Feng: “It seems like you came prepared, but did you already know that I had these things?”

“Old man, I didn’t know, but a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer selling pill ingredients here is always something easily noticeable.” said Lin Feng with a warm smile.

The old man smiled and shook his head: “Don’t call me old man, you can call me Mister Huo. That girl behind you is just as enigmatic.”

“Mister Huo...” said Lin Feng getting more intimate with the old man. He then continued: “Mister Huo, I just told you what I needed and I need huge quantities. Do you know where I can find such large quantities?”

“If small quantities are enough for you, I can help you but if you need hundreds of thousands, I have no solution for you.”

The old man was shaking his head. Hundreds of thousands, that was a huge quantity. Who was able to pick that many plants?

“But you asked me where you could find them, there is a place but you cannot go there.”

“Cannot go there?” Lin Feng was stupefied and asked: “If I ask you to help me, will it still be difficult?”



The old man frowned and looked at Lin Feng: “Hundreds of thousands is a colossal quantity. I’m not sure I can get that much. Besides, if you need hundreds of thousands of each of the herbs and plant, even though they are not valuable, it is still a tremendous amount.”

“Do you know of Spirit Blood Pills?” asked Lin Feng.

“Huh?” the old man was stupefied. A strong Qi emerged from his body, that abrupt rise of Qi made Lin Feng feel an incredible heat as if he was going to burn alive. The old man probably was an expert at using fire. People who were experts at using fire had high proficiency in concocting pills and fabricating weapons. Of course, the soul also had to be extremely strong.

“What do you know about Spirit Blood Pills?” asked the old man.

“I know about them. Spirit Blood Pills can alter the blood vessels and the soul making a cultivator’s blood vessels and Soul become extremely strong. They are extremely beneficial for cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, it’s a Xuan level pill of medium quality.” said Lin Feng slowly. The classification of pills was similar to that of weapons which also depended on the different cultivation levels. After ordinary weapons, there were spiritual weapons and then mystical weapons.

Besides, there were ordinary pills which were suitable for cultivators of Qi layer but who were of almost no use for cultivators of the Ling Qi layer. Only Ling level pills had effect on

cultivators of the Ling Qi layer but were of almost no use to cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. Cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer required spiritual weapons as well as Xuan level pills. The Spirit Blood Pill was a Xuan level pill of average quality which was extremely beneficial to cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, even if they had broken through to the sixth Xuan Qi layer.

Weapons and pills were also classified according to their quality, high, average and low quality. Using Xuan level pills of average quality on a cultivator who was under the fourth Xuan Qi layer would have been a waste. Even though the pills were still beneficial to them, their bodies weren't able to entirely assimilate them. Then, if used on a cultivator above the sixth Ling Qi layer, these pills had almost no effect. Therefore, they were adequate for cultivators between the fourth and the sixth Qi layer.

How could the old man not be surprised when he heard that Lin Feng wanted some Xuan level pills of average quality?

“Can you concoct them?” asked Mister Huo while staring at Lin Feng. At that moment, Mister Huo didn't look sluggish anymore, he looked captivated.

“How could I concoct that kind of high-quality pills?” said Lin Feng while shaking which made the old man frown. But Lin Feng continued: “But accidentally, I obtained the recipe of the Spirit Blood Pills.”

“The recipe?” the old man was surprised and started breathing faster. There were three difficult things about pills, being able to or finding someone to concoct the pills, finding the material to

concoct the pills and then obtaining the recipe. Besides, the recipe was the most important thing, without it, it was impossible to concoct the pills.

Of course, many people thought that the one who concocted the pills was the most important because it was very difficult to find good ones. But without the recipe, how could anyone concoct the pills? However, with the recipe, even without someone to concoct the pill, at least, the recipe was already extremely valuable.

“Indeed. The recipe, Mister Huo. I just talked about a few pills, I need to make at least twenty thousand of each. What materials do I need? Master Huo probably knows better than me. If you can help me, I will offer you the recipe of the Spirit Blood Pill.”

Lin Feng had said twenty thousand which represented a huge quantity. It was the first time that Mister Huo heard a person say that they needed twenty thousand pills.

“Then don’t worry, I understand.” said Mister Huo while staring at Lin Feng.

“Mister Huo, if you kill me, you will not obtain the recipe. Besides, you might not necessarily be able to kill me. I am convinced that Mister Huo wouldn’t try such a thing anyway.” said Lin Feng while smiling. Mister Huo remained silent looking pensive.

“Alright, deal, but I need a few days.”

“Alright, no problem. Three days later, at dinner time, I will be at the Celestial Mountain Restaurant waiting for you, how does that sound?”

“Alright, see you in three days.” said Mister Huo while rolling up his sleeves. In a flash, the herbs on the ground vanished. He obviously had a Na stone.

Mister Huo turned around and immediately left the Dream Pavilion. It seemed like the old man could handle things for Lin Feng at the speed of light.

When Lin Feng saw Mister Huo leave, he smiled. Lin Feng’s plan had worked without any incident. Concerning the recipe of the pill, it wasn’t going to be a loss for Lin Feng, it was in the memories which the cultivator of the Zun Qi layer had given to him, he just had to write it down on a piece of paper and hand it over. Lin Feng wasn’t going to lose anything in the transaction.

“Let’s go.” Lin Feng started walking again going towards the depths of the Dream Pavilion. They weren’t the only people in that case, at that moment, they were surrounded by a myriad of people who were walking in the same direction, including the vendors who were packing up their things.

“The auction sales will start in about half an hour. Do you know if the Moon-Breaking Blade will be sold today or not?” Lin Feng respectfully asked someone walking over to their group. That person had seen Lin Feng kill the disciple of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, and then ignore Bing Yuan. They had also heard Lin Feng talk about Xuan level pills with Mister Huo. That timid

person couldn't believe his ears. Besides Lin Feng who was also extremely strong, the man wearing a bronze mask, who was following him, was probably just a subordinate.

“Leave. Forget everything that you have seen and heard today.” said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. That person then timidly nodded and said: “Understood.”

After that, that person left feeling aggrieved.

Lin Feng ignored him and moved towards the entrance of the auction. Then, Lin Feng said to the two people at the entrance: “I have things to sell at auction, with whom should I talk?”

“Come with me.” said one person. Lin Feng followed him and entered the auction room. After a short time, they arrived in a room where people were sorting various goods.

When Lin Feng saw all these goods, he was stupefied, there was an incredible quantity of goods that people wanted to sell at auction.

The person who received Lin Feng was a very sexy woman. Her skin was as white as snow, her shoulders were beautiful and well-formed, she had well-developed white breasts. She was extremely attractive.

“What do you want to sell, Sir?”

“A Di level skill of low quality called Swift Leaf as well as ten spiritual weapons of medium quality.” said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. The sexy woman was stupefied, The smile on her face suddenly turned into a deep and profound facial expression.

“Sir, please come with me.” said the woman while standing up.

“You can wait here for a moment.” said Lin Feng to Meng Qing and Ba Dao. Immediately after, he entered in a secret room with the woman. In that room, things were in complete disorder, it definitely required some tidying. These goods were the ones which had been selected to be sold at auction.

“Sir, show me the things which you would like to sell at auction.” said the woman who had arrived by an old man’s side.

“”Alright.” The Swift Leaf Book appeared in Lin Feng’s hand. At the same time, above the ground, a small light flashed and suddenly, ten spiritual weapons appeared, and a resplendent light emerged.

Lin Feng handed over the Swift Leaf skill to his interlocutor. The woman gave to the old man who looked through it. Immediately after, the old man nodded and said: “No problem. It’s a medium-quality skill of the Di level. There is no problem with the spiritual weapons either.”

“Thank you, senior.”

The woman smiled and packed the skill and the weapons, she then sealed the box for safekeeping. She then wrote a few notes on the package and handed a small jade card over to Lin Feng.

“Sir, your things will be sold tomorrow, after the auction, you only need to come back with jade card and we will know what items belonged to you. The fortune won’t be small and you will receive all your purity stones without a fee, besides, using that card, you can enter the area reserved to our special clients.” said that beautiful woman with an enchanting smile on her face. While talking, the way she was moving her body made her look even more seducing.

“No fees and sold tomorrow?” thought Lin Feng. The normal procedure was supposed to last three days but because Lin Feng’s goods were extremely valuable, he had gained some privileges.

Concerning the reward, Lin Feng thought that he had already had plenty of fortune. The memories of the strong cultivator were his most valuable possession.

Lin Feng nodded and left the room.

## Chapter 273: Provocations

---

In the area reserved for special clients, Lin Feng and Meng Qing were sitting on soft chairs while Ba Dao was standing behind them.

From the inside of their booth and behind the special curtains, they could clearly see the entire huge auction room.

At that moment, a delicate silhouette suddenly appeared at the very front. That was precisely the woman that had received Lin Feng before. At that moment, she had already changed her clothes and was wearing a long blue cheongsam which was drifting over the floor. Her shoulders weren't covered and her dress also had a low-cut neckline. Lin Feng was feeling a strange sensation.

A light flashed in Meng Qing's eyes who then glared at Lin Feng. As if Lin Feng had sensed it, he turned his head and briefly looked at Meng Qing. Lin Feng couldn't help but smile while his lips were slightly shaking.

At that moment, in the area reserved to special guests, there was an ordinary young man who looked ice-cold like a blade. Then, a group of people, looking solemn and respectful, were standing behind him.

"Lan Jiao is more and more alluring each day." said Leng Yue indifferently.

"Leng Yue, if you like Lan Jiao, she will not refuse." flattered someone standing behind him.



Leng Yue, looking evil, said: “Well, if she’s too obedient, what’s the point? I like to cut them by force.”

When the four others heard him, they looked at each other. The Blademaster was a monstrously aggressive and sly person. He didn’t care about knowing if the person was willing or not, he enjoyed using his blade to abuse women. The four others would never have thought that he had a tendency like that, he surprisingly liked to cut them.

“It’s not that easy to come to Celestial River, I want the blade but I also want a few women.” said Leng Yue sounding indifferent. The four others were surprised. It seemed like Lan Jiao wouldn’t be able to escape from him. Why did she have to have such an alluring body and, on top that, why was she revealing so much of it? It certainly made men drool.

On that day, the auction was normal, there were ten items. Lin Feng wasn’t interested in the things which were being displayed at that moment. He was just sitting there and watching.

However, at the moment when Lan Jiao displayed the eighth item, Lin Feng started to be interested.

It was a Ling level spiritual weapon of higher quality, its price was one thousand purity stones of medium quality.

On that day, many people had come for the Moon-Breaking Blade. It had just been introduced that its price had already been

raised to two thousand, which exceeded many people's budgets already.

Spiritual weapons of higher quality were precious but two thousand purity stones was very expensive.

“Three thousand purity stones of medium quality!”

At that moment, a voice, which was as sharp as a blade, emerged in the atmosphere. Some blade energy also spread in the atmosphere and enveloped the crowd in the auction room for a few seconds.

Many people were surprised, they turned around and looked at the reserved area. A single person was releasing all that blade energy!

“It's the Blademaster!” thought the crowd. That blade energy had probably been released by the Blademaster. People knew that he had come to Celestial River. Surprisingly, he was releasing his blade energy across the crowd, how aggressive.

But the Blademaster was stronger and more gifted than them. Besides, he was a disciple of the Hao Yue Sect. He could afford to be that aggressive. He was a bit more vigilant in front of a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer but facing people of lower levels didn't scare him at all.

After he released blade Qi, obviously, the entire atmosphere

became silent.

“Three thousand and one purity stones of medium quality.”

At that moment, someone sounding cold and detached spoke, breaking the silence. That voice also came from the area for special guests. Besides, that person wasn't far from the Blademaster, only one booth was separated them.

“Huh?” Leng Yue was surprised and immediately said coldly: “Four thousand.”

“Four thousand and one.” said the other voice sounding cold. Progressively, Leng Yue's facial expression was changing. He suddenly released much more blade energy towards that person.

“Blademaster, what does this mean? The auction room is supposed to be a fair and quiet place, what are you doing?” said a cold voice sounding ice-cold and aggressive while blocking the blade energy.

“Disciples of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village!”

The crowd was surprised, these were people of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village and surprisingly someone dared provoke the Blademaster, only one person could do that.

“Bing Yuan!” shouted the Blademaster and continued: “Five thousand!”

Five-thousand and one!”

“Eight thousand!” that time, Leng Yue immediately increased to eight thousand, at the same time, he released an incredible quantity of blade force which made the ground shake.

The crowd was stupefied, the Blademaster was wealthy! That price was already very high.

“Since brother Leng Yue likes it that much, I give up.”

Leng Yue smiled indifferently. Ice-cold energy invaded the atmosphere like a hurricane, white frost emerged as well and explosion sounds. The booth separating these two people exploded and three silhouettes were revealed.

A man and a woman were sitting there and a man with a bronze mask was standing behind them.

“Well, thank you, Bing Yuan, for leaving the Moon-Breaking Blade for me.” said the Blademaster sound egocentric. He didn’t even pay attention to Lin Feng and the two others in the middle.

The crowd was looking at Lin Feng the two others. They were secretly shaking their heads. Lin Feng and the two others had unluckily ended up in a booth between Bing Yuan and the Blademaster, they were going to receive the collateral damage.

“Lan Jiao, say it!” said the Blademaster while looking at the stage. Lan Jiao looked at the booth which had just exploded and smiled while slightly nodding.

She was about to say something when Lin Feng said: “Eight-thousand and one.”

Everybody was surprised when they heard Lin Feng. He was surprisingly bidding.

“He’s been angered?”

“Maybe he lost his sanity because of the explosion, it seems like they’ve run out of luck.”

Many people came up with the same idea but those who had seen Lin Feng and Bing Yuan didn’t think that was the case. Not only had Lin Feng provoked Bing Yuan but he was also provoking the Blademaster, Leng Yue.

When Leng Yue heard Lin Feng, he was stupefied. Apart from Bing Yuan, there was someone else who was trying to anger him.

The Blademaster slightly closed his eyes, and concentrated to find out who had said that, he then immediately found out. Then, he opened his eyes again and a cold smile appeared on his face.

“It seems like the warning I gave you with my blade in the restaurant wasn’t enough.” said Leng Yue coldly. Immediately

after, he said: “Nine thousand purity stones of medium quality.”

“Nine thousand and one.” said Lin Feng hastily almost at the same time as Leng Yue finished speaking. The scariest was that Lin Feng sounded calm. He didn’t sound nervous at all as if he didn’t care about the Blademaster getting angry.

“You want to die.” said Leng Yue while standing up. An incredible blade energy rolled in the air emitting explosive sounds. At that moment, Leng Yue launched himself through the curtains in front of him and appeared in front of the crowd.

At that moment, he and Lin Feng were only separated by a small partition. They just had to make a small step forwards and they would be able to see each other.

Ba Dao’s silhouette flickered and moved to the front, his agility was insane. In a flash, an incredible amount of blade force invaded the atmosphere.

In the air, an explosion sound emerged when the two blade forces collided.

“He stopped bidding and is making a spectacle of himself, the Blademaster should be renamed the Shameless Master.” joked Lin Feng.

How could he be so daring as to make fun of Leng Yue in front of everybody?

“Twelve-thousand purity stones of medium quality.” said Leng Yue while gnashing his teeth. He had bid again because Lin Feng had joked about the fact that he had stopped bidding.

“Hehe, as expected, people of the Hao Yue Sect have so many purity stones.” said Lin Feng while laughing and then continued: “That spiritual weapon is now too expensive for me.”

“He should die! He did that on purpose!”

“That guy is interesting, he surprisingly dares to provoke the Blademaster tricking him into spending more purity stones for the Moon-Breaking Blade.”

When the crowd heard Lin Feng, they were stupefied. That was extremely audacious.

Leng Yue and the four people behind him looked ice-cold.

“Haha. Brother, you’re right, it seems like the Hao Yue Sect has too many purity stones.” said Bing Yuan in the tone of a joke. He sounded overjoyed to pour oil onto the flames. Besides, Leng Yue would hate Lin Feng even more, if they fought, that would be interesting.

But Lin Feng smiled coldly, his lips vibrated and he replied extremely coldly: “Who are you calling your brother? The people of the Hao Yue Sect are just like you, you are all shameless and

have to do things in the shadows, because you don't dare let your real intentions show. You are all shameless cowards.”

When Lin Feng finished talking, the crowd was, once again, astonished. Not only was Lin Feng provoking the Blademaster but he was provoking Bing Yuan. He was fearlessly humiliating them.



## Chapter 274: The Ancient Cauldron

---

Bing Yuan's smile became stiff and then an exploding sound emerged in the atmosphere. The three rooms were united. Its occupants could all clearly see each other.

At that moment, the main representative of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village was Bing Yuan, and for the Hao Yue Sect it was Leng Yue the Blademaster. Besides them, there were three more people, one of them was standing before the booth, the two others were a man and a woman. They were both calmly sitting on their chairs, ignoring the others. They had not moved a single finger so far and were just talking. Besides, that girl was wearing a fine veil on her face, looking fascinatingly beautiful.

“Bing Yuan, are you laughing at me?” Leng Yue said in the tone of a joke. Bing Yuan had been provoking him all the way. He wanted Lin Feng and him to fight, but the result was that Lin Feng humiliated them both.

“Hmph!”

Bing Yuan was glumly smiling. He had already given Lin Feng face, but Lin Feng, the first time, killed his fellow disciple and humiliated him, the second time, he was humiliating him again.

“Brother, Leng Yue, how should we dispose of him? You decide.” Bin Yuan said, sounding evil, getting ready to attack Lin Feng.

“Who's your brother? He's right. People of the Ice and Snow

Mountain Village are all cowards. What makes you think that we can become brothers?” said Leng Yue. Bing Yuan was dumbstruck. He had the impression that the whole crowd was staring at him and that he was suffocating from the humiliation. The oxygen seemed unable to reach his lungs anymore and he felt like he couldn’t breathe.

A great quantity of cold energy spread through the air. The entire auction room seemed like it was going to freeze.

“Gentlemen, now please let the auction continue. You can solve your problems after the auction.” said Lan Jiao from the stage. Her smile was soft and warm just like the sound of her voice, which suddenly made the atmosphere feel a bit lighter.

“Alright.” said Bing Yuan looking ice-cold.

Lin Feng nodded at Lan Jiao and smiled back to her out of politeness.

“Now, Leng Yue has bid twelve thousand purity stones of medium quality, is anyone willing to raise?” said Lan Jiao while smiling at the crowd. Nobody was answering. Twelve thousand for a spiritual weapon of that quality was already too expensive.

In order to practice cultivation, even for a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer, so many purity stones of medium quality would have been enough to practice indefinitely.

“If there is nobody, I would like to congratulate the Blademaster on his new acquisition, the Moon-Breaking Blade.”

Lan Jiao smiled and continued: “The next object of our auction sales is an ancient cauldron. On the cauldron nine dragons are carved. This cauldron is hundreds of thousands of years old. It must have been used to concoct pills and weapons in ancient times but it seems that some parts are now missing. We cannot find out its level but the expert of our company, the Dream Pavilion, said that if no part was missing, it would be at least a Xuan level cauldron of high quality, a real treasure.”

“For everybody to understand clearly what parts are missing, we will show you the cauldron.”

When Lan Jiao finished talking, two people brought a cauldron. That cauldron was about one meter high. Its diameter was also about one meter. On the top, there were nine dragon carvings. They almost looked alive. Besides, there was one dragon which was looking up at the sky and uttering a long cry. It seemed like it was about to fly away. However, the eight other dragons seemed to be incomplete and did not look like the first dragon, as if that was the part that Lan Jiao had mentioned.

Besides, from a certain distance, that cauldron seemed to be absolutely normal and its carvings seemed to be releasing a strange Qi.

“I hope that you can trust our experts at the Dream Pavilion. This cauldron has some missing parts, yet it shouldn’t be inferior to a Ling level cauldron of higher quality. You can already use it to

concoct pills. If it were intact, it would definitely be a treasure of the Xuan level. Even when mentioning these characteristics it wouldn't be enough for the crowd to be interested. In Celestial River, we always have some antiques which have missing parts. We are honest about it. However, it would still be classed as ling level of higher quality, besides, it can also be used to defend from attacks.”

Perhaps there were some cultivators who could concoct pills who would be interested.

“The price is one thousand purity stones of medium quality.” said Lan Jiao. Immediately after, people in the crowd shook their heads, one thousand for a broken cauldron was too expensive and unworthy.

When Lan Jiao saw that the crowd was shaking their heads, she smiled wryly. She knew that that selling that precious cauldron wouldn't be easy, it was difficult to get a good price for it, but it was really a priceless treasure.

“I will buy it for a thousand purity stones of medium quality.” said someone at that moment. That person was an old man, he could obviously concoct pills. Even though that cauldron was of no use, the old man was still interested in these kinds of mysterious treasures.

Besides, as far as he was concerned, one thousand purity stones of medium quality wasn't a big sum.

“Since the old man said so, just give it to him.” somebody said in a low voice, but people really despised that cauldron. People didn’t fight for it because it wasn’t an attractive object.

Everybody remained silent. The atmosphere was a bit cold.

“That cauldron seems pretty nice. I think it’s worth getting, it’s a real antique, I will give two thousand for it.” said Lin Feng, sounding cold and detached. At that moment, it was the first object which he found interesting.

On that cauldron, nine dragons were surprisingly engraved. It had been in Celestial River for hundreds of thousands of years but had been lost.

In the memories Lin Feng received from the cultivator of the Zun Qi layer, there was a story about ten cauldrons in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Within these ten cauldrons, the cauldron with the nine dragon heads was ranked ninth. It had been missing for hundreds of thousands of years and Lin Feng could recognize it thanks to its patterns. However, nobody seemed to know about it.

That object was extremely valuable but nobody knew about it.

Lin Feng had almost immediately bid ten thousand for it but he didn’t dare raise it so much because people would have found it suspicious.

That old man looked at Lin Feng and Lin Feng slightly nodded

and smiled, looking calm and serene. He tried not to look surprised.

“Since the young man likes it, I will give it to him for two thousand purity stones of medium quality, which is already a high price.” the old man said, which made the entire crowd nod slowly. Nobody wanted to keep bidding.

“Moron!” joked Bing Yuan but Lin Feng decided to ignore him. It was a cauldron with nine dragon heads engraved and Lin Feng was getting it for two thousand purity stones of medium quality. Lin Feng didn’t care about being called a moron a hundred times over.

“Nobody is bidding anymore?” asked Lan Jiao to the crowd. As expected, nobody spoke. Lan Jiao didn’t continue anymore either, after all, she already thought that two thousand purity stones of medium quality was a lot for that cauldron, it wasn’t worth it.

“Congratulations to the young man for winning the cauldron.” said Lan Jiao to Lin Feng while slightly bowing. Her soft and white breasts looked even bigger as she bowed down, which drew everybody’s attention.

After taking the cauldron with the nine dragon heads away, an enchanting smile appeared on Lan Jiao’s face and she said: “The last thing is the essence fire of a Xuan level beast, the seven-tailed fox. I am convinced that I don’t need to say much about the price.”

“Essence fire!”

Lin Feng was stupefied. That was from a beast of the Xuan level. A cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer could use pure Qi and if they had a fire based spirit, absorbing that essence fire, their attacks would be enhanced. Ferocious beasts were similar to cultivators in the fact that they condensed pure Qi, the seven-tailed fox was a fire beast. Its essence fire was extremely strong. It could absorb pure Qi and condense it into essence fire, it could increase its power that way.

When Lan Jiao put it down, the crowd went insane. The essence fire of a seven-tailed fox was a treasure. In terms of ferocious beasts, it was an extremely powerful one.

For fire cultivators as well as cultivators who concocted pills, that beast was very tempting.

“The starting price is two thousand purity stones of medium quality.” said Lan Jiao. It was more expensive than the Moon-Breaking Blade or the ancient cauldron. It was starting at two thousand.

Besides, everybody was bidding. Nobody thought that the price was too high. “Three thousand.”

“Four thousand.”

“.....”

“Ten thousand!”

Everybody kept bidding, the price had reached ten thousand in a very short time and the scariest part was that it didn't stop increasing.

“Twenty thousand!” said an ice-cold voice. At that moment, everybody was stupefied. Twenty thousand... Someone had increased the bid from ten thousand straight to twenty thousand... and that person was... Bing Yuan!



## Chapter 275: The Apple of His Eye

---

“Twenty thousand purity stones of medium quality, how wealthy! Besides, Leng Yue is very wealthy too!” thought Lin Feng when he heard them. The Ice and Snow Mountain Village and the Hao Yue Sect were much wealthier than the Yun Hai Sect used to be.

Besides, Bing Yuan had raised the bid from ten thousand immediately up to twenty thousand. He obviously was very interested in the fire essence from that beast.

The auction room was silent for a moment and then Leng Yue said, while smiling coldly: “Twenty-one thousand.”

“Huh?” the crowd was stupefied. A moment ago, Bing Yuan had forced the price up, so Leng Yue, at that moment, was wanted to get his revenge.

“Leng Yue, you already purchased the Moon-Breaking Blade, you still have twenty-one thousand purity stones said Bing Yuan coldly while frowning. Leng Yue had already spent twelve-thousand for the blade.

“Try and continue, you’ll see if I have the purity stones.” said Leng Yue while laughing indifferently. Bing Yuan didn’t dare gamble.

“Idiot!” joked Lin Feng, who was sitting at the same place as before. Bing Yuan had immediately raised to twenty-thousand,

everybody knew that he was extremely interested. Which is why Leng Yue was playing with him like that.

“Bing Yuan is really an idiot.” Many people had the same thought as Lin Feng. Since he really wanted to have that object and had, a moment before, provoked Leng Yue, Leng Yue getting his revenge was a logical course of events.

“Twenty-two thousand.” said Bing Yuan coldly.

“Twenty-three thousand.” replied Leng Yue sounding carefree.

“Twenty-five thousand.” said Bing Yuan looking glum.

“The price is still too low.” at that moment, Lin Feng suddenly said: “Twenty-six thousand purity stones of medium quality.”

“Thirty thousand.” said Bing Yuan. A wave of coldness, coming from the reserved area, rolled in the atmosphere making many people shake from head to toe. Bing Yuan was furious.

“For thirty-thousand, you can have it.” said Leng Yue while smiling indifferently. He finally stopped there. Besides Bing Yuan seemed to be furious, he didn’t look happy. Thirty thousand purity stones of medium quality was everything that he had. If Lin Feng had raised again, Bing Yuan would have been unable to continue.

“I also wanted it!” said Lin Feng while smiling lightly. Lin Feng knew that he had to stop raising because if Bing Yuan hadn’t been

able to raise any more, it wouldn't have been amusing at all for Lin Feng.

Finally, Bing Yuan had obtained the seven-tailed fox's essence fire for thirty thousand purity stones of medium quality.

“Alright, this is the end of the auction. Everybody can come pick up their treasures.” said Lan Jiao while smiling. Immediately after, she left the stage.

People who had won bids stood up one after the other and walked towards the area behind the stage. Lin Feng stood up as well and looked outside of the broken window of his booth.

An extremely cold Qi rose in the atmosphere. Bing Yuan was running past Lin Feng, when they passed, a terrifyingly cold energy moved towards Lin Feng, it was extremely cold.

But he didn't stop there, he immediately moved towards the back of the auction. Even though he had spend thirty thousand purity stones of medium quality, he was able to get the essence fire, he would be able to fuse it with his ice. At the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. They had secret techniques to leave the Ling Qi layer and break through to the Xuan Qi layer, all of this would therefore be worth it.

A sharp and piercing blade Qi emitting a cold aura descended from the sky. Lin Feng's booth exploded, he could see everything very distinctly in Leng Yue's booth. Everything between them had been destroyed by Leng Yue.

“You’re good.” said Leng Yue sounding cold and detached. He then jumped and landed farther away. Besides, one of the disciples of the Hao Yue Sect laughed coldly while staring at Lin Feng and the two others.

“You’re dead.” said someone in a low voice mockingly. Lin Feng was definitely going to die.

But in the auction room, they weren’t going to attack, they wouldn’t be allowed. However, immediately after leaving the pavilion, Lin Feng would definitely die.

“Are you looking at me?” joked Lin Feng. The four people were staring at Lin Feng and remained silent without expressing clearly what they meant.

Lin Feng jumped in the air and landed on the stage. He immediately moved towards the back. The one who had made the best transaction was Lin Feng.

He had obtained the ancient cauldron, nobody knew what it was and he had gotten it for only two thousand purity stones. How could he not be excited to collect it?

The ten people were receiving their respective goods, when Lin Feng’s turn arrived, Lan Jiao slightly smiled to him and said: “Sir, you don’t need to give any purity stones, tomorrow when you pass by to receive your purity stones, we’ll just subtract the sum.”

“Alright.” said Lin Feng while nodding. He looked at the cauldron which was being brought to him.

“Sir, the ancient cauldron is yours.” said Lan Jiao while smiling. Lin Feng caressed the cauldron and a cold sensation invaded his hands. Lin Feng could distinctly sense the ancient Qi of the object.

His body flickered and the cauldron disappeared. Lan Jiao looked at Lin Feng while smiling and said: “May Lan Jiao know your name, Sir?”

“Lin Feng.” said Lin Feng while nodding and smiling at Lan Jiao.

People took their respective items and left.

“Lin Feng!” whispered Lan Jiao while looking at Lin Feng and the rest leave. She then whispered again: “Check him out.”

“Jiao Jiao, there is no need to check him out.” said a silhouette in the corner of the room. It was a middle-aged woman. She had beautiful flowing hair. She looked gorgeous, alluring and morally elevated.

“Madame Yun knows him?” asked Lan Jiao while looking at the middle-aged woman.

“He set a city on fire and exterminated hundreds of thousands of

Mo Yue troops, which completely reversed the course of the war. Then, he saved the princess. Later, he galloped into the Imperial City and saved Liu Cang Lan. Then he killed a young noble and became a Marquis, Lin Feng's name is already illustrious. How could I not know him?" said the middle-aged woman while smiling. She had a strange feeling though because Lin Feng had been quiet for six months and had suddenly appeared in Celestial River.

"How powerful!" said Lan Jiao startled. Lin Feng and she were about the same age, he was about seventeen or eighteen years old and had accomplished so many things already.

"Jiao Jiao, he is still single, he hasn't married yet." said the middle-aged woman with a smile yet not a smile on her face. Lan Jiao was surprised, smiled and said: "Madam Yun, you're making fun of me again."

"Why? Jiao Jiao, heroes marry beautiful women. I think that you and him would be a perfect couple. If you managed to make it join us, that would be a wonderful thing." said Madam Yun to Lan Jiao. Lan Jiao, however, was shaking her head and smiling, her facial expression was strange.

Lin Feng left the auction. At that moment, some silhouettes were closely following him but Lin Feng seemed like he hadn't noticed. He was secretly smiling coldly.

He wasn't neither rushing nor walking slowly, he left the pavilion and walked in the direction of the restaurant.

“Lin Feng, brother, why do you need to leave so fast? You and me still need to a talk.” said a voice coming from behind. Then, an extremely cold Qi moved straight towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng couldn’t help but stop.

“I’m sorry, I fear that I’m going to have to disappoint you. I have no time to waste with you.” said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. He then continued walking.

But at that moment, in front of Lin Feng, there was a person with their arms folded across their chest. That person said in a low voice: “Why do you need to hurry?”

In the distance, people who were coming out of the Dream Pavilion and looking at the scene. As expected, once they had left the Dream Pavilion, Bing Yuan and Leng Yue were impatiently waiting for him. How could they forgive Lin Feng for his provocations?

“Brother, Leng Yue, let’s put our disagreements aside for the time being, how does that sound?” said Bing Yuan to the Blademaster, Leng Yue, who nodded and said: “Alright.”

“But there are three of them and we are two, what should we do?”

“It’s easy, we attack him together and see who kills him first. Then, we kill the two others one-on-one.”

“Alright, but I want that girl.” agreed Leng Yue.

“No problem. That girl seems quite good. You can do whatever you wish with her.” said Bing Yuan while smiling evilly. Bing Yuan and Leng Yue’s words were echoing one another. In the distance, people were shaking their heads. These two people regarded Lin Feng as a toy and they were openly talking about how they were going to kill him, in his presence. Lin Feng shouldn’t have provoked these two influential young men.

Bing Yuan was the best Disciple of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village and Leng Yue was a prodigy of the Hao Yue Sect, the Blademaster. These people were not ordinary people at all.

Lin Feng had provoked them, he was going to die for that.

However, at that moment, the crowd didn’t notice that in Lin Feng’s eyes, an ice-cold killing intent appeared, his face was filled with murder. These two people had surprisingly dared speak about Meng Qing with obscenities.

Meng Qing was the apple of Lin Feng’s eye, nobody was allowed to touch or aggress her, otherwise they would die!



## Chapter 276: The Genius?

---

Lin Feng's cold energy didn't make Leng Yue hesitate at all, instead he was evilly and viciously staring at Meng Qing, his eyes were sharp as a blade, he then said: "Come on."

When he finished talking, Leng Yue took small steps towards Lin Feng, though his steps were small, he was still extremely quick, just like a whirlwind.

Some dust rose from the ground, immediately after, some blade energy reached the dust. Each time Leng Yue took a small step, the blade energy in the air became more dense. Besides in the blink of an eye, he had made a dozen steps and his blade energy had reached its climax, it was extremely sharp. When he released it, it emitted an ear-piercing whistling sound.

At the same time, Bing Yuan was attacking as well. Snow and frost were falling from the sky. A layer of ice invaded the entire atmosphere, it was extremely cold, to the extent that everybody was shaking.

"How powerful!" The crowd in the distance was astonished. Leng Yue the Blademaster was as sharp as his blade. Bing Yuan, of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, had already managed to deeply freeze the entire atmosphere. Under his skills, the ground had become ice and snow.

These two people were extremely strong, they definitely were some of the most outstanding junior cultivators of their

generation. They were real geniuses.

“When that blade descends, he will definitely cut into two pieces.” Said the disciples of the Hao Yue Sect arrogantly.

Leng Yue, when battling, rarely had to strike more than once. Lin Feng wouldn't even withstand a single attack. He would immediately be killed.

“Lin Feng, you will freeze to death. Your blood vessels will freeze until you die.” Said the disciples of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. Lin Feng was too arrogant, he had dared kill one of the disciples of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, besides, he had also dared to provoke Bing Yuan. He wanted to die. They couldn't wait to see how Lin Feng intended to dodge Bing Yuan's attacks.

Many people were convinced that Lin Feng was going to die.

He was an obscure and unknown person. How could he rival with the Blademaster and Bing Yuan? The real question was who would be the first to kill Lin Feng.

Lin Feng, when he sensed the sharp blade and the ice energy, still looked calm and serene. He looked so calm that his face was completely still. However, his eyes were filled with coldness and murderous intentions.

“Slash!” shouted Leng Yue while blade energy started descending. Immediately after he said the word “slash”, a sharp

energy moved towards Lin Feng and enveloped him. A bright and resplendent blade light emerged, and like lightning, descended from the sky towards Lin Feng.

“Die.”

At that moment, Bing Yuan also attacked, he had just released an incredible quantity of ice Qi which was enveloping Lin Feng's body, as if it was corroding Lin Feng's skin. It seemed like Lin Feng was going to freeze to death. At the same time, an ice-fist was moving towards Lin Feng as well, bombarding through the atmosphere, it was ice-cold and brutal.

“DIE!” Shouted Lin Feng very distinctly while slightly raising his head.

“DIE...Die ...die!”

Was echoing in the atmosphere and far away into the distance. An incredible deadly Qi invaded the atmosphere as if it could slaughter everyone.

That incredibly sharp deadly Qi astonished Leng Yue and Bing Yuan. Their hearts started pounding. Their blade and ice attacks seemed very weak in comparison. The force and Qi of their attacks was much weaker than what Lin Feng was releasing.

Lin Feng threw himself at Bing Yuan like a sword. Then, a pallid sword light flashed for a brief moment. Bing Yuan's heart was

brutally and violently pounding and immediately after, it stopped.

At the same time, Leng Yue's resplendent blade also fell through the air.

"Slash!" A slight sound emerged in the air. Bing Yuan's body had been cut into two pieces and blood was gushing everywhere. Blood was everywhere.

Leng Yue's blade had cut Bing Yuan's body into two pieces down the middle. The ground had exploded beneath him. The two halves of Bing Yuan's body flew in opposite directions from the explosion.

The atmosphere suddenly became absolutely silent. The crowd looked terrified. They were staring at Bing Yuan's corpse.

"He died!"

"Bing Yuan was cut into two by Leng Yue's blade?"

The crowd looked absolutely dumbstruck as if they couldn't believe their eyes, especially the disciples of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. Bing Yuan was the best disciple of the Mountain Village. He had broken through to the ninth Qi layer... And he had died like that? One attack had been enough to cut him in two? Besides, he had been killed by Leng Yue, it couldn't be true, it had to be a dream... An extremely strong junior cultivator had been killed in a flash.

“You killed Bing Yuan?” Said the people of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village while furiously staring at Leng Yue.

“Idiot, didn’t you see that Lin Feng killed him before my attack even hit, do you really think it was me that killed him? If I had, he wouldn’t have died with only one strike.” Said Leng Yue while furious. At that moment, his facial expression was hideous. He was staring at Lin Feng. That guy had needed only one strike to kill Bing Yuan and forced him to cut Bing Yuan in half with his attack.

If Leng Yue killed the others, he wouldn’t need to justify himself but this time he had killed a genius of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, if there was no explanation, maybe there would be a serious conflict between the two big sects. The consequences would be disastrous.

“Killed by Lin Feng?” The people of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village were looking at Lin Feng.

“You dare attacked Bing Yuan by surprise?” Said one of them. Immediately after, they all looked disgusted by Lin Feng.

“Attacked him by surprise?” Lin Feng was stupefied. Immediately after, he shook his head and said: “You’re all retarded as well as blind.”

A moment before, Bing Yuan had attacked him and even if Lin Feng had parried, why say that he had attacked him by surprise?

Bing Yuan was attacking him and Lin Feng wanted to strike back, they called that a surprise attack.

“You all want to die.” Said Lin Feng when he saw them all starting to walk towards him. He released deadly Qi. When the disciples of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village sensed that dense deadly Qi, their hearts started pounding brutally. That deadly Qi was extremely brutal, it was swift and fierce.

“It doesn’t look good!” Said the disciples of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. They had an ominous presentiment. At that moment, they saw a purple energy emerge from Lin Feng’s body and move towards them.

“What’s this?” Thought the people in the crowd, shocked. That purple energy was floating in the air like a snake towards them. All the people of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village were terrified and panic-stricken.

However, that long purple thread of energy turned into a dragon. In a flash, it enveloped and swallowed their bodies as they tried to approach Lin Feng.

“Ahhhh....” Some horrible shrieks spread in the air. The long purple dragon was holding them so tightly that it was painful. Their bodies felt like they were melting. Its body completely covered them as if they would be forced to drown inside it.

A short moment later, the purple river-like silhouette returned to Lin Feng. At that moment, the disciples of the Ice and Snow

Mountain Village had already disappeared. They had completely melted and nothing was remaining of their bodies.

“How terrifying!”

“What kind of spirit is that? It’s monstrous.”

The hearts of the people in the crowd were brutally pounding. All the disciples of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, including Bing Yuan, had died.

Bing Yuan had been cut into two and the others had been swallowed by a monstrous dragon to the extent that nothing was left. Everything that was happening was too shocking.

They wanted to kill Lin Feng?

Besides, Bing Yuan and the Blademaster, Leng Yue, had cooperated but that had only lasted for a very short moment. Bing Yuan had died and therefore, the other disciples of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village had intervened, they thought that they were going to kill Lin Feng with numbers and in the end, he was still standing there in the same place, a long purple dragon had emerged from his body and swallowed them like an evil spirit.

The crowd was just realizing that if Lin Feng had dared to provoke both Bing Yuan and Leng Yue, it was because he was indeed, extremely powerful. He was much stronger than Bing Yuan.

“He’s a genius, he’s much scarier than Bing Yuan!” Thought the people in the crowd. At that moment, they were looking at Leng Yue.

At that moment, Leng Yue was staring at Lin Feng, he looked perplexed. He looked as sharp as before but he already didn’t look as aggressive.

That blade hadn’t touched Lin Feng, not even slightly, and because of Lin Feng, he had ended up cutting Bing Yuan’s body into two pieces. Lin Feng’s power was, indeed, terrifying.

“Extremely arrogant yet can’t withstand a single attack, such a worthless person.” Said Lin Feng in an ice-cold way while looking at Bing Yuan’s corpse. Immediately after, he turned around slowly and looked at Leng Yue. Lin Feng was smiling coldly.

“Are you the same, Blademaster? Do you think that you can bully everyone with only your current strength? There is a vast ocean of cultivators who are stronger than you.”

The Blademaster looked glum, his facial expression was hideous but he had no way to contradict Lin Feng. He was just blankly staring at him.

Lin Feng was extremely strong, Leng Yue had to be careful.

“You threatened us with your blade previously because of a



simple sentence? What gives you the right to use a blade in front of me?” Lin Feng took a step and sword energy whistled through the air. Sword Qi and force was falling from the sky in the form of a hurricane rushing towards Leng Yue. It seemed like ten thousand swords were attacking at the same time. It was terrifying.

That sword force was even more brutal than Leng Yue’s blade force, and sharper as well.

The sword was the emperor of all weapons!

## Chapter 277: Kill As He Wishes?

---

“What a strong sword Qi and force. What a cruel man.” The hearts of the people in the crowd were pounding.

Besides, the four disciples of the Hao Yue Sect were dumbstruck. In the Celestial Mountain Restaurant, they had provoked Lin Feng. Leng Yue had even been extremely aggressive to them. He had immediately threatened them with a blade and attacked the banister next to Lin Feng. Lin Feng had, however, remained silent and incomparably calm.

They had thought that he was a timid coward, a weakling, but at that moment, the force and Qi which Lin Feng had just released proved to them that if Lin Feng didn't attack them before, it wasn't because he was scared, it was just because they were not fit to be his opponents.

When Leng Yue sensed the incomparably sharp energy, he frowned. At that moment, Lin Feng had shown to everybody that he was stronger than Leng Yue. Maybe the real Lin Feng had finally shown himself.

However, blade cultivators were sharp, aggressive and had an indomitable will. With their blades, they could annihilate everything. Even if his opponent was extremely strong, Leng Yue remained fearless, he wasn't flinching at all. He was able to condense blade Qi. He loved blades, understood blades, grasped how they worked, his nickname “The Blademaster” wasn't just a rumor. Even though he was insufferably arrogant and thought he was the best in the world, he was still a genius.

A light flashed, it was the light of the Moon-Breaking Blade. Its light was bright, clear and piercingly-cold.

“It’s a Ling level weapon, the Moon-Breaking Blade. Leng Yue is surprisingly using his new weapon against that guy. How come we’ve never heard of him before?” Thought many people. At that moment, Leng Yue wasn’t hesitating, his body like a sharp blade, he became one with his blade.

“I recognize that I underestimated you, but you are still very far from being as strong as me.” Said the Blademaster while holding the Moon-Breaking Blade. Leng Yue still thought he was the best and youngest genius in the world but as before, he remained vigilant in front of Lin Feng.

“I, Leng Yue, started practicing blade cultivation when I was five years old. At the Hao Yue Sect, there aren’t any strong blade skills. I created everything on my own. I understood how to use blade force and how to use energy attacks, I did all of this in the last year. I defeated many of my fellow disciples at the Hao Yue Sect. That’s how I became who I am today. I taught myself a skill called Lonely Shadow. You can die under my created blade attack. I’m proud of it. ” said Leng Yue. He was speaking slowly. He considered everything and everyone beneath his attention. When the crowd heard him, they were all secretly nodding. Leng Yue was really a genius. He taught himself blade skills and could use energy attacks. He was extremely strong and powerful. Maybe Lin Feng was weaker than him.

“You don’t understand blades. Your talent is that of a mediocre

person.” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly and then continued: “You cannot rival me. Just like you, I’ve taught myself sword skills and I have only been practicing for a year. Come and have a try.”

“One year?” The crowd was stupefied. Lin Feng had been practicing sword skills for only a year? Was it possible to become that strong within a year?

Besides, Lin Feng was saying that Leng Yue didn’t understand blades, that he was a mediocre cultivator, if he was a mediocre cultivator, what were the people in the crowd? It hurt the pride of many of these people.

“Alright, remember, the name of my attack that will take your life is Lonely Shadow.” Said Leng Yue slowly. Then he jumped and didn’t release any blade force. Instead, he used his blade to carry out an energy attack.

“Lonely Shadow!” He said in a low voice. A light appeared and invaded the atmosphere as if it had no limit.

That was a blade energy attack, that blade was like a person who didn’t know which direction to attack from, so it appeared in every direction. Energy attacks, when using a blade seemed like there were thousands of blades even though there was only one. That shadow-like attack was unfathomable and enigmatic. It seemed like it chased its opponent. Besides, if it touched anyone, nobody would be able to resist the power.

Before, Leng Yue required only one attack to kill opponents of

the same level as him, even if they were people of the ninth Ling Qi layer, he could easily kill them.

That Lonely Shadow was astonishing. Nobody had ever survived such an energy attack; and at that moment, it would be especially complicated since Leng Yue was carrying it out using a spiritual weapon of higher quality, his precious treasure, the Moon-Breaking Blade.

“Lin Feng, you will definitely die.”

That blade attack is unfathomable. The Blademaster really deserves the Moon-Breaking Blade. Bing Yuan was much weaker than him.” When the crowd saw that blade, they were astonished. They gradually understood why, when the Blademaster used his blade, people would die.

His Lonely Shadow attack fell from the air, the crowd had the impression that Lin Feng was already cut in two in front of them. A tearing sound spread in the air which made the crowd narrow their eyes.

“What’s going on?”

The hearts of the people in the crowd were pounding. The Moon-Breaking Blade was descending from the air, like a lonely shadow. However, Lin Feng was patiently waiting in his initial position. In front of him, there was a sword. It was an ordinary sword, however, a blade was pressed against it, the blade was unable to move further. That majestic Moon-Breaking Blade had been

stopped by an ordinary sword.

“How’s that possible?” The crowd was fixedly staring at the ordinary sword. It couldn’t look more ordinary than it did but it had blocked the powerful blade. Nobody knew how Lin Feng had done that.

“I told you, you don’t understand blades.” Calmly said Lin Feng.

He was looking at Leng Yue who looked astonished, he couldn’t believe it. Then, the sword slowly moved back, it started emitting a bright and resplendent light. It was dazzling to the eyes. What a brilliant sword!

“Energy attack.”

Leng Yue’s heart was pounding. He used his blade to carry out an energy attack again, to block the sword in front of him and at that moment a metallic sound spread in the atmosphere. The Moon-Breaking Blade was blown away and immediately blood was projected into the air. Leng Yue’s body was violently pushed backwards. If he hadn’t used his blade energy attack, that dazzling sword would have killed him.

Lin Feng suddenly raised his hand and caught the flying Moon-Breaking Blade. He then immediately shouted: “Ba Dao!”

Ba Dao was stupefied. Lin Feng threw the Moon-Breaking Blade to him. His eyes were excited behind his mask.

Lin Feng had, as expected, remembered his promise. He had taken the Moon-Breaking Blade and given it to Ba Dao. Even though it was stolen, it didn't matter.

Lin Feng had anticipated that Leng Yue would attack him, he knew that even if he didn't get the Moon-Breaking Blade at the auction, sooner or later, the blade would be Ba Dao's blade.

Leng Yue lowered his head. There was a long blood trail from his arm which was almost cut off. He was stupefied. He hadn't even had one occasion to strike Lin Feng with his blade. Lin Feng had remained calm and relaxed and had easily blocked all of his attacks. Lin Feng was right, Leng Yue didn't understand blades. He definitely had natural talent but it was still comparable to that of mediocre people.

"I taught myself how to use my blade when I was five and he has only been using a sword for a year and he's already able to defeat me. Why the hell was I so proud? Where did my arrogance come from?" Leng Yue asked himself. He regretted having the reputation of a genius at that moment.

"I was so proud of my Lonely Shadow but he blocked it so easily... Maybe I really don't understand blades." Leng Yue's heart was filled with sadness. He felt completely dispirited, Lin Feng destroyed his arrogance.

When Lin Feng noticed that Leng Yue was regretting, Lin Feng smiled coldly. Those who dared to humiliate Meng Qing had to die.

“Die!”

Lin Feng took a step, an infinite quantity of sword Qi invaded the atmosphere. People’s hearts were pounding. Leng Yue was going to get killed by Lin Feng?

Was another genius going to take his last breath?

Lin Feng’s sword was dazzling. At that moment, Leng Yue was absolutely hopeless and dispirited, it seemed like he had given up. He didn’t have his fighting spirit anymore. He was just looking at Lin Feng’s sword, piercing the atmosphere. There was a mountain of thoughts in his head, he didn’t understand what was happening. He had been training hard for ten years.

“Get lost!”

At that moment, a shadow appeared in the distance behind Leng Yue. It looked like a swift and fierce blade shadow. It immediately moved towards Lin Feng. That person was like a blade and their energy was boundless.

“Slash!”

Lin Feng’s sword descended from the air. An explosion filled the air. A crevice appeared in the ground. Lin Feng groaned. That extremely swift and fierce blade had reached him which violently knocked him backwards.



“The blade is a weapon for strong cultivators. Losing and winning is something that depends on fate. In any case, there is always a cultivator who is stronger than you in this world.” Said an extremely loud and mighty voice which filled the sky, then it continued: “Leng Yue, no need to be discouraged! I won’t kill him so you can kill him as you wish, with your blade.”

After that, two silhouettes started to rush into the sky. People’s hearts were trembling.

There was a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer amongst them. He had stopped Lin Feng to help Leng Yue.

He said that he wasn’t killing Lin Feng to let Leng Yue do that himself. He was sparing Lin Feng on purpose.

“Lin Feng, you’re very lucky.” Thought the people in the crowd.

But at that moment, the ground started shaking insanely. A white silhouette, which looked like a celestial being, was attacking. In a flash, her silhouette moved towards a distant point. She released an incredible coldness which was freezing people’s hearts and thoughts. The only thing left in the area seemed to be coldness.

“Die!” Shouted the ice-cold and voice. In the atmosphere, some ice transformed into a white arrow which rushed towards the figure in the distance.

The silhouette in the horizon flickered, their pace accelerated, that blade shadow looked like a shooting star. However, that white arrow was still moving straight towards the silhouette at a much faster speed. Then, that silhouette groaned and blood splashed through the air. Such a move had made the words that they just spoke sound like a joke.

If Lin Feng wanted to kill, he could kill as he pleased?

## Chapter 278: The Night Visit!

---

“It’s a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer!”

When the crowd saw that white silhouette, who had suddenly appeared, they were stupefied. She attacked and the ice from her attack was shot across hundreds of kilometres. Her speed was also much more incredible than that of the blade shadow. After her attack, blood filled the air.

That silent woman, who was always by Lin Feng’s side, was actually a strong cultivator. Besides, Bing Yuan and Leng Yue had dared to humiliate her, they wanted to die. If Leng Yue managed to leave alive, that would be a strike of luck.

No matter if it was Lin Feng or Meng Qing, they could both easily kill Leng Yue.

“Who’s that person who came to save Leng Yue? He’s also a blade user, how surprising!” Thought the crowd looking at them from a distance. They didn’t know if he was also a strong cultivator of the Hao Yue Sect. Why wasn’t he showing himself? Why was he hiding his identity? Why was he afraid of showing his true colours? Besides, he had come to save Leng Yue and hadn’t even stopped for one second.

Lin Feng gazed into the distance, he was thinking. That person was a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer and was, just like Leng Yue, a blade cultivator. His blade abilities were extremely advanced. Was he Leng Yue’s teacher?

“Genius of the Hao Yue Sect, It would be best for you to not cross my path again.” Thought Lin Feng coldly. He then immediately moved towards Bing Yuan’s corpse and looked for a ring with a Na stone.

That guy had obtained the essence fire of the seven-tail fox, it couldn’t have gone far, he probably had a Na stone to store his items. Besides, the purity stones he had couldn’t have come from nowhere.

Since Lin Feng had killed him, he had to take his Na stone, otherwise, wouldn’t it just be wasted?

Lin Feng took the ring from Bing Yuan’s finger, blood dripped on the ring, in a flash, information entered Lin Feng’s consciousness. A cold Qi dispersed into the air, that was Bing Yuan’s remaining Qi inside the ring.

The essence fire of the seven-tail fox was inside. Besides, there were a few skills and a few purity stones. Lin Feng wasn’t interested in these little things, he just wanted the Xuan level essence fire, it was extremely valuable. Bing Yuan had spent an enormous amount of money to buy it but now, it belonged to Lin Feng.

Besides, coupled with his ancient cauldron and the Moon-Breaking Blade which he had stolen from Leng Yue, Lin Feng had managed to take the top three items of the auction.

“Celestial River is abundant in treasures.” Lin Feng laughed. On his first day at Celestial River, he had found some spiritual herbs and obtained three new treasures. He was particularly happy about the ancient dragon cauldron which was one of the ten great cauldrons. Lin Feng felt very lucky.

Even though the cauldron didn't seem to be in good shape, except for the carvings which looked alive, it still couldn't be an ordinary object, it was an item shrouded in mystery and secrets.

Unfortunately, these ten ancient cauldrons were too old and Lin Feng didn't know where to find information about them. He didn't know how to use the dragon cauldron either.

.....

In the middle of a calm and peaceful night, in a hotel, Lin Feng was in his room, sitting cross-legged on the edge of the bed. He wasn't sleeping, instead, he was investigating his memories as this was his best resource for information.

All the memories which had been transmitted to Lin Feng by the cultivator of the Zun Qi layer, no matter if they concerned pill concoction or weapon fabrication, were all priceless. They could never be exchanged for something material. The strong cultivator had given a priceless treasure to Lin Feng.

At that moment, some footsteps broke the silence which made Lin Feng's closed eyes oscillate. Immediately after, he opened his eyes.

Someone knocked at the door. Lin Feng said, sounding indifferent: "Come in."

The door opened itself and a beautiful woman appeared at the door, however, it wasn't Meng Qing at all. Besides, Lin Feng had seen that woman during the day, it was Lan Jiao, the alluring young woman.

Even though it was the middle of the night, Lan Jiao was still wearing extremely revealing clothing.

At that moment, she had already changed her clothes and put on a fire-red dress. Her snowy white shoulders were still uncovered. Her large chest was still partially revealed, the sight was unbearable, it would drive a man crazy with desire.

"She's such a seductress... An extraordinarily beautiful woman." Thought Lin Feng when he saw her figure. He looked a bit surprised though, it was the middle of the night, what did Lan Jiao want? Besides, she was wearing such revealing clothes, wasn't she scared for her safety?

"Mister Lin, can I come in?" Asked Lan Jiao still waiting at the entrance while smiling. She had such clear and beautiful eyes, they were enchanting. It seemed like she could steal a man's soul.

Lin Feng remained silent for a second and then slightly nodded while saying: "Come in."

When Lan Jiao heard him, she entered the room and, without asking Lin Feng's permission, immediately sat down. She smiled at Lin Feng and said: "Mister Lin, I'm so sorry for bothering you in the middle of the night."

Lin Feng slightly shook his head and said: "Miss, what can I help you with?"

"Am I not allowed to come and visit Mister Lin without needing something?" Said Lan Jiao straightforwardly. She was casting flirtatious glances at Lin Feng and her voice was filled with temptation.

"Miss Lan Jiao, you came to my room in the middle of the night, this is not the best moment to visit me, things cannot be that simple!" Said Lin Feng smiling. Lan Jiao was visiting Lin Feng in the middle of the night, was she spying on him? She definitely had ulterior motives. Therefore, Lin Feng's voice also somewhat conveyed sarcasm.

"Mister Lin is insensitive and lacks passion." Said Lan Jiao while smiling. She was still staring at Lin Feng in a seducing and alluring way as if she hoped that Lin Feng's heart would eventually melt.

But what Lan Jiao didn't know was that Lin Feng could control himself much more than ordinary people when it came to beautiful women.

"If I was passionate, I am afraid that you wouldn't be feeling safe

right now.” Said Lin Feng while glancing at her partially revealed chest. His heart was pounding, he was filled with desire. If Lin Feng had a little less willpower and determination, something would definitely get the better of him.

“If Mister Lin feels like being passionate, I don’t mind it.” Said Lan Jiao while smiling. She stood up and walked towards Lin Feng. When she arrived in front of him, all he could see was her white chest.

Lan Jiao was doing that on purpose.... and it was surprisingly turning him on. Lin Feng didn’t know what her motive was though.

“Since you are vigorously expressing your desire for you to me be passionate, I will be passionate.” Said Lin Feng who stood up. He walked towards Lan Jiao which stupefied her. She couldn’t help but take a tiny step backwards which made Lin Feng smile.

“Miss Lan, you are seducing me but you are scared of what I might do, why is that?” Said Lin Feng sounding indifferent and then continued: “Miss Lan, what is your real purpose for coming here?”

Lan Jiao was stupefied. Her facial expression was strange. Lin Feng was surprisingly turning a blind eye to her seduction. Could it be that she wasn’t seducing enough for him?



## Chapter 279: Enchanting and Bewitching

---

“Why do you think that I necessarily have a hidden reason for coming to visit you?”

When Lan Jiao heard Lin Feng, her eyes turned wet and she had a pitiful expression. She took a tiny step forward. Only a few inches were separating her and Lin Feng.

“Besides, when did I say that I was scared of what you would do? If you like my body, you can have it.”

Her voice, which was gradually becoming softer and softer, she sounded shy yet was filled with endless temptation.

Lin Feng was observing Lan Jiao, she lowered her head and looked extremely shy, her cheeks turned entirely red.

Her dress slowly slid along her shoulders. Her snowy-white breasts were becoming more and more revealed. Lin Feng was absolutely captivated by the view. He was staring at her dress which was sliding down her shoulders. Only a tiny bit more and he would discover what was under her dress.

“Do you want to see?” Asked Lan Jiao sounding extremely seductive, Lin Feng’s heart was like a horse galloping at full speed. He then said: “I do.....”

When Lin Feng said that, Lan Jiao’s dress had finally started to

fall. It slowly slid down her body until it softly landed on the floor. Her plentiful bosom was revealed before Lin Feng's eyes. They were soft and snowy-white, they almost looked unreal. Lin Feng wanted to stretch out his hand and gently caress her voluptuous bosom. That thought gave birth to endless desires in his heart.

Lin Feng's heart, at that moment, was burning evilly. A small flame of desire had turned into to an inferno.

“Do you want me, Master Lin?”

Her voice was filled with endless seduction and it triggered an explosion in Lin Feng's heart. His heart was filled with a scorching desire. He was unable to free himself from the endless desire, after all, he was still a young man. Apart from Duan Xin Ye, he had never seen the naked body of another woman. He had also never had so much temptation before him, he had the impression that he was going insane.

At that moment, Lin Feng's face was entirely red, he slowly raised his hands and moved them towards her plentiful bosom.

“I can't.” Thought Lin Feng alarmed. His hands were hovering in the air, he was sobering up.

“There's something wrong, this is not right. She was wearing something under her dress, why would she suddenly be naked right now?” Lin Feng could think a little bit more clearly at that moment. He realized that the situation wasn't real.

He slightly closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He used earth fusion and started to perceive everything around him.

Lin Feng opened his eyes. It seemed like his illusion was slowly dissipating like the moon reflected on a lake. At that moment, Lan Jiao was standing there and smiling. She was still wearing her dress, even though she was wearing very revealing clothing, she still wasn't naked.

A moment ago, Lin Feng had a hallucination.

“What’s going on?”

Lin Feng’s pupils shrank. Everything that had just happened was an illusion, but Lin Feng had the impression that it was absolutely real.

“Mister Lin, what are you thinking about?”

Lan Jiao was staring at Lin Feng, she smiled, but her smile was hiding something deeper.

Lin Feng was stupefied, he was speechless. He couldn't tell Lan Jiao that, a moment before, he was thinking about caressing her body but it had just been an illusion.

“A moment ago, I saw an illusion.” Said Lin Feng when he saw that Lan Jiao was smiling. He couldn't be fooled.

Lin Feng, in the six previous months, had been learning how to condense pure Qi, how to concoct pills. He had also learnt about the Surplus Souls technique. He had been drowning himself in the memories of the strong cultivator. He hadn't practiced cultivation to improve his level of strength but his power had already reached the peak of the eighth Ling Qi layer. Besides, he could use the earth fusion and had an iron willpower but he had still been imprisoned in an illusion.

Obviously, Lan Jiao had been the one who had used the illusion against him, making his heart abandon itself to desire. That arousing illusion had managed to make him confused.

Lan Jiao was extremely strong. She wasn't a simple auctioneer at the Dream Pavilion, it couldn't be that simple. With such strong people, how terrifying was the Dream Pavilion!

"Miss Lan, even though it was just an illusion, everything I saw was real, it was really your body that I saw. Could it be that you are actually scared of what I might do, which is why you used an illusion?" Said Lin Feng surprisingly admitting what he had seen.

"You're wrong." Said Lan Jiao while smiling. Her seductive eyes were staring at Lin Feng, she then continued: "The things that you saw were indeed true, but I just guided the illusion, if you hadn't thought about it and wanted it to go in that direction, it wouldn't have happened that way. Actually, even though the illusion was not real, the things that you saw were real, so you guessed right concerning that part."

That had nothing to do with strength, it was just that Lin Feng had been too careless. He hadn't expected to be the victim of an illusion. He didn't even know precisely when the illusion started. Lan Jiao's illusion looked too real, as if illusion and reality had merged together in Lin Feng's mind.

"So you have displayed your abilities, now tell me why you came." Said Lin Feng sounding indifferent. He had experienced Lan Jiao's power, next time, he wouldn't be fooled and fall into her trap again.

The earth fusion was an incredible dimension, he just had to activate it and he would be able to perceive everything around him distinctly. Just like a moment before, when he had come back to reality, however, it wouldn't be so simple against a stronger cultivator.

"Mister Lin, since you are so impatient to know, I will tell you immediately." Said Lan Jiao while smiling. She then continued: "Mister Lin, I came to ask you to join us."

"Join you? At the Dream Pavilion?" Lin Feng was surprised. He hadn't anticipated that she would make such an offer.

"In a way but not just that, there is more than just the Dream Pavilion." Said Lan Jiao while smiling, Lin Feng's heartbeat accelerated.

More than just the Dream Pavilion? What Lan Jiao was probably trying to tell him was that the Dream Pavilion was only a front

for their strength, nothing more.

“I’m sorry, I’m not interested.” Said Lin Feng immediately refusing her offer. Lan Jiao’s smile became rigid for a second.

“I’m not done talking. Why do you need to refuse so hastily?” Said Lan Jiao while smiling again, she then slowly said: “Mister Lin, if you join us, you will benefit from an infinite amount of cultivation resources, extremely powerful martial skills and agility techniques. You will be able to enjoy all these benefits as much as you wish. Besides, the illusion that you just saw could also become reality.”

She was trying to seduce him again, martial skills, agility techniques, cultivation resources... Besides, he would also be able to have her, everything was very tempting.

“I’m sorry, I’m not interested.” Said Lin Feng while smiling yet sounding stricter, leaving no space for doubt, which surprised Lan Jiao.

Not interested? Wasn’t he interested in obtaining all the powerful agility techniques and martial skills that he wished? Or wasn’t he interested in her?

Could it be that Lin Feng didn’t find her attractive? She felt a bit hopeless, she was giving her best to entice Lin Feng but it didn’t seem to work at all, she hadn’t thought that would be a possibility.

Lin Feng didn't need martial skills and agility techniques, he had the memories from the cultivator of the Zun Qi layer. In these memories, there were many powerful martial skills and agility techniques to the extent that it even had things like the surplus soul technique.

Women, except when it came to seduction, couldn't rival Meng Qing when it came to purity and beauty, even Duan Xin Ye was much better in comparison to Lan Jiao, besides, she was also more elegant.

Joining them also implied less freedom and he would need to complete certain tasks. Obviously, that wasn't something that Lin Feng desired, therefore he wasn't even considering the offer.

"Mister Lin, do you know who the person was that saved Leng Yue? You shouldn't have provoked them. Your life might be in danger now." Said Lan Jiao sounding like she wasn't about to give up.

"Are you done talking?" Said Lin Feng while staring at Lan Jiao. Because Lin Feng didn't agree even though she was saying such tempting things, she was now trying to scare him.

Lan Jiao was stupefied. Lin Feng continued: "If you are done talking, just leave. You are a girl and you are in my room, if people noticed, then there rumours would be spread, maybe you don't care about those rumours but I do care." Said Lin Feng. Lan Jiao was fixedly staring at him. She looked offended.

“Hmph!” Groaned Lan Jiao. She was furiously glaring at Lin Feng. Then, she left Lin Feng’s room.



## Chapter 280: Searching Everywhere!

---

In the middle of the night, outside of the Celestial Mountain Restaurant, some people were walking by.

“What a seductive lady, how pretty!”

When they saw Lan Jiao run away from the restaurant, a drunk man walked towards her.

“Oh, such a beauty, how white! Hahaha....” That drunk man was staring at Lan Jiao’s breasts and looked evilly.

“Is that so? Do you want to see?” Said Lan Jiao while smiling. The drunk man’s eyes suddenly became particularly brilliant, he was drooling.

“I do, I do.....”

The crowd was fixedly staring at Lan Jiao.

“Well, all of you, look carefully.” Said Lan Jiao with a bewitching smile on her face. Immediately after, her dress slowly slid down her body which made them all breathless for a second, they were fixedly staring at these two snowy-white breasts.

However, a moment after, they stopped seeing her breasts which they desired so much, instead, blood splashed through the

atmosphere. A few horrible shrieks broke the silence of the night. All those who had been looking at Lan Jiao were dead on the ground.

Some people came see what was happening, there was a wave of cold Qi in the atmosphere. It was very cold.

People didn't dare look at Lan Jiao anymore though. They wouldn't be able to seduce such an attractive woman.

In the distance, a group of white silhouettes were approaching, they were carrying a palanquin. There were four people and they were all wearing white clothes. They looked extremely nimble and were extremely quick.

These pure and holy white silhouettes seemed like they were flying through the air which made them look like ghosts or celestial beings. In a flash, they arrived in front of the crowd.

However, at that moment, they disappeared and instantly appeared in the distance and then vanished onto the horizon.

"How fast!" The crowd was astonished. They had disappeared in a flash.

"What about the attractive girl?" Said someone surprised. Immediately after, the crowd turned around and looked in Lan Jiao's direction. They were astonished, there was nobody. Lan Jiao surprisingly had disappeared too.

And that palanquin?

The enigmatic white silhouettes were, as before, on the road, shuttling back and forth. On the palanquin, there was a beautiful middle-aged woman looking at Lan Jiao with a fake smile on her face. She said: “Why is Jiao Jiao so furious?”

“Aunt Yun, your suggestion was stupid!” Said Lan Jiao sounding annoyed. She had a long face.

“Why? How come? Considering how seductive you are, you didn’t manage to tempt him?” Asked Aunt Yun while smiling.

“Aunt Yun, I perfectly know that you are making fun of me, that bastard will see.” said Lan Jiao while hitting her fist in the palm of her other hand. Her eyes were filled with hatred. Lin Feng was detestable. She had used her Thousand Evil Illusions skill and Lin Feng had remained unaffected, she had even showed him her own body. She felt humiliated, her face had been slapped.

“Jiao Jiao, haven’t you studied the Thousand Evil Illusions? Coupled with your cultivation level and your beauty, how could you lose?” Said Aunt Yun. Lan Jiao was stupefied and said: “How could I use the Thousand Evil Illusions against him? Besides, I said that I had learnt that skill, but it was just a joke, nothing more. Don’t misunderstand.” said Lan Jiao while lowering her head. She didn’t dare look at Aunt Yun, she felt ashamed. She didn’t seem to be the same woman as when she was facing Lin Feng. At that moment, she looked like a little girl.

“Is that so?” Said Aunt Yun while smiling. Her smile seemed deep and profound.

“No wonder you were defeated, Lin Feng has set a city on fire, travelled into another country to save the princess, his willpower and determination are tempered like steel. Jiao Jiao, if you had submitted yourself to him directly, I would have despised him.”

“Huh?” Lan Jiao was surprised. She had actually really used the Thousand Evil Illusions and on top of that, it was the first time that she used it. However, she had lost, that’s why she was furious. The scariest part was Lin Feng’s last words, he had said that she didn’t care about her reputation but he did care about his. It made her look cheap and shameless.

But Aunt Yun’s opinion made sense in a way. If she had submitted herself to Lin Feng, she wouldn’t have been so alluring any longer.

That is why she had used the Thousand Evil Illusions which was extremely powerful. Lin Feng falling for it was a normal thing.

“Jiao Jiao, it’s been a few days, now that the news is already spreading amongst those at the top, the treasure has come to light, but we don’t know anything else, that’s all. Wait for a few more days and we will hear. After receiving the treasure, you will not need to stay here anymore. Your training will come to an end.” Said Aunt Yun sounding mysterious. Lan Jiao had been in Celestial River for a long time.

“Go back?!” Whispered Lan Jiao. She looked perplexed.

.....

On the second day, in the Dream Pavilion, there were still ten objects to be sold at the auction. One of the things which amazed the crowd the most was a Di level skill. Even though it was lower quality, it was still a Di level skill. They were brutally strong, that wasn't a skill which you could find anywhere.

Apart from a large influential group or sect, ordinary people relied on themselves to gain benefits. It was very difficult for them to acquire skills of the Di level and above. In the Dream Pavilion, a Di level skill had appeared, of course it was making the crowd go wild.

In the end, it was obtained by someone who spent ten thousand purity stones of medium quality to acquire it. It was a monstrous price.

Besides, there were other treasures in that auction sale, a spiritual weapon. It was a spiritual weapon of medium quality. Someone bought it for ten thousand purity stones of medium quality as well.

After the end of the auction, Lan Jiao looked at the booth where Lin Feng had been on the day before, at that moment, there was nobody in that broken booth. Lin Feng hadn't come to pick up his purity stones either.

“Where is Lin Feng?” At that moment, an angry voice and loud shout spread through the atmosphere.

A silhouette was flying through the air towards the auction room. People in the crowd were immediately moving aside to open the way. Immediately after, that silhouette landed onto the ground and released some deadly Qi which astonished the crowd. They were all looking at the entrance of the auction room.

They only saw a majestic-looking young man who was bald and there was a black burn on their head. It looked horrible but nobody dared make fun of them. People who were near him were moving backwards fearing that he would get furious and kill them.

“Lin Feng, show yourself!” Shouted the man coldly.

“It seems like Tu Jiu has come for the essence fire.” Thought the people in the crowd. On the day before, Lin Feng had killed Bing Yuan and had made Leng Yue move back with one sword strike. His name was already famous in Celestial River, many people knew who he was. Lin Feng was known for all the insane things that he had done.

That outstanding young man was the amazing hero who had set a city on fire. No wonder he was that aggressive and had immediately killed Bing Yuan. Besides, he had nearly killed Leng Yue as well.

However, even though his name had become famous, it also

meant more trouble. Everybody knew that he had stolen the beast essence fire. Besides, he had many enemies in Celestial River.

Tu Jiu was one of them. Besides, he particularly liked that fox fire. What scared people as well was that Tu Jiu had a deep background in Celestial River. He didn't fear Lin Feng, even if a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer was with him.

Lan Jiao frowned, she saw Tu Jiu and thought: "Lin Feng, what will you do this time?"

Tu Jiu had an influential background, he was extremely strong and was close to a breakthrough into the Xuan Qi Layer. Bing Yuan and Leng Yue were weaklings in comparison.

Bing Yuan had acquired the fox fire, instead of leaving Celestial River, he decided to try and kill Lin Feng, in the end, he had lost his life instead.

Lan Jiao returned into the back room of the auction. Aunt Yun then said in a low voice: "Jiao Jiao, Lin Feng hasn't come yet to pick up his purity stones. You could deliver them to him."

"Ah?"

Lan Jiao was stupefied. Help Lin Feng and bring the purity stones to him?

"Alright. I have the purity stones, let's see how he will receive

me.” Said Lan Jiao

“Jiao Jiao, you cannot violate the rules of the Dream Pavilion.” Said Aunt Yun while shaking her head and smiling.

“Don’t worry Aunt Yun, I will just make him undergo some hardships.” Said Lan Jiao who was thinking of a plan to deal with Lin Feng. Her eyes were twinkling.

Aunt Yun handed the purity stones to Lan Jiao. Lan Jiao immediately left afterwards. While looking at her vanishing silhouette, Aunt Yun smiled and said: “Jiao Jiao, you need someone to set rules for you, otherwise you’re too disobedient.”

Lan Jiao left the auction and headed towards Lin Feng.

Tu Jiu had also learnt that Lin Feng wasn’t there. He was determined to go to every corner of the city to look for him. He had to obtain that beast’s essence fire.

Besides, at the same time, in the Ice and Snow Mountain Village which was covered with snow.

A group of white horses were galloping at full speed towards the mountain, leaving their footprints in the snow. It seemed like they didn’t feel cold at all.

The best core disciple of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village had been killed in Celestial River, that was shocking news for



everybody in the village.

# Chapter 281: Threats At The Door!

---

In the Celestial Restaurant, Lin Feng sat at a table, drinking while lost in thought.

He didn't feel like rushing to the Dream Pavilion to collect his purity stones, the Dream Pavilion wasn't going to disappear any time soon.

“Have you heard that recently there's a treasure that appeared in Celestial River?” Said a soft voice. It drew many people's attention.

“What do you mean by recently? How long ago? I also heard that there was a treasure here but nobody have found it.”

“How could that really be the case? It would have caused people to talk and the news would have spread. Everybody would have been talking about it in Celestial River. The news would have spread quickly.”

“Hmph, it's just not the way you think it is, that's all. Every treasure is different, not every treasure has the same reaction.”

These two people were both gossiping about the latest rumors. They were speaking more and more loudly, as if they feared that other people couldn't hear their discussion.

“A treasure? Does the ancient dragon cauldron count as one?” Lin Feng said while smiling and shaking his head.

“Lin Feng.”

At that moment, a voice shouted his name, suprising Lin Feng. He looked down and saw Lan Jiao.

Lin Feng was suspicious, what did she want?

“Lin Feng?” The people in the restaurant were stupefied. They followed Lan Jiao’s eyes and saw Lin Feng. He was Lin Feng? He was the genius who killed Bing Yuan and defeated Leng Yue with one sword attack?

Lan Jiao went up to the first floor and walked towards Lin Feng. She didn’t look furious any longer. Her seductive smile appeared on her face again.

Lan Jiao walked towards Lin Feng’s table and said: “Lin Feng, are you not happy to see me?”

Lin Feng raised his head, looked at Lan Jiao and indifferently said: “You are wearing more clothing today, you don’t feel like showing me your body anymore?”

“You...” Lan Jiao was exasperated. A cruel expression appeared in her eyes. What would the others who heard that think about her? What a bastard.

“Lin Feng, I have your twenty thousand purity stones of medium quality.” Lan Jiao said while smiling coldly. Lin Feng was making fun of her, so she wanted to teach him a lesson.

“Hand them over.” Lin Feng said while sipping on his drink, looking indifferent. Lan Jiao was stupefied again.

“Do you think that it will be that easy?” Lan Jiao said while smiling coldly.

Lin Feng slowly raised his head and said: “Is that how the Dream Pavilion handles their affairs?”

“This is my way of doing things and it has nothing to do with the Dream Pavilion. If you want your purity stones, you have to make me happy.” Lan Jiao said while smiling coldly.

Lin Feng was fixedly staring at her and looked absolutely expressionless which made Lan Jiao feel uneasy.

“Give them to me!” Said Lin Feng, sounding ice-cold. Some cold Qi surrounded Lan Jiao’s body.

That coldness made Lan Jiao stop smiling. She gnashed her teeth and said: “What if I don’t give them to you?”

“If you don’t give them to me?” Lin Feng said while looking ice-cold. He stood up, released some more ice-cold Qi and said: “I advise you to think carefully.”

Lan Jiao was blankly staring at Lin Feng, her face turning red. Lin Feng's pupils shrank. He didn't understand Lan Jiao's facial expression. What did it mean?

That woman had used an illusion skill on him during the night, she even tried to scare him. All of this gave birth to aversion in Lin Feng's heart, he didn't feel like talking to her anymore.

And then, at that moment, she had come to him and was threatening to not give him his purity stones, Lin Feng found all of this terribly annoying.

"Lin Feng, you're such a bastard." Lan Jiao said while throwing a small bag onto Lin Feng's table. Immediately after, she turned around and left.

Lan Jiao was starting to hate Lin Feng. During the night, she had used the Thousand Evil Illusions on him and it had not worked at all. Then, at this moment, she had just gone to the restaurant to give Lin Feng his purity stones. She was just teasing him, she was hoping to apologize to Lin Feng, but he immediately threatened her and released some cold Qi as if he did not want to waste time speaking with her. Her heart felt painful.

She also had another purpose for coming. She didn't feel like admitting it but she had actually come to give him a warning.

Tu Jiu was looking for Lin Feng. He wanted to take his beast essence fire. She feared that he wouldn't need much time before he

would find Lin Feng at the Celestial Mountain Restaurant.

Lan Jiao was leaving the restaurant and insulting Lin Feng in her thoughts. That bastard should just die, she didn't care.

Tu Jiu definitely wanted to kill Lin Feng. Lan Jiao hadn't known Lin Feng for a long time, but she knew that he would never hand over the beast essence fire, therefore, Tu Jiu would definitely kill him.

"I will let you die then!" cruel thoughts were passing through Lan Jiao's mind but her steps were getting slower with each thought. She then stopped. She was lost and didn't know what to do.

"I can't. Wouldn't it be bad to let Lin Feng die to Tu Jiu?" Lan Jiao thought. She then slowly turned around. Indeed, she didn't want to let Lin Feng die that way.

She started taking quick and large strides, almost running back to the restaurant. She arrived in front of Lin Feng.

"You came back again! What do you want?" Lin Feng said when he saw Lan Jiao. He was surprised and didn't understand what she wanted.

Lan Jiao gnashed her teeth, she was fixedly staring at Lin Feng before she said: "You should leave as soon as possible, there is someone who is coming to kill you."

“Kill me?” Lin Feng said surprised. He then immediately smiled and said: “Many people want to kill me.”

“This time it’s not the same. It’s Tu Jiu, he wants to take the beast essence fire away from you. Tu Jiu is at the peak of the Ling Qi layer. Nobody of the Ling Qi layer can fight against him. If you don’t give him the beast essence fire, he will kill you.” Warned Lan Jiao.

“At the peak of the Ling Qi layer? Nobody of the Ling Qi layer can fight against him? ” whispered Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was curious to see if, a cultivator of the peak of the Ling Qi layer could kill him if he didn’t hand over the beast essence fire.

When Lan Jiao saw that Lin Feng was smiling, she couldn’t help but shout: “Tu Jiu could find you anytime now! You should leave as quickly as possible or he will kill you!”

When Lin Feng heard Lan Jiao, he raised his head and surprisingly smiled at her. Lan Jiao had been kind to come back and warn him, it seemed like he had misunderstood her but Lin Feng still disliked her behaviour.

“I’m sorry.” Lin Feng said while looking apologetic. Lan Jiao was surprised, that bastard was using this moment to apologize.

“You will not be able to escape unless you hurry up and leave, bastard!” Cursed Lan Jiao.

Lin Feng wasn't moving at all.

Lin Feng slowly shook his head and then heard a voice coming from outside: "No need to try and leave, that won't be possible."

When Lan Jiao heard that ice-cold voice, her facial expression became rigid. It was over for Lin Feng. That bastard had not listened to her and chose not to escape while he had the chance.

"Lin Feng. Get your ass over here." A loud voice shouted, filling the atmosphere and sharply pierced peoples eardrums. The people in the restaurant were shocked, surprisingly, someone dared talk that way to Lin Feng, after everything that he was known for.

Lin Feng was surprised as well. Who was Tu Jiu? Why was he that arrogant?

Lin Feng stood up and started walking. He was slowly walking down the stairs and then, he left the restaurant.

At that moment, outside of the restaurant, there were many people, but most of them were watching from afar. There was a single bald man who looked aggressive and imposing. He was staring at Lin Feng and the expression in his eyes was sharp.

"Are you Lin Feng?" Said Tu Jiu coldly as he looked at Lin Feng.



“Indeed. It seems that you and me are not enemies, right?” Said Lin Feng indifferently.

“Indeed, we are not enemies. Hand over the fox fire. Then, screw off and I will pretend as if nothing happened.” Threatened Tu Jiu.

Lin Feng narrowed his eyes. Tu Jiu had come to find Lin Feng, his behaviour made him look majestic and imposing. Nobody within the Ling Qi layer could fight against him and he was not scared of a cultivator in the Xuan Qi layer, he also had a powerful background which is why he was acting so rudely.

## Chapter 282: The Sword of Pure Qi

---

“You want the beast essence fire?” Lin Feng said a bit surprised. He then coldly continued: “I obtained the essence fire when I killed Bing Yuan. If you want it, I can give it to you in exchange for something else. If you have something of worth, you can obtain it.”

“Are you trying to negotiate with me?” Tu Jiu said while smiling evilly.

“In Celestial River, almost nobody can disobey me. All the people of the Ling Qi layer who dare contradict me die. I advise you to think it over. What do you prefer, your life or the essence fire?”

When the people in the crowd heard that, they shook their heads. How brutally aggressive! That guy was at the peak of the Ling Qi layer, he was invincible below the Xuan Qi Layer. Besides, he had incredible power in Celestial River so people who dared to offend him were not high in number.

Lin Feng surprisingly dared to provoke Tu Jiu. If he didn't accept to hand over the essence fire, he would unfortunately lose his life.

“Do you want to die, or do you want to hand over the essence fire?” Tu Jiu said, giving Lin Feng a choice.

Lin Feng was calmly standing there. He coldly glanced at Tu Jiu and said: “All those who say that they will kill me usually end up getting killed by me, for example Bing Yuan. So now, what do you

prefer? Getting out of my sight, or dying here?”

“Leave or die?” Everybody was stupefied. Not only had Lin Feng not replied to Tu Jiu but he was also giving his own options. He even looked calm and frivolous.

Lin Feng was threatening Tu Jiu in Celestial River. Did Tu Jiu want to leave or did he want to die? That was audacious enough.

“You are going to die!” said Lan Jiao, who was standing behind Lin Feng. Lin Feng was insane.. Bing Yuan was very strong and was a disciple of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, but Tu Jiu was much stronger. He was at the very summit of the Ling Qi layer. His strength was monstrously close to breaking through to the Xuan Qi Layer. Not only was Lin Feng not acting docile, but he was also threatening Tu Jiu, did he want to die?

As expected, when Tu Jiu heard Lin Feng, an evil smile appeared on his face. He then evilly said: “You are the first cultivator of the Ling Qi layer who dares to threaten me in Celestial River.”

“Therefore, your death will be brutal and painful.” Tu Jiu said while gesticulating, his smile looking ice-cold and cruel.

“Arrrghhh!” Roared Tu Jiu, sounding like a ferocious beast. Immediately after, his body transformed into a black shadow and vanished.

His right hand had transformed into a claw and he started to

balance on a single foot. Tu Jiu's claws started moving towards Lin Feng, emitting a white light which filled the atmosphere. That horrible beast like claw was going to skewer Lin Feng.

This claw was extremely fast as it rushed towards Lin Feng. It could easily skewer people's flesh and muscles. Coming into contact with it would leave deep wounds on one's body.

Lin Feng was going to die for having offended Tu Jiu, that was inevitable.

The crowd was silent.

Lin Feng noticed that this swift and fierce claw was moving towards him. He was a bit surprised, he had the feeling that, what he was facing at that moment was a ferocious beast, an eagle type beast.

Surplus souls appeared in the atmosphere, they all had looked like smaller versions of Lin Feng's soul and they copied his movements. At the same time, these dark souls all slowly raised their finger and thrust towards the claw as a power emerged from these souls. Lin Feng was not dodging, on the contrary, he was attacking with a single finger.

"Clliiing!" A subtle metallic sound spread in the atmosphere. When the claw collided with Lin Feng's attack, they were both forced back a few steps.

Tu Jiu's hand was still in the form of eagle claw, but in the middle of his palm, there was a red drop of blood. A moment before, Lin Feng's finger had been perfectly accurate. Besides, it had also managed to pierce through as if it had been a sword.

Lin Feng had a mark on his hand. Even though Tu Jiu's claw had not touched him, the power of the claw had left a mark on his hand. Besides, his fingers were feeling numb as well. Tu Jiu's claw was extremely sharp and he was much stronger than Lin Feng assumed.

"You're good, but as before you will die." Tu Jiu said with an evil smile. Something strange was happening, a light flashed around his body and at that moment, it seemed like he turned into a hideous eagle with extremely sharp claws. The sight was shocking to watch.

"Eee, eeeee..." Tu Jiu was emitting some piercing cries. He started moving through the air, many shadow appearing, they all belonged to Tu Jiu. An incredible white light invaded the atmosphere. It seemed like multiple of Tu Jiu shadows were moving towards Lin Feng with their claws, aiming to kill. The entire atmosphere was filled with his shadows. It was difficult to distinguish if they were real or fake.

The white light flashed in front of Lin Feng's eyes, he slightly inclined his body to one side and the white light hurtled by him at incredible speed, not hurting him at all.

But immediately after, the endless and evil white light grew even brighter as the attacks continued. Lin Feng's silhouette slightly

flickered. Each of his steps were perfect, soft and agile. That way, he was able to avoid the attacks which were supposed to be deadly.

At that moment, Lin Feng looked elegant, agile and skillful. He was in the middle of an endless flurry of claw strikes, shuttling back and forth. He was dodging these strikes with extreme skill.

“Ahhhh!” A sharp sound spread in the atmosphere. The myriad of white lights merged together and transformed into a pair of gigantic claws. It really seemed like it belonged to a gigantic and monstrously strong ferocious beast. It seemed like these gigantic claws were over a metre in size. Lin Feng was directly under one of these claws and had nowhere to go, he could not escape.

“It’s almost the end. Lin Feng is going to die.” People in the crowd were looking at Tu Jiu. He really looked like an evil beast. Lin Feng was a prisoner under these claws. He was going to be ripped into pieces.

Lan Jiao’s mouth was wide open, her face was deathly pale. Lin Feng was really going to die.

Lin Feng’s silhouette was completely enveloped by the claws. He was looking at Tu Jiu, who looked like an evil eagle, and coldly smiled.

An incredible purple energy burst forth. It looked like a huge purple lake. Then, countless purple tentacles appeared and rushed through the air towards the claws. Entangling them and restricted them. Immediately after, the claws were completely drowned in

the purple spirit.

At that moment, the claws were still descending towards Lin Feng, however, Lin Feng's purple lake was blocking the trajectory of the claws. The claws had been completely covered by the purple lake.

“Ahhhhhhh.....” A horrible shriek filled the air. The claws disappeared. Tu Jiu raised his hand, his cruel-looking face was deathly pale. At that moment, there was flesh bubbling and melting on his hand. His skin had been peeled off and his flesh had started to melt. The bones and muscles on his hand were now visible. It looked extremely painful.

A moment before, the purple lake had melted part of his hand.

At that moment, behind Lin Feng's back, there was the purple lake which was now emitting some bubbling sounds. Besides, there was a purple tentacle weaving through the air like a snake. People were shivering at the sight.

Tu Jiu was at the peak of the Ling Qi layer? No cultivator of the Ling Qi layer could defeat him?

“How amazing!” Thought the people in the crowd at that moment when they saw Lin Feng. That purple lake was monstrously strong. The evil eagle's claws had melted and Tu Jiu had been injured.

Lan Jiao was also looking at Lin Feng. She was blinking her beautiful eyes. Could it be that she had been too worried about Lin Feng?

“I want you to die!” Shouted Tu Jiu sounding glum while staring at Lin Feng.

“I gave you two choices, to get the hell out of my sight or to die, you didn’t leave so you will die.” Lin Feng said sounding ice-cold, his face filled with killing intent. At that moment, he was calm, his heart was filled with pride and determination.

“I will die?” Tu Jiu said while smiling coldly. “I know everything there is to know about the Ling Qi layer, I seldom have opponents. Apart from relying on my spirit and my claws, I can also rely on something much stronger, I am able to use pure Qi. I am a hair away from the Xuan Qi layer and can condense pure Qi. We will see how you intend to block my next attack.

An incredible light started to gather around Tu Jiu’s body. A ball of light appearing in his hand, it looked like it was a ball of pure lightening, some thunderous booms spread in the atmosphere. The ball was filled with deadly Qi.

“There isn’t only pure deadly Qi there is also some pure lightning Qi.”

When the crowd saw that move, they were stupefied. Tu Jiu was using his best move against Lin Feng. No cultivator of the Ling Qi layer could resist an attack from pure Qi.



Lin Feng was very strong and had high talent, but under the power of a pure Qi attack, which was generally used by cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, he would be exterminated.

What a pity! He was such a genius and he was going to die so tragically.

But Lin Feng was, as before, not worried. He was calm and was looking at Tu Jiu, he then slowly said: “You’re always the one who attacks everyone first, shouldn’t we take turns? Now, it should be my turn.”

“Huh?” The crowd was stupefied. Take turns? The opponent already had a ball of pure lightning Qi in his hand but Lin Feng wanted to take turns?

Immediately after, they saw Lin Feng had started walking. In a flash, an incredible battle energy spread across the sky and consumed the atmosphere. It was burning and whirling around Lin Feng’s body

In the battle energy, there was something sharp. It was sword energy.

Lin Feng slowly raised his hand. A whistling sound emerged in the atmosphere. An insanely strong white hurricane of energy appeared. That white hurricane progressively transformed into an extremely sharp sword. It was filled with brutally strong and piercing Qi.

The light emitted by that sword was dazzling to the eyes making everyone who saw it close their eyes for a moment.

“A sword made of pure Qi!” The crowd was astonished. Their hearts were pounding. That white sword was illuminating the entire area and it was made out of condensed pure Qi.

Tu Jiu had created a ball of lightning using pure Qi and Lin Feng created a sword.

Attacks using pure Qi were mysterious and hard to grasp, but Lin Feng had never given up and practiced with tenacity until he could master condensing of pure Qi to a perfect state. He had managed to reach perfection and was thus able to create a sword from condensed pure Qi.

“What a terrifying guy!” The crowd was dumbstruck. Both of the fighters were using pure Qi to fight. One was a ball of terrifying lightning while the other was a dazzling sword.

Who was going to win that battle?!

“Our world is extremely vast, who can say that they are invincible? Especially when you are so young and have only broken through to the Ling Qi layer. Not only are you shameless but you are also ignorant. Being such a fool... So pitiful, so sad.”

Lin Feng was staring at Tu Jiu and continued, sounding cold and

detached: “The pure Qi that you’re using to create your lightning is condensed from the Qi of the natural world, however, the pure Qi of my sword, I condensed it myself. I’ve been slowly condensing it step by step until I could slowly forge a sword of pure Qi. I will show you how pitiful you are for thinking that no cultivator of the Ling Qi layer was worth your time.”

Lin Feng’s words pierced through Tu Jiu’s arrogance and raised doubts in his heart. He was starting to doubt his own abilities.

Besides, Lin Feng’s battle energy had invaded the atmosphere as well, it was in a constant battle with the energy in the atmosphere, his sword seemed like it would cut down anything in its way.

Lin Feng took a step and suddenly disappeared. Immediately after, a sword made of pure Qi appeared before Tu Jiu and descended from the sky, cutting through anything in its path!

## Chapter 283: Kill me and see!

---

The incredible sword illuminated the entire atmosphere, it contained an endless quantity of pure sword Qi, deadly Qi and even some battle energy was surrounding it.

That sword was an incredibly deadly weapon, its power was monstrous.

Tu Jiu was gasping with astonishment. His ball of pure lightning Qi was bombarding the atmosphere and moving towards Lin Feng's sword. Crackling sounds were followed by loud roars of thunder. The lightning were colliding with the sword made of pure Qi.

But the ball of lightning made from pure Qi was unable to block the incoming sword attack. Lin Feng's sword was descending from the sky and piercing towards its target. A cracking sound emerged in the air, the lightning made from pure Qi was pierced. The insanely brutal pure Qi dispersed in all directions creating a shockwave of pure Qi.

"I don't want the beast essence fire anymore!" Shouted Tu Jiu. He was unable to block the sword made from pure Qi. If Lin Feng didn't stop his attack, he would really be able to kill Tu Jiu so Tu Jiu had to find a way out.

"He's giving up, Tu Jiu is giving up."

The crowd was astonished. The strong and powerful Tu Jiu, who

was extremely aggressive, had come to find Lin Feng because he wanted to steal the beast essence fire. Everybody had thought that Lin Feng, even if he didn't die, would, at least, lose the essence fire.

When they had heard Lin Feng refuse Tu Jiu, they had been convinced that he would die.

But the astonishing result was that Tu Jiu, who couldn't be defeated by any other cultivator of the Ling Qi layer, couldn't rival Lin Feng's power. Lin Feng had defeated him using his pure Qi sword. At that moment, Tu Jiu, who was at the peak of the Ling Qi layer had given up. He wasn't fighting anymore and decided that he no longer needed any of Lin Feng's items.

"Hmm, what to do?" Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. Tu Jiu thought that things were really that easy, if he wanted to fight, then he'd fight. He wanted to kill Lin Feng and take the beast essence fire but because he couldn't defeat Lin Feng, he thought that everything would be solved if he just gave up on wanting to steal from Lin Feng.

How could it be that easy? Would he accept if someone did that to him?

Lin Feng had told him to choose, leave or die.

"I am from the Condor Castle of Celestial River, would you dare to kill me and see what happens?" Said Tu Jiu when he saw that Lin Feng's sword was still falling from the sky. The sword was slowly piercing through the pure Qi and was growing faster and

faster. His facial expression had changed drastically.

Tu Jiu dared act aggressively and arrogantly in Celestial River because he was incredibly strong but also because he came from the Condor Castle which had a certain power in Celestial River.

The Condor Castle was a corrupt organization, people who dared offend them were all mercilessly killed. The Condor Castle organization was based within Celestial River territory. They offended many minor people with minor influences in Celestial River but they were unable to react unless they had enough backing.

The crowd was also dumbstruck. Was he going to kill Tu Jiu? They had never thought about such a possibility until that moment.

Even though the Hao Yue Sect was not far from Celestial River, in Celestial River, people of the Hao Yue Sect, and even of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, didn't dare offend the people of Condor Castle. The Condor Castle Organization had deep roots in Celestial River, it had existed for countless years and they were truly ruthless. In order to dismantle it, you would need to remove it from the roots, which was almost impossible, so it was best not to anger them.

“Since you wanted to kill me, you should have thought that I might kill you too.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold. The crowd were astonished. The sword made from pure Qi pierced through the last remaining bit of pure lightning Qi. It then moved directly towards Tu Jiu.

“How dare you....” Shouted a voice which resonated through the entire atmosphere.

Tu Jiu looked at the sword that was piercing towards him from the sky. He looked hopeless and his heart was filled with regret. People of the Condor Castle Organization had gotten used to acting imposing and arrogant in Celestial River. Therefore, he had never thought that he would ever be in such a situation, he had never thought that anyone would dare kill him in Celestial River.

At that moment, he was doomed, everything had happened too quickly.

“Pssh!”

The light from the deadly pure Qi of Lin Feng’s sword was gradually vanishing. Tu Jiu was standing there, motionless. Immediately after, his body slowly collapsed.

Tu Jiu’s eyes were still open, but between his eyebrows, a sword had pierced his skull and a thread of blood was flowing.

He was dead!

Tu Jiu of the Condor Castle Organization had died. He was at the peak of the Ling Qi layer and had killed by Lin Feng in one sword strike. He hadn’t even been able to touch Lin Feng even though he had the power to use pure Qi which was the power of the Xuan Qi

Layer.

The result exceeded all expectations, it was astonishing, many people were still excited.

Lan Jiao, who was behind Lin Feng, was dumbstruck as well. A moment after, she took a deep breath and looked at the back of the domineering young man. Her beautiful eyes were filled with surprise.

What a unwavering and determined young man.

He wanted to kill Lin Feng so Lin Feng had killed him. Lin Feng didn't care about his status.

Lan Jiao frowned and started walking. She arrived at Lin Feng's side and said: "Lin Feng, you should leave as soon as possible, hurry and leave!"

"Leave?"

Lin Feng looked at Lan Jiao, shook his head and said: "Why would I leave?"

"You will get killed!" Said Lan Jiao. "Tu Jiu was a member of the Condor Castle Organization. Besides, he had a very high status. You killed him so the members of the Condor Castle Organization will not let you off. They will quickly come for you."



“The Condor Castle Organization?” Lin Feng frowned. He had an appointment with Mister Huo in the restaurant, he couldn’t leave.

“I am not leaving.” Said Lin Feng sounding indifferent. Lan Jiao was stupefied and insulting Lin Feng in her thoughts. That guy took too many risks for nothing.

“Lin Feng, you just want to die!” Said Lan Jiao furiously.

Lin Feng was surprised, he looked at Lan Jiao and immediately said: “why are you so worried about me?”

Lan Jiao was stupefied. Indeed, what was wrong with her? Why was she worried about that bastard? She was supposed to hate Lin Feng. She initially wanted him to die, why was she helping him?

“I’m worried about you but you’re right, if you want to die, it’s none of my goddamn business.” Cursed Lan Jiao. She seemed to be revealing her true nature which was completely different from the other night.

Lin Feng looked at Lan Jiao who was leaving furiously. He started walking and went into the Celestial Mountain Restaurant.

People in the crowd were shaking their heads, a beautiful woman was warning him but he couldn’t differentiate good from bad. It seemed like this time, he was definitely going to die.

The Condor Castle Organization was dangerous, they had a lot of influence in Celestial River. Besides, they were comprised of thousands of people and except for the younger generations, they had all broken through to the Ling Qi layer. There were almost no weak cultivators. Besides, the three leaders of the organization had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer. They were extremely powerful, especially the main leader, he had already broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer, his power was monstrous to the extent that people who dared provoke him were extremely rare.

Even though Lin Feng was very strong and had high natural talent, provoking the Condor Castle Organization was no better than courting death.

The crowd in the distance hadn't left yet. The news that Tu Jiu had died would spread quickly and they wanted to see what would happen now that Lin Feng had decided to not leave.

Just as the crowd had predicted, not such a long time after, rumbling noises emerged in the distance and the ground was shaking from the horses in the distance, it sounded like a small army of horses galloping.

“They arrived!” People's hearts were pounding. The people of the Condor Castle Organization had arrived very quickly.

“Lin Feng will die!” When the crowd heard the rumbling noises, they understood that it was the Condor Castle Organization who had come to get their revenge. The Condor Castle Organization would definitely kill Lin Feng.

A moment later, a group of cavalry on black horses were galloping towards them. They all looked evil and aggressive. The people of the Condor Castle Organization were all the most evil and ruthless cultivators. They had so much blood on their hands, the numbers of people they had killed in cold blood would never wash away.

They were like Tu Jiu, if they saw someone who had something that they wanted, if the person didn't hand it over, they killed them. They were extremely evil and aggressive. They had no principles and no moral values at all.

Many people were rushing out from the Celestial Mountain Restaurant. They had heard that the Condor Castle Organization had come to avenge Tu Jiu's death. They would of course hide in the distance to avoid any unfortunate incident.

A short time after, the Celestial Mountain Restaurant had turned completely silent. Besides, in the distance, over a hundred cavalry on their armored-horses had almost arrived. When they saw Tu Jiu's corpse lying on the road, the leader's facial expression became ice-cold and his eyes, which looked like those of an eagle, looked extremely sharp.

That person was Tu Jiu's uncle, once of the vice leaders of the Condor Castle Organization.

"Get out here, you will die!" Said the vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization. They all galloped towards the Celestial

Mountain Restaurant and immediately started destroying everything in their path.

“How strong and powerful!”

The crowd was astonished. In the distance, a thick bronze sign exploded. The leader of the Condor Castle Organization had shouted and his voice contained powerful pure Qi.

Inside the Celestial Mountain Restaurant, the atmosphere was absolutely silent, there wasn't a single noise.

The crowd was silently observing the scene. The people of the Condor Castle Organization had stopped outside restaurant, waiting for Lin Feng and Lin Feng was obviously not going to come out, otherwise he would die, what they were asking was obviously impossible!

# Chapter 284: The Massacre

---

“Surround it.” Said the vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization. In a flash, the horses encircled the Celestial Mountain Restaurant. The vice leader was in the distance and was staring at the restaurant with murder in his face.

“Go inside and capture him, I want him alive.” Said the vice leader.

“Roger!” Said some cavalry in unison. They immediately passed through the entrance of the restaurant. Immediately after, the few cavalry arrived in the middle of the restaurant.

However, immediately after having entering the restaurant, an incredibly heavy energy spread through the atmosphere which made their heartbeats accelerate.

A blade like wind suddenly appeared, it was surrounded by an incredible energy.

Horrible shrieks spread through the atmosphere. The few silhouettes at the back of the group were blown out of the restaurant. At the front of the group, some people wanted to leave but were blocked by the people behind, it was too chaotic, they were panicking, and suddenly, blood splashed everywhere.

Explosive sounds were unceasingly spreading through the atmosphere. Many people were collapsing onto the ground, including the first to enter the restaurant. They were dead!

That move astonished the crowd. Lin Feng had forced them enter the restaurant and when they did, he killed them.

The people of the Condor Castle Organization didn't dare enter the restaurant anymore. Instead, they were irresolutely pacing back and forth in front of the entrance door of the restaurant.

The people inside were clearly dangerous.

If he had killed Tu Jiu, that definitely meant that he wasn't weak. If he was alone, only the vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization could defeat him.

“Get in formation and go inside to capture him, don't move back!” Said the vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization coldly when he saw that his group was completely chaotic. Weren't they able to capture a single person with so many of them?

The members of the Condor Castle Organization were stupefied. They looked fierce and tough, immediately after, they came back in formation and started galloping towards the inside of the restaurant, at the same time, rumbling noises spread in the atmosphere.

There was no blade light and nobody had shown themselves, the entire unit of cavalry charged into the restaurant like a stampede.

The vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization smiled coldly.

Those who dared kill the people of the Condor Castle Organization had to die!

“Ahhhhhhh.....” A horrible shriek spread in the air which made the vice leader’s smile become rigid. At the same time, people outside were also astonished.

A purple light burst forth from the restaurant, there was a bubbling and foaming sound. The light was getting more and more intense.

The crowd could see a purple light coming from the inside of the restaurant. All the cavalry who had entered the restaurant were drowned in the purple spirit of Lin Feng.

“Arghhh....” A gigantic purple spirit appeared in the restaurant. All the cavalry of the Condor Castle Organization had been swallowed by it. The purple lake that the crowd could see from outside looked like the gigantic mouth of a ferocious beast.

When the purple lake started to slowly disperse, the crowd looked at the restaurant, there was no longer any sounds of movement.

All those who had entered the restaurant had died!

Not a single person had survived.

“It seems that killing Lin Feng isn’t so easy either.” Thought

people in the crowd. A moment before, dozens of cavalry had entered the restaurant and had died in a flash, the vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization wasn't attacking. He was afraid, Lin Feng was killing everyone who entered the restaurant.

Of course, there was another possibility which was to destroy the restaurant but if they did, Lin Feng would be covered by the dust and would have a chance to escape.

At that moment, Lin Feng appeared at the door of the restaurant. He glanced at the crowd, he looked frivolous and aggressive.

"If anyone enters the restaurant, I will kill them." Said Lin Feng coldly. Many people remained silent. If they entered the restaurant, Lin Feng would kill them.

Lin Feng wasn't a saint.

"You want to die." Said the vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization. A sharp sound emerged in the atmosphere, he jumped up into the air and he immediately threw himself at the restaurant with incredible speed. He was bursting through the atmosphere at an amazing speed.

Lin Feng was smiling coldly. When he saw the vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization, his silhouette flickered, he went back into the restaurant and an incredible quantity of purple liquid appeared.



“Die!” In a flash, the vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization rushed inside the restaurant. His loud shout resonated through the atmosphere. Three balls of pure Qi appeared in the atmosphere and moved in the three directions, where Lin Feng, Meng Qing and Ba Dao were.

“Kacha!” The purple light filled the atmosphere and expanded into every direction. At the same time, a brilliant sword appeared and stopped the pure Qi which was approaching.

“Hmph!”

The vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization groaned. He released even more pure Qi, a dazzling light appeared around his body and he raised his hands. At the same time, the purple liquid was covering his whole body, unable to make his body melt. The vice leader’s claw like hands were moving towards Lin Feng at full speed.

But at that moment, the vice leader’s heart started to pound. An extremely brutal and cold energy penetrated into his chest, as if it wanted to freeze his inner organs.

He abruptly turned and was afraid because he noticed an extremely cold presence. His facial expression drastically changed, his body was shaking, he wanted to leave but it was already too late. Coldness had already invaded his body.

“Kacha!”

The endless ice energy and the pure Qi collided. At that moment, the pure Qi was frozen in place. At the same time, some bubbling sounds could be heard. The terrifying purple lake surrounded the vice leader's body. An extremely brutal and violent purple energy started to corrode his body, his facial expression drastically changed.

“Crack!””

Ice Qi crashed down from the sky. The vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization tried to struggle but the purple lake transformed into a huge dragon which tightly held him in place.

“Kacha!”

The ice was falling through the atmosphere. It then reached the vice leader's hand, freezing it. Besides that, the ice started to spread all over his body. He looked hopeless and his body was covered by a layer of ice.

“Arghh!”

The vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization gave a horrible shriek when the ice enveloped his body. But it was of no use, he was surrounded by the purple lake. He had no strength to escape, besides he was freezing and being corroded, death was one step away.

The vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization had broken

through to the Xuan Qi layer but at that moment, his body was melting and freezing at the same time, he was just waiting to die. That was terrifying. His body started shaking insanely, he didn't want to die.

He had come to avenge Tu Jiu, he wanted to kill Lin Feng but he never thought that he would be killed.

Cracking noises spread in the atmosphere. The ice kept invading his body at incredible speed and finally, he was completely frozen.

Outside, the crowd was fixedly staring at the Celestial Mountain Restaurant. Even though the door of the restaurant was already damaged, it could, as before, prevent the crowd from seeing inside.

What was happening inside? A moment before, the vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization had entered, had he killed Lin Feng and his friends?

“BOOM!”

An explosive sound burst forth. The restaurant of the door was crushed into pieces. A silhouette was blown out of the restaurant.

The silhouette fell down onto the ground before the crowd. That person was dead. When the crowd saw that silhouette, they were wondering who it was. They were absolutely dumbstruck.

That silhouette was the vice leader of the Condor Castle

Organization, a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer!

The vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization had died!

He had entered the restaurant a short time before and his corpse had already been sent back out.

An incredible quantity of cold energy moved towards the remaining members of the Condor Castle Organization. The vice leader, just like the others a moment ago, had entered the restaurant and died. The door of the restaurant was a free path to hell.

A silhouette moved out of the restaurant. That person looked handsome but infinite coldness and killing intent were also present in their eyes.

If that person wanted to kill, they killed.

A purple illusion appeared in front of Lin Feng. It was a huge purple dragon. Lin Feng's silhouette flickered and he jumped into the air. Purple energy emerged from his hand and blocked two silhouettes that were escaping on their horses. A sword light fell from the sky like a meteor, these two silhouettes were immediately blown into the air from the impact and died before hitting the ground.

Behind Lin Feng's back, a pure and holy white silhouette appeared. They looked like gods. Many people of the Condor Castle

Organization had all been frozen and had died, their horses were not even spared.

Besides, at that moment, a silhouette as sharp as a blade appeared and emitted a resplendent light, any person who found themselves under that blade would die.

Three people had massacred all the members from Condor Castle that had come to the restaurant. There was nobody left. They had no chance to fight back against such overwhelming power. They had all died miserably.

## Chapter 285: Encircled!

---

The black horses were going insane, galloping around and neighing. Lin Feng and his two friends were way too strong, each of them were monstrously strong. Each time they attacked, someone would die.

That amazing woman was particularly strong, if anyone got too close to her, they got the impression that they were going to freeze on the spot. She was clearly a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer.

That man wearing a bronze mask was the weakest of the three of them, but he had still broken through to the seventh Ling Qi layer. Besides, he could control a shocking amount of blade force. Lin Feng was usually relaxed, carefree and enigmatic, but in any case, he was monstrously strong.

Very quickly, outside of the Celestial Mountain Restaurant, a mountain of corpses appeared. Apart from a few people who managed to escape early, the others were all dead, just like Tu Jiu. They had come in an imposing and domineering fashion, but this would be their final resting place. Including the vice leader of the Condor Castle Organization, who was a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer.

“How powerful.” Thought the crowd when they saw Lin Feng. They could barely believe their eyes, they did not think that Lin Feng and his friends would be that strong, killing each and every single person who dared to enter the restaurant.

No wonder he was in no rush to run away! He already had such terrifying strength, which is why he wasn't afraid of any opponents coming to fight him.

Lan Jiao's eyes were flashing, she looked at Meng Qing. What a pure and holy looking woman. She looked so lithe and graceful. She was a rare beauty. Her heart was beating slightly faster when looking at Meng Qing, she wanted to see her face.

"No wonder that....." Her lips vibrated. As if she was thwarted in love, Lan Jiao's heart was filled with hidden bitterness. No wonder she did not manage to seduce Lin Feng, he already had such a beautiful woman at his side.

Lin Feng stopped looking at the corpses and immediately went back into the restaurant. Meng Qing and Ba Dao followed him closely. The three silhouettes once more disappeared from the crowd's sight.

The crowd looked at the restaurant, they had already killed so many people from the Condor Castle Organization, including their vice leader. The next people sent from Condor Castle would definitely be even more brutal.

"What an irresponsible guy, you think that you can rely on the strength of three people to defeat the Condor Castle Organization?"

Lan Jiao was cursing at Lin Feng in her heart. Lin Feng surprisingly didn't intend to leave. It seemed like he wanted to

annihilate the entire Condor Castle Organization, and if he didn't, then he would regret it.

Lin Feng was sitting inside the restaurant, his eyes closed as he calmly breathed in and out. He was in fusion with the earth. His heart was in fusion with his body and thus, his heart was also in fusion with the earth itself. Lin Feng, no matter where he was or what the circumstance, could always enter a ideal mental state for cultivation.

He was surrounded by pure Qi light. A vast quantity of pure Qi was unceasingly moving towards Lin Feng's body. At the same time, Lin Feng entered into an ideal state of meditation, emptying his heart and mind. His body was recovering and regaining the vitality which his soul had consumed.

Lin Feng could use pure Qi, it didn't have too much effect on him but, when he used the strength of his soul he had to recover quickly because without it, it would impact his fighting ability.

When Lin Feng used his purple energy to attack, or made a gigantic dragon appear, he also had to use the strength of his soul. If he didn't have a strong soul, the purple spirit wouldn't be able to leave his body to attack. The stronger his soul was, the farther he could attack using his purple energy.

While Lin Feng and his friends were recovering inside of the restaurant, the crowd outside still had not left. They were still looking at the restaurant, waiting for some other people from the Condor Castle Organization to come. They wanted to see how this entire story would end.



After a while, rumbling noises spread through the atmosphere. The ground started shaking again. That time, the ground was shaking even more intensely than last time. The noises were so loud that the people in the crowd had the impression that they were going to become deaf.

Very quickly, a gigantic army of black armored-horses appeared, it seemed like there were more than a thousand of them. People's hearts started pounding.

Tu Jiu, who was at the peak of the Ling Qi layer, and the vice leader in the Xuan Qi Layer, had both been killed. A hundred other members of the organization had been killed as well. That made all the other members of the Condor Castle Organization furious. The whole nest had come out to attack.

"They are here!" The crowd saw the group and moved far away from them. The newcomers were extremely strong. The crowd was too scared to be too close, attacks might hit them if they were.

The one leading them was a bald man. He looked tall and sturdy, with a huge scar on his face. He looked monstrous and hideous. A single glance was sufficed to see that he was anything but a saint.

The bald man was carrying a broadsword on his shoulder. A deadly Qi emerging from his body. He had an impressive bearing and a commanding presence. He was one of the vice-leaders of the Condor Castle Organization. The great leader and him were the core of the organization. The great leader was the strongest

cultivator of the Condor Castle Organization, he was mysterious. Very few people had seen him. It was said that a few years ago, he invaded the castle of the organization alone and had made everyone submit to him. He was extremely strong and had broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer. He had replaced the previous leaders and became the great leader of the organization.

The cavalry, on their black horses, were galloping at full speed and they immediately encircled the restaurant. The leader looked at the corpses on the ground and then at the restaurant. His eyes looking bloodthirsty.

“Come out!” Shouted the leader extremely loudly and aggressively. His voice was so imposing that the windows of the restaurant were shaking.

Lin Feng and his friends just ignored him. Why would they willingly come out of the restaurant? That was impossible.

The leader’s facial expression was sharp and ice-cold. Sounding like a demon, he said: “For having killed my people, I will torture you to death. Everybody, stay in position and wait for them to come out, then kill them!”

“Roger!” Shouted the cavalry while releasing some deadly Qi.

The leader didn’t have the same plan as the other leader a moment ago. He didn’t want to enter the restaurant, he wanted to Lin Feng to suffer from fear!

But how hard was it going to be for Lin Feng? In the earth fusion dimension, his heart stayed focused and he just continued practicing cultivation. His heart was like flowing water. The things around him did not affect the earth and therefore they did not affect him, otherwise, why would it be called earth fusion?

The leader jumped off his horse and walked to the other leader's corpse. An evil facial expression appearing on his face.

How cold. The leader's body was frozen and melted. His blood had frozen entirely. His muscles had stopped working.

"What a powerful ice energy." The leader raised his head and looked at the Celestial Mountain Restaurant. He was convinced that the dead leader should have waited for them to arrive before he entered.

Even though that leader looked rude and stupid, people close to them all knew that he was much wiser than the leader who died. His aggressiveness and tyranny intrigued people.

That person was also much more cold-blooded than the previous leader. He had brought a thousand people along. He wasn't willing to take risks. Those who were inside the restaurant had killed the other leader, which meant that they were probably strong enough to kill him as well. He didn't feel like gambling with his life. Even though Lin Feng was surrounded by an army of one thousand men, Lin Feng was too difficult to kill. If the situation was too dangerous, they couldn't afford gambling, they had to be careful and vigilant.

Outside of the Celestial Mountain Restaurant, the atmosphere was absolutely calm, but it seemed like the situation could explode at any moment. The thousand men surrounding the restaurant patiently waiting.

Time passed very slowly. The silence in which the atmosphere was drowned was oppressive but the crowd did not leave. They were standing in the distance, waiting for a battle to start.

However, they had just been waiting for a whole day. The troops of the Condor Castle Organization had been waiting there for a whole day. They had not attacked and besides, the crowd had also been there for a whole day as well, it was as if they weren't tired.

The atmosphere was, as before, extremely calm.

However, at that moment, in the distance, a sound emerged in the atmosphere and the ground slightly shook.

Besides, that sound was becoming louder and louder and the ground was shaking more and more violently.

Horses were coming, even more people were arriving.

The crowd was stupefied. They were looking into the distance and immediately, they saw a group of snow-white horses moving towards them. The cavalry were dressed in white and were releasing some piercingly-cold Qi.

It seemed like ice and snow were appearing on the ground as they passed by.

“The people of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village have come.”

The people in the crowd shrank their eyes and guessed who these people were.

Bing Yuan, the prodigy of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village had been killed, the Ice and Snow Mountain Village was way too strong to ignore such an insult.

“They’re galloping so fast!” The crowd was astonished. This time, Lin Feng was definitely going to die. The people of the Condor Castle Organization and the people of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village both had come, they would definitely manage to kill him.

“Piss off!” Shouted a voice coming from the very front of the cavalry when he saw that in front of him was the bald leader.

The crowd was astonished, the person from the Ice and Snow Mountain Village was so aggressive. He was so strong that, the bald leader of the Condor Castle Organization was not even put in his eyes.

The bald leader looked at him and said: “What is your social status within the sect of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village to talk

to me that way?”

“Bing He Teng.” Said the newcomer sounding indifferent. The crowd frowned. Bing He Teng had personally come, he was a Great Elder of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village.

# Chapter 286: The Sharp Light

---

“Bing He Teng!” The bald leader was a bit surprised as well.

Bing He Teng was an extremely strong cultivator of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. His name was famous in the entire region. He had broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer and was about as strong as the Patriarch of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, Han Xue Tian. This time, he had personally come because of Bing Yuan. Bing Yuan was his direct disciple, he had spent a lot of time making him strong and then someone had killed him, how could Bing He Teng not be furious?

“Great Master Bing, I assumed that we had the same social status. It’s not so good to be that aggressive.” Said the bald leader while narrowing his eyes. Bing He Teng had Immediately told him to piss off making the bald leader lose face.

“It’s not so good? Who gave you the damn permission to talk to me?” Said Bing He Teng whose voice was filled with coldness and eyes with disdain. The people of the Condor Castle Organization are a bunch of dogs and chickens in Bing He Teng’s opinion, nothing more. They were rude and filthy to look at. Even though they had a little bit of influence in Celestial River, Bing He Teng despised them.

“What about me!” Said a voice which sounded evil. Bing He Teng’s pupils shrank. At that moment, an extremely evil energy invaded the atmosphere. People started feeling shivers run down their spines.

In the air, a silhouette was descending from the sky. It was moving extremely quickly. A brutal and evil fist bombarded the atmosphere and was moving straight towards Bing He Teng, it was filled with a dense evil Qi.

“Get lost!” Furiously shouted Bing He Teng. It was snowing, and the snowflakes transformed into ice filled with a deadly Qi which rushed towards the fist.

“BOOM!”

The atmosphere was shaking. The snow was elegantly and gracefully falling down from the sky, fluttering in the wind.

“How cold!”

The crowd, who were in the distance, all started shaking when the coldness penetrated into their bodies. That coldness also contained a monstrously dense evil Qi.

The crowd saw Bing He Teng’s body being projected backwards. On the ground, a long and deep mark followed his trajectory. He was blankly staring at the person in front of him.

That person had long, messy hair fluttering in the wind. From head to foot, that person looked like a n evil spirit, it was surrounded by evil Qi. However, when Bing He Teng saw that person, he had a strange and familiar sensation.



“Leader!”

The members of the Condor Castle Organization were all kneeling down, their eyes were filled with fear.

“He’s the Great Leader of the Condor Castle Organization. As expected, he’s very mysterious.”

When the crowd saw that person, they narrowed their eyes as if they wanted to see more clearly. Bing He Teng was still fixedly staring at him.

“What, you don’t recognize an old friend anymore?” Said the Great Leader sounding evil which made Bing He Teng shiver. His pupils shrank and he said, sounding surprised: “It’s you!”

“Indeed, it’s me. Bing He Teng, you just couldn’t believe it, right?”

“Indeed, I am too surprised, you came to Celestial River and became the great leader of the Condor Castle Organization.” Said Bing He Teng surprised. He recognized that person. In the past, they had already fought, Bing He Teng used to be slightly stronger than his interlocutor but at that moment, they were already of the same level, but the great leader’s attack had been enough to project him backwards.

“That’s life. When my son died, I dedicated my entire life to becoming stronger and became who I am today.” Said the great

leader sounding evil and mysterious.

“Bing He Teng, this time, we’re meeting again but we have one common goal, let’s take care of it first.”

“Alright.” Said Bing He Teng while nodding. That interlocutor had the right to talk to him.

They turned around and looked at the Celestial Mountain Restaurant.

“Bunch of crap, get into the restaurant and tell me what’s going on.” Said the great leader of the Condor Castle Organization, his voice was piercingly-cold. Immediately after, the members of the Condor Castle Organization stood up. The crowd was sighing in amazement.

The great leader of the Condor Castle Organization was extremely imposing, domineering and aggressive, which was why his people feared him so much.

“No need.”

At that moment, a cold and detached voice spread in the air. A silhouette appeared at the entrance of the restaurant, that person was slowly coming out.

On that person’s side, there was a pure and holy silhouette, she looked like a shadow.

The great leader, Bing He Teng as well as Lin Feng and his two other friends all glanced at each other.

They all recognised each other.

“What a surprise, that’s Lin Feng of the Yun Hai Sect.” Said Bing He Teng at that moment. His eyes were filled with murderous intent, he thought: “That boy, he’s a monster. He must die today.”

When the Yun Hai Sect had been destroyed, Bing He Teng had also participated in the massacre. On that day, he had seen how frivolous Lin Feng was, notably on the stage of the Life and Death Arena. At that moment, less than a year later, that frivolous young man had already become so strong that he had been able to kill the best core disciple of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. If he gave more time to Lin Feng, he feared that he wouldn’t be able to keep him under control and he would be a great threat.

At that moment, he had to kill Lin Feng, not only to get his revenge but also to avoid further threats.

On Bing He Teng’s side, the great leader’s face was filled with even more obvious killing intent. He was evilly staring at Lin Feng.

“It’s you!”

“It’s me.” Replied Lin Feng. Lin Feng surprisingly knew the great leader of the Condor Castle Organization, back in the past, he was

also at the Yun Hai Sect. He had an extremely high status within the sect.

“Mo Cang Lan, you look even less human each time I see you, truly monstrous, you look half-dead as if brought back from the brink of death.”

The great leader surprisingly was a traitor of the Yun Hai Sect. It was the one in charge of enforcing the ruled of the Yun Hai Sect, the Great Elder Mo Cang Lan. He had tried to help his son Mo Xie kill Lin Feng a few times.

On the day when the Yun Hai Sect was destroyed, Mo Cang Lan had cut off Nan Gong Ling's fingers.

“Half-dead?” Mo Cang Lan smiled as if it was a joke and said: “It looks like it but this is only a human body. Besides, what is the point in looking good? Strength is the most important thing. For example you, you are so young but today, you will die because I have the strength to kill you, and that girl on your side too, what a pity, such a beautiful body and she will have to die with you.”

Lin Feng's facial expression became ice-cold when he saw Mo Cang Lan's evil expression. That guy had probably been learning evil skills to look the way he did at that moment. His body looked like it was decomposing even though he was alive, he looked like a horrible and evil monster.

The crowd was thinking the same way though. Indeed, in the continent, only strength mattered. For example, Lin Feng's life, at

that moment, was in danger and it did not matter if he was handsome. It would be difficult for him to escape against strength.

“That bastard.” Thought Lan Jiao. This was a dead-end for Lin Feng, he wouldn’t be able to escape. He let himself fall into this trap.

The vice-leader of the Condor Castle Organization, Mo Cang Lan and Bing He Teng had all broken through to the Xuan Qi layer. Lin Feng couldn’t escape.

“Lin Feng, how do you want to die?” Said Mo Cang Lan while evilly staring at Li Feng. Back in the past, his son Mo Xie had been killed by Protector Kong because of Lin Feng. At that moment, he finally had an opportunity to avenge his dead son and kill Lin Feng.

When Meng Qing heard that Mo Cang Lan wanted to kill Lin Feng, she took a big step forwards and immediately released some ice energy which froze the ground. Her ice energy was extremely sharp and covered the earth and even froze the air.

The ice Qi which Meng Qing was releasing wasn’t weaker than that of Bing He Teng’s at all. Her ice Qi was piercing to the bones.

“That is the strength of the second Xuan Qi layer.”

Mo Cang Lan and Bing He Teng were stupefied. That girl had the strength of the second Xuan Qi layer. Besides, her ice Qi was

stronger, colder and more violent than ordinary ice Qi. No wonder that she had managed to kill the other vice-leader.

“Not bad but unfortunately, even if you manage to block one of us, will the result not be the same, death?” Said Mo Cang Lan evilly.

“I, old as I am, haven’t exercised in a while, I’d be happy to join the fun.”

At that moment, a silhouette appeared. It was an old man. He was coming towards them.

“Mister Huo!” Lin Feng was stupefied. It was Mister Huo who had been so friendly to Lin Feng but it seemed like he had come one day too early.

“Hello.” Said Mister Huo while slightly nodding at Lin Feng. He walked towards Lin Feng while releasing an insanely scorching-hot fire Qi, the exact opposite of Meng Qing’s ice.

“Third Xuan Qi layer!”

The crowd was astonished. Surprisingly, there was another extremely strong cultivator who wanted to help Lin Feng.

“Mister Huo, thank you!” Said Lin Feng to the old man who was by his side.

Mister Huo smiled and said: “You still have some things to exchange with me, how could I let those things end up in their hands?”

Lin Feng slightly nodded and said: “Mister Huo, after we solve that problem, I will express my gratitude to you properly.”

“You are still a young man, so full of confidence.” Said Mister Huo while smiling and shaking his head. They had three cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer in front of them. The old man wasn’t scared for himself, he wouldn’t die, he was strong enough to escape but he wanted to protect Lin Feng.

The Spirit Blood Pills were really amazing.

“Another one who has come to die!” Said Bing He Teng coldly. He looked at Lin Feng and said: “You are really naive. Do you think that these two can protect you? We have one more cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer, how will you block him?”

“Xuan Qi layer?” said Lin Feng and glanced at the bald vice-leader of the Condor Castle Organization. He then immediately asked Meng Qing: “Will you be alright?”

“I can prevent him from approaching.” Said Meng Qing while staring at Bing He Teng.

“Alright.” Said Lin Feng while nodding. “Mister Huo, can you

take care of that hideous monster, sorry for putting you in trouble!”

“I haven’t exercised for a long time but that hideous creature shouldn’t be a problem.” Replied the old man. “The problem is that there is another person, how do you intend to deal with him?”

“There’s another one? Well, I’m in need of a warm up, I will help myself!” Said Lin Feng indifferently. At that moment, a sharp light appeared and invaded the atmosphere.



# Chapter 287: Fury!

---

“I’ll help myself!”

Lin Feng’s loud and imposing voice resonated in the atmosphere. People’s expression became rigid when they heard him.

Help himself? Lin Feng, relying on his strength of the Ling Qi layer intended to fight against a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer?

Was that even possible?

However, at that moment, Lin Feng’s eyes looked sharp, he looked extremely frivolous and it didn’t seem like he was joking. He would have never joked about such things anyway.

Meng Qing and Mister Huo wanted to fight against Bing He Teng and Mo Cang Lan. The bald leader was left and someone had to fight against him. Lin Feng had no choice but to fight against him.

No matter if he wanted to fight or not, he had to.

“He’s going to fight against someone of the Xuan Qi layer!” Whispered the crowd. They looked impatient. They were wondering who would win, Lin Feng or the cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer.

But they of course, thought that the bald leader would win. They

just thought that Lin Feng had no choice but to fight, that he was forcing himself to be brave, that's all.

Lin Feng was a genius and had high natural talent, but how could he compete with a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer. Lin Feng had absolutely no chance of victory. However, the two other battles were going to be worth watching.

When the bald leader heard Lin Feng's words, a cold and evil expression appeared in his eyes, Lin Feng was going to help himself? Lin Feng was humiliating him, a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer surprisingly dared to fight against him.

"How long will you need to kill him?" Said Mo Cang Lan coldly while looking at the bald leader. In Mo Cang Lan's opinion, Lin Feng would never be able to defeat the bald leader, Lin Feng just wanted to rush to his own death, that's all.

A light flashed in the bald leader's eyes and he immediately said: "If nobody else interrupts, I will definitely kill him within ten moves."

By saying ten moves, he was taking precautions in case anything went wrong, but he would normally need much less. How could he not win against a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer?

"Alright, let's see if you kill him in ten moves, hmph...."

Mo Cang Lan coldly groaned which made the bald leader's

heartbeat accelerate. His face was filled with murderous intentions, he had to kill Lin Feng in ten moves, otherwise, Mo Cang Lan would be furious and it would be bad for him.

Mo Cang Lan was really frightening. A year before, Mo Cang Lan had conquered the Condor Castle Organization by himself. He would never forget that terrifying event.

An insanely brutal and sharp Qi filled the atmosphere while emitting whistling sounds. Behind the bald leader's body appeared an illusionary spirit.

The illusion was a beast, more precisely an eagle. Its two piercingly-cold eyes were staring at Lin Feng.

“Within ten moves, I will definitely kill him.” said the bald leader coldly. In order to ensure his victory, he immediately released his spirit. He was definitely going to kill Lin Feng.

Mo Cang Lan laughed and took a step forwards and released an incredible Qi which immediately enveloped Mister Huo's body. Mister Huo was fixedly staring at him, unable to react.

At the same time, Bing He Teng also released some ice Qi. Ice and frost appeared in the atmosphere and covered a huge area. The ambient temperature immediately fell. It was incredibly cold.

These two people were blocking Meng Qing and Mister Huo, the crowd would be able to witness Lin Feng's death.

Within ten moves, Lin Feng would die.

“Ten moves!” Said Lin Feng whose eyes didn’t look sharp anymore. Instead, he looked calm. He was in fusion with the earth, nothing could affect his state of mind. Every single thing that was surrounding him was perfectly clear and distinct in his mind. Everything belonged to his world and he was in fusion with everything around him.

“Boom!”

The bald leader stamped onto the ground and a crack appeared in the ground. He jumped up in the air and raised a monstrous blade.

The sound of an eagle spread through the air and bald leader’s body suddenly started to swoop down. His silhouette turned into a bright light rushed towards Lin Feng. While the he soared through the sky, he had almost reach Lin Feng, but Lin Feng wasn’t reacting.

“How sinister, what a devious trick!”

The crowd was astonished. The bald leader’s previous move had led everybody to think that he was going to focus on the power of his attack to win but instead he adjusted his body and swooped down with incredible speed. He hadn’t waited for his power to reach its maximum. Instead, he was swooping from the sky, not giving Lin Feng the time to react, that way he would be able to kill Lin Feng in one hit.

However, to Lin Feng who was in fusion with the earth, that seemed like a joke.

If it had indeed, been extremely quick then it might have worked, but his speed wouldn't be close to enough. In Lin Feng's mind, the bald leader's actions were almost in slow motion and he saw every movement clearly.

The bald leader's body released a soft light as it soared on the wind. A huge rumbling sound spread in the atmosphere. The broadsword in the bald leader's hand shot down from the sky at a terrifying speed and slammed into the ground, creating a huge crevice beneath it. However, Lin Feng was no longer there and had already moved away, looking at the scene indifferently.

"One move." Said Lin Feng indifferently. The crowd was stupefied. Lin Feng was counting the moves.

The bald leader was stupefied. He raised his head and coldly looked at Lin Feng. Lin Feng had reacted very quickly, he was very fast.

The bald leader jumped through the air like an eagle. His broadsword moved straight towards Lin Feng. The light emitted by the blade was swift and filled with pure Qi.

"Two moves."

“Three moves.”

“Four moves.”

“Five moves.”

Lin Feng’s silhouette was unceasingly flickering, the light of the broadsword kept passing by him but never reached his body. Each time, Lin Feng dodged the attack by a hair. The most shocking part was that Lin Feng was counting and dodging at the same time.

A huge rumbling noise filled the atmosphere, the broadsword violently and heavily smashed into the ground. Lin Feng had dodged an attack again, looking light and relaxed. That was the sixth move.

“What a terrifying dodging ability!”

A moment ago, the five first moves had been monstrously fierce and powerful but Lin Feng had dodged them easily, surprisingly, he hadn’t been touched once. His agility techniques were monstrously powerful.

“Six moves.”

The crowd was astonished. Even though Lin Feng had dodged, after the sixth attack, the bald leader still hadn’t managed to touch Lin Feng.

Only four moves were remaining.

The bald leader was dumbstruck. He was blankly staring at Lin Feng. He didn't care about his broadsword anymore, a golden color appeared around his body, it was filled with pure Qi which was being released from his body.

At that moment, he was realizing that Lin Feng was too quick, he knew that Lin Feng's power was terrifying.

It seemed like Lin Feng was controlling everything. He could dodge the attacks as he wished, it seemed so mysterious. Even though the bald leader's attacks were all strong, they weren't able to reach Lin Feng at all.

“Eeeya!” In the air, a sharp and high-pitched eagle cry emerged, it was piercingly sharp in everyone's ears. The bald leader was attacking again. He had transformed into a golden light that was dazzling to the eyes. His body looked like it was inside a golden eagle.

At that moment, the bald leader had transformed into an eagle.

Lin Feng raised his head, his silhouette flickered and, looking elegant and graceful, he moved away. However that eagle illusion was closely following him at incredible speed. It was leaving a trail of light behind it as if there was gold filling the sky, it was extremely beautiful.

Lin Feng slightly frowned and his silhouette kept flickering. However, at that moment, it seemed like the bald man's spirit had merged with his body. His soul was probably extremely strong. He was closely following Lin Feng determined to kill him in under ten moves.

An incredible quantity of sword Qi emerged in the air, it was so sharp.

That sword energy seemed like it had appeared out of nowhere.

“Psshhh!” Lin Feng's hand was piercing through the atmosphere. There was no sword in his hand but the crowd could see that it was as if his hand had become a sword, it would really be able to pierce through people.

That Qi was clearly not as powerful as the eagle.

“BOOM!”

The golden eagle and the hand collided. The sword energy was destroyed and Lin Feng's body was projected back a few dozen meters.

A cultivator of the Ling Qi layer, fighting against a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer, inevitably encountered a difference in strength.



“Seven moves!” Said Lin Feng. He raised his head, he still looked calm.

“Three move moves left, let’s see if you can block them!” At that moment, the bald leader’s facial expression was extremely evil. He had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, he should easily be able to defeat Lin Feng, who was only of the Ling Qi layer.

“I will definitely block them.” Said Lin Feng coldly. An incredible battle energy started burning around his body. Apart from the battle energy, he also released some sword Qi and deadly Qi.

At the same time, behind Lin Feng emerged a purple lake which was bubbling and foaming.

The bald leader was furious!

Lin Feng had become angry. On that day, new people had unceasingly been coming to kill Lin Feng. Everybody was coming to kill him and looking down on him as if he had no choice but to die, how could Lin Feng not be furious!

Would the ten moves be enough to kill him?

# Chapter 288: The Demonic Skill

---

“He wants to fight, Lin Feng wants to fight!”

When the crowd sensed Lin Feng deadly Qi and battle energy, they couldn't help but shiver. What an insane young man!

Even though he had only broken through to the Ling Qi layer and thus his level largely differed from that of his opponent. His determination and willpower were unwavering, he followed his beliefs without hesitation.

The bald leader had asked Lin Feng how he intended to block the last three attacks but why did he not consider that Lin Feng also had the ability to attack?

The bald leader was stupefied as well. Lin Feng wanted to attack him, he had decided to stop dodging and fight.

The eagle silhouette was emitting a dazzling golden light. It was unceasingly absorbing more pure Qi.

Lin Feng was courting death.

At that moment, Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the sky. He stretched his arm out and shouted coldly: “Sword!”

When he finished speaking, a sword appeared in Lin Feng's hand,

it was made from pure Qi and contained some deadly Qi as well. It looked like the sword of a war god.

At that moment, Lin Feng's body was like an extremely sharp sword. His body was releasing incredible amounts of sword Qi and battle energy.

“The battle energy and sword Qi is much stronger than a moment ago when he killed the other leader of the Condor Castle Organization!” The crowd was astonished. At that moment, Lin Feng was releasing an incredibly strong sword Qi and battle energy. It seemed like he was planning to kill.

“That's only a simple sword made of pure Qi, nothing more.” Said the bald leader while smiling coldly. Around his body, the flowing pure Qi was emitting a dazzling golden light. He raised his head and cried just like an eagle which made the crowd grow excited.

Once a cultivator had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, his spirit became more and more lifelike. A stronger spirit was of extremely useful during a battle and helped to increase cultivation speed as well.

At that moment, the bald leader seemed like he had become an eagle, he also possessed the precise vision of an eagle.

When cultivators reached a certain level of cultivation, the latent energy of their spirit increased. Therefore, if a cultivator had a beast spirit, that beast spirit would be growing until it became

monstrously strong and revealed its true powers.

“Oh, is that so? Only a sword made of pure Qi, nothing more?” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. He then took a step forwards, his sword and deadly energies were getting stronger and stronger.

“DIE!” Shouted Lin Feng, the battle energy left Lin Feng’s body and rolled through the atmosphere. It was moving towards the bald leader at full speed. The crowd was astonished, even though they were standing far away, they could sense Lin Feng’s battle energy. It was extremely powerful. Lin Feng was fearless, all that was going through his mind was to kill his opponent.

At that moment, Lin Feng looked like a warlord!

“Die!” Shouted the bald leader whose voice was as sharp as that of an eagles cry. His body transformed into a myriad of shadows which all moved towards Lin Feng.

“Eeeeeee!”

Behind Lin Feng, his purple spirit suddenly appeared, it turned into a hundred snakes which all moved towards the bald leader and curled around his body completely constricting him. The bald leader was shaking, the strength of the spirit could be sensed in the air.

“Swallow!” Shouted Lin Feng. These small snakes turned into a large venomous snake and started devouring the strength of the

eagle spirit. These snake spirits were extremely corrosive and it seemed like they were going to melt all the pure Qi that was surrounding the bald leader's body.

“Break!” Furiously shouted the bald leader. His pure Qi turned into a huge blade and rushed towards one of the snake illusions piercing the purple spirit.

However, immediately after, the myriad of purple snakes seemed to go into a frenzy, they formed a spiral around the bald leader and then started spinning at the speed of light. The strength of that spirit seemed incredible, its movements seemed so precise and accurate.

“Rise!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously. A deadly light flashed in his eyes. A hundred purple snakes suddenly curled around the bald leader's body, constricting him again.

Lin Feng was relying on the strength of his spirit, which he made curl around the bald leader's body.

The crowd was gasping with astonishment when they saw the scene. Lin Feng looked like a majestic war god.

What a strong spirit! Lin Feng was so strong! His strange spirit seemed like it could transform itself as many times as he wished. This time, a hundred purple snakes had appeared and were all absorbing the leaders vitality. Besides, they were very useful to Lin Feng as they were constricting the bald leader's body.

However, what the crowd didn't know was that Lin Feng, in order to carry out such precise attacks, had suffered incredible pain when using the surplus soul technique. He was releasing his surplus souls which he then merged with his purple spirit, that was the only way for him to reach such a monstrous strength. His attack was also extremely accurate, he was controlling a hundred snakes at the same time and using them all to consume the leaders vitality.

The vitality was nourishment for his soul

Lin Feng's eyes were closed and he had the feeling that his soul was still too weak. This was the first time he was using such a colossal amount of his soul strength, nonetheless, he couldn't stand it, it was too hard from him to control.

Actually, Lin Feng couldn't imagine creating millions of surplus souls, forget about billions, it sounded like a monstrous punishment to the body.

Lin Feng, even though his eyes were closed, was releasing his battle energy, it was extremely dense. He was also endlessly releasing sword Qi, it seemed like his sword was about ready to attack.

At the same time, the face of the bald leader, who was still constricted by the snakes, turned rigid. His powerful pure Qi turned into a resplendent blade.

"Slash!" Shouted the bald leader furiously. His blade diffused a

bright and dazzling light in the atmosphere. The purple spirit around his body was finally cut off and collapsed.

But at that moment, Lin Feng's eyes, which were closed, slowly started to open.

“Deadly Cross Shadow!” An incredible light in the shape of a cross appeared. Everybody couldn't believe their eyes. The crowd couldn't even follow it with their eyes as the attack was way too quick.

There was only some battle energy, deadly Qi and Sword Qi that could be sensed.

The cross disappeared as quickly as it appeared and blood splashed through the air. The crowd was astonished when they saw the bald leader had fallen onto the ground. A large cross mark had appeared on his chest, it was pouring with blood.

The powerful Qi, the earth fusion, his godly sword, his purple spirit and the deadly cross shadow were all separate parts of Lin Feng's counterattack.

Lin Feng's sword made from pure Qi wasn't just a simple sword, that sword contained an incredible amount of battle energy.

“Eight moves, you still have two more!” Said Lin Feng which broke the silence.

Eight moves, there were still two more moves, but the loser was already clear and it wasn't Lin Feng, but instead it was the bald leader.

In ten moves, who would kill whom?

The bald leader was using pure Qi to heal his wounds but at that moment he was already completely dispirited and depressed. The cross was glowing on his chest and his injury wasn't only external. The powerful sword Qi had also invaded his body through the wound and damaged his internal organs.

“What a monstrous attack! What an amazing young man!” People's hearts were pounding. Lin Feng was monstrously strong. Nothing was happening the way they had predicted.

Lin Feng, once again, was giving birth to miracles. One strike, he had just needed a single strike, and his strength of the Ling Qi layer defeated a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer!

That sword had completely changed people's perception of Lin Feng. Lin Feng had defeated a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer and from that moment, they truly admired him.

Lights were unceasingly flashing in Lan Jiao's eyes, she was staring at Lin Feng, what a daring young man! No wonder that her Thousand Evil Illusions hadn't worked against him. Lin Feng wasn't an ordinary person, he was an incredible genius.



Besides, at that moment, Bing He Teng's killing intent was exploding in his heart as he thought: "How monstrous."

Lin Feng really was a monster. He was much more frightening than all the disciples they had at the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. If the Yun Hai Sect hadn't been exterminated, a disciple such as Lin Feng would have inevitably reached an even more monstrous level with the aid of a teacher. That guy had to die!

"Piece of trash!" Shouted Mo Cang Lan's evil voice, he moved to attack. At the same time, Mister Huo moved as well closely following him. He wouldn't give him an opportunity to attack Lin Feng.

However, the person towards whom Mo Cang Lan was rushing wasn't Lin Feng at all, instead, it was the bald leader.

"No!" Shouted the bald leader as if he had just realized what was about to happen. His body was insanely shaking. He tried to escape but at that moment, vines curled around his body constricting him. In a flash, that vine turned into a bloodsucking plant monster, absorbing the bald leader's blood and flesh. The bald leader's blood and flesh was circulating through a system of the vines and then penetrating straight into Mo Cang Lan's body.

The crowd was astonished and their hearts were pounding. What a terrifying skill!

Mo Cang Lan's vines were surprisingly absorbing the bald leader's flesh, blood and pure Qi. The bald leader's face was

distorted in pain and he looked terrified. His body was violently shaking but one could see that he was powerless.

However, Mo Cang Lan looked like a greedy demon who was enjoying the taste of human flesh.

Every member of the Condor Castle Organization was incredibly scared of Mo Cang Lan. They were all violently shaking. He was a true demon. Their great leader was a demon. Even in their most horrible thoughts, they would have never imagined that such an evil skill existed before they met him.

A moment later, the bald leader's body had turned into a pile of skin and bones. His skin and bones were all that was left on the ground. Mo Cang Lan recalled his vines back into his body and at that moment, took a deep breath while looking intoxicated with a euphoric happiness.

“Animal!” Lin Feng's facial expression was ice-cold. Mo Cang Lan, who had helped with the destruction of the Yun Hai Sect, had surprisingly learnt such demonic skills.

## Chapter 289: The Evil Deity

---

That evil skill enabled the cultivator to swallow blood, flesh and pure Qi. Once all these things had been extracted from the cultivator, they turned into a pile of skin and bones.

Besides, Mo Cang Lan had immediately swallowed everything without hesitation. How evil was that!

Even though cultivators were usually ready to do most things to become stronger, they still set themselves some limits, otherwise, what would be the difference between humans and beasts?

Many people couldn't stand thinking about such an evil skill. Of course, there were also many people who were gasping in amazement at the evil skill. If they ever had the opportunity to obtain it, they would be delighted to learn and practice it. This was the world of cultivation, only strength mattered and it came with a price.

Mo Cang Lan evilly glanced at Lin Feng and said while laughing: "Don't worry, I'll swallow the old man and then it'll be your turn."

When he finished talking, he looked at Mister Huo.

Mister Huo remained vigilant. Mo Cang Lan's evil skill was way too deviant, Mister Huo had to be very careful.

"Lin Feng, get a bit farther away from here!" Said Mister Huo as

his body was suddenly surrounded by small balls of fire. They were burning with an intense heat as they rotated around his body. At that moment, he didn't look crooked and sluggish, he looked like a god of fire. These bright and resplendent fire balls contained traces of pure Qi.

“Alright.” Said Lin Feng while nodding. He moved back. Lin Feng could defeat cultivators of the first or second Xuan Qi layer but the third Xuan Qi layer was already too much for him. He wasn't strong enough, therefore he was happy that Mister Huo was there to fight for him.

“Hmph. Third Xuan Qi layer, that'll be a delicious meal.” Said Mo Cang Lan while smiling evilly. Two vines emerged from his body and moved towards Mister Huo to constrict his body. However, at that moment, two fireballs appeared in Mister Huo's hands. He raised both of his hands and these two fireballs transformed into two dragons which immediately bombarded the atmosphere moving straight towards these vines. Surprisingly, the vines started burning when coming into contact with the fire dragons.

On the other side, Bing He Teng was attacking as well. Snowflakes were fluttering in the wind, ice and frost were gradually covering the ground. It was his World of Ice and Snow skill which really caused the atmosphere to turn into a world of ice and snow.

However, that terrifying coldness didn't affect Meng Qing at all, she did not feel cold. Actually, that attack had the opposite effect and even gave Meng Qing a pleasant and refreshing feeling. That

pure and holy girl looked like a celestial being.

Meng Qing was an expert when it came to ice. How could ice and snow energy affect her? It only made her stronger.

“Frozen Earth!” Said Bing He Teng in a low voice. Immediately, a layer white ice and frost covered the ground. It was becoming thicker and thicker. The entire atmosphere had turned into a frozen world.

“How cold.”

The crowd was shaking. People of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village were experts at using ice and snow based skills, obviously, it wasn't just a rumor, that Frozen World skill was monstrously powerful.

Meng Qing's silhouette flickered. She elegantly jumped into the air. Immediately after, an explosion sound resonated in the atmosphere. The ice where she was just standing had exploded. Many icicles shot up from the ground at that moment. Everybody was narrowing their eyes.

Bing He Teng had made icicles to burst from the ground. He had used the ice from ground under Meng Qing's feet to carry out a surprise attack, what a sly method!

“Celestial Ice!” Said Bing He Teng while shaking both his hands. Ice and snow were blotting out the sky. It seemed like everything

had become ice and snow.

“Endless Frost!” said Meng Qing. A layer of ice Qi immediately appeared in the air. In a flash, both her and Bing He Teng’s bodies were covered with frost. The atmosphere was filled with an endless coldness which made everybody shake.

Lin Feng was looking at the two battles which contained four cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer who were fighting with each other.

Mister Huo and Mo Cang Lan had both broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer. Besides, they both had lots of experience, considering their respective ages, they were both seniors in the world of cultivation. Mister Huo’s two fireballs were fluttering in the wind in a rhythm with his heart beats, Mo Cang Lan’s vines were unable to approach Mister Huo’s fireballs. It would be very difficult for Mo Cang Lan to defeat Mister Huo.

Besides, even though Meng Qing didn’t have the same experience as her opponent, Lin Feng wasn’t worried about her. Her body filled with a powerful ice Qi, how could she be scared of ice and frost? Besides, she was extremely strong. Lin Feng didn’t clearly understand how strong she was because each time he saw her fight, it seemed like she was stronger than the previous time.

It seemed like the people of the Condor Castle Organization and the Ice and Snow Mountain Village would all be very busy fighting on that day.

The crowd also had the impression that things were changing too

fast, the features of the terrain were constantly undergoing drastic changes. Besides, each time they thought that Lin Feng was going to get killed, it wasn't happening at all.

The scariest part was that the people of the Condor Castle Organization were even working together against Lin Feng but Lin Feng was, as always, able to shock everyone.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at the people who had come along with Bing He Teng. On his face appeared a cold and evil smile.

Amongst these people, none of them were at the Xuan Qi layer.

When these people saw that Lin Feng was looking at them, their facial expressions became rigid. Immediately after, a cold energy enveloped their bodies.

“Lin Feng wants to kill them.”

The hearts of these people on white horses started to pound. Lin Feng was able to defeat a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer, fighting him was way too dangerous for them.

Lin Feng started moving and slowly walked towards them. All these people's bodies went stiff with fear.

“What are you planning on doing?” Said a member of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village towards Lin Feng. Immediately after, fear

appeared on his face.

“What am I doing?” A mocking expression appeared on his face. All these people had travelled over such a huge distance for the sole purpose of killing him, and now, they were asking him what he was planning on doing?

These people wanted to kill him, of course that Lin Feng planned to kill them in return.

Nobody spoke anymore nonsense. Behind Lin Feng's body appeared a vast and roaring purple lake which hovered in the air.

“It doesn't look good!”

When the people of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village saw the purple spirit emerge, their facial expressions changed drastically. Lin Feng's spirit was enough to constrict a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer, so it was obviously strong enough to use against them.

They turned their horses around and they wanted to leave. They didn't intend to fight back at all.

Lin Feng smiled coldly, his spirit launched itself through the air. Countless small purple snakes emerged and attacked at the speed of light. In a flash, the small snakes had constricted their bodies and immediately after the purple lake swallowed them. They were all drowning into the immense purple lake.



“Ahhhhhh.....”

Horrible shrieks spread through the atmosphere. These members of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village were drowning in the lake and their bodies were melting as if the lake was acid. They were desperately and hopelessly shouting in agony as their skin and flesh was melting.

Did they want to die?

They had come with the great elder of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, Bing He Teng, how majestic! However, something they had never imagined, even in their dreams, was that a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer would become their worst nightmare in Celestial River.

“Will you dare?”

At that moment, Bing He Teng’s voice was ice-cold as he watched the scene unfold. He had brought all the outstanding disciples with him, he had brought them to acquire experience and Lin Feng was going to kill them all.

Bing He Teng left Meng Qing behind and threw himself towards Lin Feng at full speed while releasing a vast amount of ice Qi.

However, Meng Qing wouldn’t let him touch Lin Feng.

Both her hands shook, her soul was palpitating from

nervousness. Meng Qing's body released a gigantic amount of ice Qi. The crowd could even see her nervous expression.

“Frozen Heart!” Said Meng Qing. The strength of her ice Qi bombarded the atmosphere. Bing He Teng started shaking violently. He abruptly turned around, however, at that moment, he groaned in agony. His black hair was covered with frost.

“You want to kill me but you thought that I wouldn't dare to offend you? What world would that even be possible!” said Lin Feng coldly as his purple spirit moved back inside his body. However, all the members of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village had disappeared from sight and there was no traces of them to be found.

Bing He Teng's face turned deathly pale. His face was filled with murderous intent. However, at that moment, he was fighting against Meng Qing. Immediately after, his killing intent became even more intense. Meng Qing, as before, was preventing him from approaching Lin Feng.

Her eyes were filled with calm and serenity. Her heart seemed like it was made of ice.

“The members of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village have been massacred for offending Lin Feng!” Thought the crowd.

At the beginning, they had come for the sole purpose of killing Lin Feng, but in the end, they were the ones who had been killed.

After that, Bing He Teng tried to kill Lin Feng, but at that moment, he was injured by Meng Qing. Besides, all his most outstanding disciples had been killed.

The Ice and Snow Mountain Village wasn't the only group which had been punished for offending Lin Feng, the Condor Castle Organization had suffered as well.

The two vice-leaders of the Condor Castle Organization were both at the Xuan Qi layer. The first one had entered the restaurant and was killed. He hadn't even seen how he died.

Then, the bald leader had been defeated by Lin Feng and was killed under tragic circumstances, becoming a cultivation resource for Mo Cang Lan's demonic body.

At that moment, the members of the Condor Castle Organization were terrified. Maybe tomorrow, their group would only be a memory in Celestial River.

Everything was happening because they tried to kill Lin Feng, a young man at the Ling Qi layer. Those who offended him ended up dead.

He was an amazing genius. He had even almost cut off one of Leng Yue's arms, the best disciple of the Hao Yue Sect, for using a blade in front of him. He had destroyed the Blademaster's confidence in his own ability to use blades. Lin Feng was like an evil deity.

# Chapter 290: The New Party

---

The battle continued in a deadlock. Mo Cang Lan and Mister Huo's battle was tough and fierce. An evil Qi and a fire Qi were bombarding each other but the battle seemed to be very evenly matched, it was hard to tell who would win.

Mo Cang Lan's skills were evil. Mister Huo's skills were precise. Bing He Teng's cultivation level was higher than Meng Qing's but her fighting power had exceeded all expectations. Besides, a moment ago, he turned his back to her which led to him being injured by her attack. Bing He Teng couldn't do anything against Meng Qing.

Concerning the members of the Condor Castle Organization, they did not want to go near Lin Feng, they didn't dare to draw his attention.

His purple spirit was way too terrifying. It could swallow people and then melt them into nothing, how monstrous was that!

"It seems like Lin Feng is not going to die today." Thought the crowd. He was so strong that Bing He Teng and Mo Cang Lan, who were acting together, couldn't even kill him. Was this because destiny said he would not die today or was it because they were not strong enough to kill him?

Mister Huo and Meng Qing could take the two strongest opponents; while Lin Feng, who was gifted and strong, didn't fear fighting against the lower Xuan Qi layer cultivators, therefore, all

the opponents, who all belonged to influential groups, couldn't touch him.

While the crowd was analyzing the situation, far away in the distance, appeared a white palanquin.

On that white palanquin was a woman wearing a fine gauze on her face. Four people were carrying that palanquin. At the same time, behind that palanquin, many people were running at full speed with only the tips of their toes touching the ground, they looked so graceful and they didn't even look like they were hurrying. It seemed like they lightly floated above the ground, which gave the crowd a surrealistic impression, as if it was a dream.

In a flash, the group of silhouettes arrived to where the battle was taking place. They didn't join the battle though.

The crowd was stupefied. Who were these people and what did they want this time?

However, Lan Jiao who was in the crowd was surprised. Her silhouette flickered and she landed in front of the palanquin. She then said to the woman: "Aunt Yun, why are you here?"

Aunt Yun removed her fine gauze and a beautiful mature woman's face appeared. She looked graceful and noble, cold and detached. She looked superior to other people to the extent that some people didn't dare look at her.

“I came to solve some problems.” Said Aunt Yun while smiling. Immediately after, she looked at Lin Feng, who looked surprised because he was also looking at her.

That woman didn't look young but her skin looked splendid. Besides, she looked extremely elegant and her strength seemed exceptional.

“Lin Feng, right?” Said that mature woman to Lin Feng.

“Indeed.” Said Lin Feng while nodding and added: “Is there a problem?”

“There is a problem.” Said the mature woman while nodding and continued: “Lin Feng, last time at the Dream Pavilion, you obtained an ancient cauldron, it's useless for you and we would like to take it back. We will give you your purity stones back, how does that sound?”

“The Ancient Dragon Cauldron!” Lin Feng was stupefied. These people had come because of the ancient dragon cauldron. Lin Feng couldn't help but have a bad feeling. That woman was speaking in the name of the Dream Pavilion, she was obviously one of the management members. She had, against all expectations, come because of the dragon cauldron, she had likely found out what kind of item it was.

“In the frame of the auction, there is no rule which says that items have to be returned under any circumstance.” Said Lin Feng sounding indifferent while looking at his interlocutor. He was

obviously not willing to hand the cauldron over.

The crowd was also puzzled. Lin Feng was right, since when did the people of the auction have the right to ask people to return acquired objects? That was impossible. Lin Feng, with the highest bid, had gained the cauldron, which now belonged to him.

The story was fishy.

“I can give you the double amount of purity stones for it to compensate for the loss.” Said Aunt Yun sounding patient and calm.

The double amount? Was the ancient dragon cauldron worth only four thousand purity stones of medium quality? It was one of the ten ancient cauldrons, it was priceless, it was a real treasure.

“No need. I don’t need purity stones, I like the cauldron very much.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. The cauldron was his, he didn’t need to justify himself.

“Lin Feng, you bought that cauldron for two thousand, now, I will give you ten thousand and you will give it back to me.” Continued Aunt Yun.

“I said that I liked my cauldron and no matter how many purity stones you offer, I will not exchange it.” Said Lin Feng in a strict and firm manner which made a strange expression appear on the woman’s face.

“Aunt Yun, what’s wrong?” Said Lan Jiao who felt that something was amiss. It seemed like something bad was about to happen between Aunt Yun and Lin Feng.

“Jiao Jiao, this has nothing to do with you.” Said Aunt Yun indifferently. Immediately after, she looked at Lin Feng again and said: “That cauldron is of no use for you. However, we need it, I hope that you can hand it over to the Dream Pavilion, we will inevitably be very grateful.”

Lin Feng, as before, shook his head.

Finally, the woman’s patience reached its limits. A cold energy appeared around her body, which made Lan Jiao shiver.

What a tragedy!

“You don’t know how to distinguish good from evil.” Said Aunt Yun in a low voice. She could see the look on Lan Jiao’s face was sad because of what was going to happen, but Lin Feng didn’t recognize other people’s kindness.

“What if I want the item no matter what?” added Aunt Yun.

Lin Feng was surprised. He then coldly said: “The Dream Pavilion sells things that other people have put up for auction. You, the Dream Pavilion, are just in charge of the selling. I obtained something and you gave the purity stones to the owner but now,



you come to me and ask me for the cauldron on behalf of the Dream Pavilion, what is that supposed to mean?”

When the woman heard Lin Feng, she remained unmoved. She just said coldly: “All I’m saying is that you have to hand over the ancient cauldron or you will regret it, the consequences will be terrible.”

When the crowd heard the woman, they were astonished, problems were occurring one after the other for Lin Feng, he didn’t even have the time to solve the old problems and new ones were arising already.

The Dream Pavilion surprisingly also wanted to fight against Lin Feng but these people’s strengths were much more terrifying than that of the Condor Castle Organization.

“Since when are the people of the Dream Pavilion so shameless?” Said Mister Huo jokingly. Fireballs were still emerging from his hand and rotating around him. He left Mo Cang Lan behind and moved back to Lin Feng. He was aggressively staring at Aunt Yun.

“I didn’t know that the Dream Pavilion was so greedy. If other people tried to steal items obtained at the auction, I wouldn’t be surprised but you, the Dream Pavilion, I am not expecting you to protect the people who obtain items at your auction, I can understand that, but stealing those items yourself, don’t you care about face?”

Many people secretly nodded when they heard Mister Huo.

Indeed, these people's behaviour was way too exaggerated.

That treasure had been obtained at their auction, they should protect their reputation instead of trying to steal from their own customers.

“HAHAHA!” Laughed Mo Cang Lan. He glanced at Aunt Yun, smiled evilly and said: “Whether they are shameless or not will not be a problem for you once you're dead, stop talking nonsense.”

“Did you hear him?” Said Aunt Yun to Lin Feng coldly. “I don't want to kill you, if you obey and hand over the cauldron, I will not get involved, but if you don't..”

“Aunt Yun!” Shouted Lan Jiao whose face had turned deathly pale. Aunt Yun originally wanted Lin Feng and her to become friends but at that moment, she surprisingly was making an enemy and threatening to kill Lin Feng.

“Jiao Jiao, I already told you that all this is none of your business.” Said Aunt Yun sounding cold. Lan Jiao bit her lip and remained silent. The Condor Castle Organization and the Ice and Snow Mountain Village hadn't managed to touch Lin Feng, could it be that the last group was going to manage what the others hadn't?

The situation was clear to Lan Jiao, if Aunt Yun fought against Lin Feng, it would be a one sided battle in her favour and Lin Feng would have no opportunity to escape the combined forces.

At that moment, Meng Qing and Bing He Teng stopped fighting and Meng Qing moved back to Lin Feng's side.

Lin Feng's facial expression was ice-cold. Lin Feng was constantly being threatened in Celestial River.

These people were all influential and powerful which is why they could threaten Lin Feng as they much as they wished, because his strength still was not enough to deter these powerful groups.

If Lin Feng had been extremely powerful, who would have dared speak to him that way? They even wanted to steal the treasure he had obtained at the auction.

“Very good.” Said Lin Feng while looking at Aunt Yun. An evil smile appeared on his face and he said coldly: “You are very strong which makes you think that you can threaten me whenever you want. If I don't give you what you want, you will kill me, you are convinced that the ancient cauldron is already yours, right?”

Aunt Yun frowned and saw that Lin Feng's smile was becoming more and more evil and he then said: “Everybody has heard her words clearly, you now all know how shameless the people of the Dream Pavilion are. Surprisingly, they want to steal the ancient cauldron that I obtained in their establishment!”

Aunt Yun was stupefied and then said coldly: “Shut up!”

“Shut up? You threaten me with death and now you want to me

to keep quiet about it? Do you think that the cauldron will automatically become yours once I die? You are naive, ridiculous and utterly moronic!” Said Lin Feng while smiling indifferently.

He then shouted at the top of his lungs, “I have obtained an ancient cauldron which is surprisingly one of the ten legendary cauldrons from the stories, the ancient cauldron is actually the Cauldron of the Heavenly Dragons.”

# Chapter 291: Thousand Illusions

---

“One of the ten legendary cauldrons from the stories, the ancient cauldron is actually the Cauldron of the Heavenly Dragons.” Lin Feng’s voice was echoing through the atmosphere.

People’s hearts started to violently pound. Legendary cauldrons were extremely precious. Even though they didn’t know what the true name “Heavenly Dragon of the Nine Skies” or exactly what it meant, considering the name, they could imagine its price. It seemed to be a priceless treasure from ancient times.

“The Dream Pavilion doesn’t care about violating the rules. They have come to steal a treasure.” The crowd had no doubts when it came to Lin Feng’s words. On that day, many people had seen Lin Feng come out of the Dream Pavilion with his legendary cauldron. But surprisingly, at that moment, the Dream Pavilion surprisingly wanted to have it back. Obviously, that ancient cauldron was priceless. Otherwise, the Dream Pavilion wouldn’t care.

The crowd was filled with excitement, they wish they could have obtained such an item.....

Mister Huo glanced at Lin Feng. Fire was burning in his eyes. He was an alchemist, he concocted pills. He had already heard about these legendary cauldrons, once or twice. These cauldrons all had a common point, they could be used by alchemists to concoct powerful pills and were all priceless.

When using an ordinary cauldron, one could only concoct Xuan

level pills of lower quality, while when using the cauldron of the heavenly dragons, one could concoct Xuan level pills of medium quality or above. Even though it was only a slight improvement in quality, it still made a huge difference, it was the difference between day and night.

For example, Xuan level pills of lower quality could be used by cultivators between the first and the third Xuan Qi layer while Xuan level pills of medium quality could be used by cultivators between the fourth and sixth Xuan Qi layer. That was a three-layer difference, therefore, it was a huge difference.

“HAHAHA!” Mo Cang Lan was laughing demonically. The more he used his evil skill, the more evil and sinister he became. He didn’t look like a human being anymore. He realized that he was interested in the Cauldron of the Heavenly Dragons as well. He was as interested in the cauldron as he was in killing Lin Feng.

Bing He Teng was astonished as well. If the Ice and Snow Mountain Village could obtain such a treasure, how beneficial would it be?

“No... If I had such a treasure, would I even need to go back to the sect?” Bing He Teng was secretly excited. If he had such a treasure and went back to the sect, the treasure wouldn’t be his anymore, it would become the property of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. Besides, considering the strength of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, maybe they wouldn’t be able to protect the cauldron. It would be too hard to protect it. Maybe when it came to such a heavy responsibility, it was best to leave Xue Yue and take the treasure with him.

Everybody was already dreaming about getting the heavenly dragon cauldron. All the strong cultivators were wondering why they weren't the ones who bought the cauldron, even though they had never even thought about it.

At that moment, Aunt Yun looked glum. Before arriving, she hadn't thought that Lin Feng would know about the heavenly dragon cauldron, which is why she had offered a high price in the beginning, but later on, whatever the price, Lin Feng kept refusing over and over again. Therefore, she had guessed that Lin Feng probably knew about the cauldron.

Besides, she had threatened Lin Feng's life, but it hadn't been enough, Lin Feng had made the truth publicly known. That was a great loss for her, even if she obtained the cauldron, she wouldn't necessarily be able to leave Xue Yue. Everybody would quickly know about the heavenly dragon cauldron.

"Everybody will know about the treasure if I obtain it." Thought Aunt Yun. She was staring at Lin Feng and her face was filled with murder.

"You want to kill me?" Lin Feng had a cold smile on his face and immediately said: "Mo Cang Lan, Bing He Teng, I know that you all want to kill me but even if you kill me, have you thought about who would get the treasure?" Lin Feng sounded cold and indifferent.

Mo Cang Lan and Bing He Teng remained silent. The Dream

Pavilion was one of the three biggest marketplaces in Celestial River. They had such a large power and influence that the Condor Castle couldn't rival them. All the objects that appeared in their auction room were treasures, yet no one dared to try and steal the treasures. They certainly were extremely strong.

“However, if we kill the people of the Dream Pavilion first, we can solve our personal problems after, then we won't be bothered by a stronger third party, wouldn't that be a better solution?” Said Lin Feng. In the world, there were no definite enemies, the enemy of my enemy is my friend. Even though Mo Cang Lan and Bing He Teng wanted to kill him and Lin Feng also wanted to kill them, he knew that if they acted at the same time as the dream pavilion, he wouldn't have a single chance.

Lin Feng was just trying to create tension between them, so that they would, at least, not collaborate to kill him.

“Lin Feng.....” Lan Jiao was looking at Lin Feng while unceasingly shaking her head. She hadn't thought that Aunt Yun and Lin Feng would fight each other to death.....

“She wants to kill me, should I let her kill me without retaliation?” Said Lin Feng sounding indifferent while looking at Lan Jiao, which made her speechless. Aunt Yun wanted to kill Lin Feng, what could Lin Feng do? He had no choice but to return his killing intent.

When Bing He Teng heard Lin Feng, lights flashed in his eyes. Lin Feng was right. Even if they collaborated with Aunt Yun and killed Lin Feng, they were in Celestial River, they weren't at the Ice



and Snow Mountain Village, even if they obtained the heavenly dragon cauldron, they wouldn't be able to leave with it as long as the Dream Pavilion wanted it.

“HAHAHA!” Mo Cang Lan was laughing evilly. He then said: “I will not join anyone!”

“Old fool!” Cursed Lin Feng. Mo Cang Lan was really evil. He didn't wait for Bing He Teng, who wasn't as strong as him, to reply and had given his answer.

If the two didn't help, Lin Feng and the people of the Dream Pavilion would fight. The other two would just sit and watch them fight and then attack the winner. Then, it didn't matter whether it was Lin Feng or the Dream Pavilion who won, they would inevitably be injured.

However, even they didn't help, Lin Feng's goal was to get rid of the two cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer and then fight against the people of the Dream Pavilion.

Aunt Yun, at that moment, was staring at Lin Feng. From the stories, he was not someone who would lie down and be killed easily, but could it really be that bad?

Even though they had only a fraction of the power in Celestial River, they were still strong enough to kill Lin Feng.

“Since you want to die, I will help you achieve your aim.” Said

Aunt Yun coldly. She then jumped off the palanquin. She was extremely quick.

At the same time, the silhouettes of the four cultivators carrying the palanquin flickered. They all landed on her sides. They were releasing a deadly Qi.

Amongst these four people, who were women, none of them were mediocre cultivators, all of them had broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer.

“The people of the Dream Pavilion are so strong.” Lin Feng was stupefied. Aunt Yun was extremely powerful when compared to the other women.

“You four can kill him and then his ring with the Na stone.” Said Aunt Yun while pointing to Lin Feng. She sounded indifferent. Lin Feng had no power or influence in Celestial River, he couldn’t just walk away with the precious treasure when there were stronger people present. That was why these four people were here to kill Lin Feng.

“I will handle these two.” Said Aunt Yun while rolling up her sleeves. Her silhouette flickered and in a flash, she appeared in front of Mister Huo and Meng Qing.

Her long sleeves were fluttering in the wind. In a flash, an endless quantity of illusions appeared. It seemed like there was an endless quantity of clones. In a flash, Meng Qing and Mister Huo’s silhouettes had disappeared.

“Third Xuan Qi Layer.”

Mo Cang Lan and Bing He Teng had lots of experience, they could, obviously, sense other people's strength. They could see that that woman had broken through to the third Xuan Qi Layer like them, however, she had immediately challenged Meng Qing and Mister Huo, alone. Those two could rival Mo Cang Lan and Bing He Teng in power.

“What a strong and aggressive woman.” People's hearts were pounding. After that move, it seemed like she was the only person in the entire world.

“Aunt Yun's Thousand Illusions skill is becoming stronger and stronger.” Whispered Lan Jiao. She was lost though because she already had feelings for Lin Feng, but at that moment, Aunt Yun wanted to kill him.

In the middle of a whistling hurricane, Meng Qing and Mister Huo had recovered from the illusions. These thousand illusions didn't emit any sound but everybody could feel the terrifying power in the attack. A careless move and it was easy to get severely injured in the middle of such an attack, or even die in a pitiful manner.

At that moment, the four women also attacked. Their sleeves were fluttering in the wind. Like illusions, in a flash, they surrounded Lin Feng. Lin Feng was unable to escape even if he grew wings.

“BOOM!”

Coldness invaded the entire atmosphere. Lin Feng frowned and raised his head and looked at the three silhouettes fighting. It seemed like Meng Qing was furious. She wanted to leave the thousand illusions and join Lin Feng.

“Meng Qing, don’t worry about me!” Shouted Lin Feng. It was clear to Lin Feng that Meng Qing was ready to do anything for him. Besides, he even knew that Meng Qing had a strange ability to increase her power several fold when needed, but using it created an infinite coldness which invaded her body. He didn’t want Meng Qing to use it.

Lin Feng preferred to suffer alone!

“It’s my turn!” Lin Feng took a deep breath. A hundred surplus souls emerged. Around his body was releasing a terrifying Qi.

## Chapter 292: The Dragon Metamorphosis

---

A strange light flashed in these four women's eyes. Their sleeves fluttered in the wind while they all started to punch towards Lin Feng. Punches were moving towards Lin Feng from all four sides.

These women had all broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, even though they had just broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer, their opponent was only a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer. Aunt Yun had assigned four people to kill Lin Feng because she wanted to make sure that Lin Feng would die. She didn't want to waste time and let more troubles arise.

A soft and pliable pure Qi was whistling in the atmosphere and moving straight towards Lin Feng. An ordinary cultivator of the Ling Qi layer wouldn't be able to withstand a single attack such as this.

"Sssss...." Lin Feng's purple spirit transformed into a gigantic purple dragon. It was a dozen meters high. It curled up around Lin Feng's body and moved Lin Feng onto its head. In a flash, Lin Feng appeared a dozen meters high in the air looking down on everybody.

"What a monstrous spirit!" When the crowd saw that gigantic purple dragon, they were astonished. However, they didn't know what kind of spirit it was exactly that Lin Feng had, but it looked extremely strong.

At that moment, Lin Feng's eyes were slightly closed. He was, as

before, releasing a terrifyingly powerful Qi. His surplus souls were floating above his dragon spirit.

“Die!” Shouted the four women on the ground. They jumped up in the air and threw themselves towards Lin Feng.

“Release!” Said Lin Feng in a low voice. A terrifying Qi invaded the entire atmosphere. The purple dragon started shaking violently and it raised its head high into the air.

“Sssss.....” The dragon was unleashing a dragon chant. Its two eyes, which looked enormous, became even scarier. At the same time, its body became even bigger, it became monstrously gigantic. That small dragon that was like a snake now transformed and looked like a terrifying purple dragon.

“Sssssssss....” the dragon howled in fury. Its head rushed towards the four women with its huge mouth wide open. It wanted to swallow them.

“Animal!” Furiously shouted Aunt Yun while looking at Lin Feng. She left Meng Qing and Mister Huo and attempted to rush over to Lin Feng.

She had thought that these four women, with their strength, would need only a few seconds to kill Lin Feng but she hadn't thought that Lin Feng had other plans. Lin Feng was full of mysteries and surprises.

“Stay here!” Said Mister Huo furiously. If she wanted to fight, they had to fight, and if she wanted to leave, she thought that she could leave as she pleased. Mister Huo, old as he was, couldn’t tolerate that. That was a huge humiliation.

A fire light streaked through the sky towards Aunt Yun like a fireball. Aunt Yun was startled for a few seconds. She couldn’t deal with Lin Feng, she abruptly turned around and saw the fireball move towards her at full speed.

“Boom!”

The fireballs exploded in the atmosphere. Immediately after, the atmosphere became extremely cold. Meng Qing had arrived as well. Crackling and explosion sounds were uninterruptedly spreading through the air. In a flash, it seemed like the atmosphere had gone from intense heat to freezing coldness. The fireballs were surrounded by ice. Ice and fire, when working together, increased in strength.

Lin Feng was on the other side in the air, at that moment, he was on the enormous tail of the dragon. Besides, the gigantic purple dragon opened its colossal mouth and immediately swallowed one of the four women and she was instantly eaten alive.

One cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer had just died!

At that moment, the dragon didn’t look like a spirit anymore. It looked like a real terrifying dragon, as if it was alive.

How could a spirit be alive?

The crowd was astonished. The spirit was something innate and was a part of the soul. It played an important role in the path of cultivation. It could be used to enhance techniques or enlightenment during battles. When the cultivation level increased, the spirit became stronger as well. However, they believed the spirit was just a support for the cultivator and did not have life. They had never seen Lin Feng's spirit before and it seemed like it had a life of its own.

At that moment, Lin Feng was on the tail of the dragon and had his eyes closed.

Besides, the pupils of the dragon were filled with endless coldness.

"If you want to kill me, just try it!" People's hearts were pounding. They had the impression that their heads were exploding in shock. That voice had come from the mouth of the dragon. However, it was Lin Feng's voice.

"It's Lin Feng! That purple dragon is Lin Feng!" The crowd was dumbstruck. They looked at these gigantic eyes, which looked expressionless and incredibly cold. These eyes were those of a human.

Lin Feng could control his spirit and bring it to life.



“Pfewww....” People in the crowd took a deep breath. How scary! Lin Feng had absolute control over his spirit.

People in the crowd were not the one ones who were astonished, those few extremely strong cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer were all astonished. Lin Feng’s abilities were very mysterious.

“HA HA HA HA HAAAA” Mo Cang Lan’s face was filled with evil intentions. What a great method! He definitely wanted that ability as well.

Lin Feng was a priceless treasure to him.

At that moment, the three women of the Xuan Qi layer managed to free themselves from the attacks of the purple dragon and landed onto the ground. They were breathing quickly and felt cold in their hearts.

What a terrifying young man!

They were not the only ones who thought that Lin Feng was terrifying, everybody thought the same.

So that’s how it was, he had killed the two vice-leaders of the Condor Castle Organization without using his full strength. No wonder he didn’t fear them and was determined to stay in Celestial River.

However, Lin Feng hadn’t expected so many people would keep

attacking him one after the other when he was dealing with Condor Castle. First, it was the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, then the Dream Pavilion, they all wanted to kill him.

Fortunately, Mister Huo was there to help!

The purple dragon was fixedly staring at the people down on the ground. When Lin Feng was at the Golden Zi Mountain in Mo Yue, the cultivators of the Zi Government used a purple energy. They could control their spirits and increase the strength of their spirit.

This is what Lin Feng was using, he had obtained the memories of the cultivator of the Zun Qi layer and spent six months practicing in secret. He had learnt the how to use surplus souls and could now already make a hundred surplus souls appear, which all contained the power of his soul. He was combining that power with the power of his spirit, thus, when using these surplus souls and injecting them into his spirit, he could bring his spirit into reality and it would become monstrously strong.

If he had only relied on the strength of a single soul and tried to control his spirit, his dragon would have been strong but it wouldn't have been enough to defeat these four women of the Xuan Qi layer. Therefore, he had used all of his surplus souls to inject them into his spirit and increase its strength. His snake thus had even more power as well.

That splendid method was called the Ode to the Spirit.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng coldly. Immediately after, the dragon

rushed through the atmosphere with a whistling sound.

The purple lake from before had been entirely swallowed by Lin Feng's snake spirit and that purple lake turned out to be the blood of a Zun level dragon. Besides, there were the remnants of its willpower and determination in that blood.

The gigantic dragon moved, it seemed like the entire world was under the pressure of that terrifying creature. Fear invaded the heart of these three female cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer.

That gigantic snake definitely had the strength of a Xuan level beast. Besides, it was also extremely brutal, violent, and agile.

Concerning the women, they were experts at creating illusions. Unfortunately, it wouldn't be very useful against Lin Feng's spirit.

“\*\*\*\*!” Cursed the three women furiously. Their silhouettes flickered and many illusions appeared floating above the ground. The crowd was dazzled and felt they were hallucinating after seeing so many illusions.

“Fools!” Shouted Lin Feng's furious voice and his eyes were as cold as before. He was determined and tenacious, there wasn't the least bit of hesitation in his actions.

Illusions? They probably didn't know that at this moment, Lin Feng's purple dragon spirit was filled with the power of several surplus souls. Lin Feng's eyes were closed and he was in fusion

with the earth. He could see through the illusions clearly in his mind, therefore so could all of his surplus souls.

“Ahhhhh.....” Two piercingly sharp shrieks emerged. A huge quantity of illusions vanished. Two female cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer had just disappeared after being swallowed by the purple dragon.

The arrogant female cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer who was standing in front of the dragon seemed absolutely tiny and insignificant, at least in comparison with the dragon.

There was only one left, from the four female cultivators of the first Xuan Qi layer, only one was left.

She was standing there looking at that gigantic creature and shaking. She had just seen her three sisters being swallowed by the spirit. How could she not be terrified? Her determination and willpower had already been crushed.

The monstrous and gigantic spirit was coldly staring at her. She was getting more and more frightened with each second.

Finally, she decided to give up and turned around to run. She didn't want to fight anymore. She wanted to escape. A cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer wasn't fighting anymore, she wanted to flee.

Unfortunately, she didn't have the possibility of escaping.

The gigantic dragon started moving as if in a frenzy. In a flash, he swallowed her body which immediately disappeared. With that, the four female cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer had all died!

“Boooom!”

A violent and heavy wave of energy spread through the air. Aunt Yun moved away from Mister Huo and Meng Qing. When she saw that the fourth female cultivators had disappeared, a horrible and evil expression appeared on her face.

“You killed them all!” Her face was distorted with murderous intentions. She didn’t look calm and indifferent anymore.

“Not only did I kill them but I will also kill everyone else from the Dream Pavilion!” Said the purple dragon sounding ice-cold. “When you came to kill me, you should have prepared for death!”

## Chapter 293: Giving up the Cauldron!

---

Lin Feng was back on the head of the gigantic purple dragon and his eyes were closed as before. Besides, the purple dragon, on which Lin Feng was, was moving towards the people of the Dream Pavilion which made their heartbeats accelerate violently.

“How dare you!” Said the woman who sounded enraged. She was extremely arrogant and at that moment, she was still acting very haughty and bossy.

“Why would I not dare?” Said Lin Feng sounding ice-cold: “Mister Huo, Meng Qing, Aunt Yun is for you.”

“Alright.” said Mister Huo while slightly nodding. He was staring at Aunt Yun. How arrogant! She was even looking down on him, an old man at the same Xuan Qi Layer.

The purple dragon arrived in front of the people of the Dream Pavilion in a flash.

At that moment, a silhouette blocked Lin Feng’s way. It was Lan Jiao.

“Please, no!” Said Lan Jiao while shaking her head and hoping that Lin Feng would stop.

“Please, no?” Said the gigantic dragon sounding ice-cold. “Your people, the people of the Dream Pavilion, want to kill me, but I

can't kill them? Besides, when they wanted to kill me, you didn't try to prevent them from doing so, but now that I want to kill them, do you think that you have any right to stop me?"

When Lan Jiao heard Lin Feng, she started shaking. Indeed, when these people arrived to kill Lin Feng, she didn't try to stop them. What gave her the right to try and prevent Lin Feng from getting his revenge by blocking his way?

"Get lost!"

The gigantic dragon moved forwards and threw Lan Jiao's body flying to the side. Then, it kept moving forwards towards the people of the Dream Pavilion. Immediately after, horrible shrieks spread through the atmosphere. All the people of the Dream Pavilion were thrown into the air. An extreme strength had smashed into them destroying their bones, flesh and vital organs.

"Ssss....." The dragon had slaughtered the people of the Dream Pavilion but its two gigantic eyes revealed neither sympathy nor pity, they were just filled with killing intent.

It fought until all the enemies were dead!

At the moment when everybody wanted to kill him, who had felt any sympathy or pity for him? The world of cultivation was a cruel world without emotion. Those who were weak in their hearts died early. The rule was to kill or be killed.

Very quickly, a sea of corpses appeared in front of the purple dragon. All the people of the Dream Pavilion except for Lan Jiao had died.

Far in the distance, Aunt Yun's facial expression looked evilly cold revealing her murderous desires. All of her people had died except for Lan Jiao. She had to get revenge and kill Lin Feng. However, at that moment, Meng Qing and Mister Huo were preventing her from doing so, she couldn't even move closer to Lin Feng.

Besides, Mo Cang Lan and Bing He Teng were smiling coldly. They both had ice-cold evil smiles on their faces.

They hadn't expected such happy circumstances. For them, the more devastating that battle was, the more advantageous it was for them.

The gigantic purple dragon slowly turned around. Its eyes looked as cold as before and it glanced at the crowd.

The crowd looked at Lin Feng but what they didn't know was that Lin Feng, at that moment, was exhausted and had almost no strength remaining.

Using The Ode to the Spirit, was using the strength of his soul to boost his spirits power, and then make his spirit transform into a ferocious dragon. It was extremely tiresome for his soul and vitality. Lin Feng already had the impression that he was about to faint from exhaustion.



Mo Cang Lan had a huge smile on his face. He was slowly walking forward, taking small steps. Suddenly, he jumped into the air, throwing himself at Lin Feng.

An endless quantity of vines appeared in the air and moved towards Lin Feng at full speed.

Even though that purple dragon was terrifying, Mo Cang Lan had sensed that the purple dragon was just Lin Feng's spirit and that it wasn't a real dragon. Besides, it only had the strength of the first Xuan Qi layer, but that was still sufficient to kill four people of the first Xuan Qi layer. However, it wouldn't be enough against Mo Cang Lan. In such circumstances, if Mo Cang Lan managed to kill Lin Feng, the purple dragon would collapse by itself.

"Ssssss....." The dragon moved towards the vines. The vines were becoming longer and longer and started twining around the dragon's body. A bloodthirsty Qi emerged from the vines and the purple dragon was finally defeated. It transformed into a purple lake and rushed back towards Lin Feng's body.

Lin Feng couldn't endure it anymore, he was too exhausted.

He fell down onto the ground and opened his eyes. He saw these bloodthirsty vines coming towards him, at the same time, an ice-cold Qi enveloped his body.

Mo Cang Lan and Bing He Teng were attacking Lin Feng together. They wanted to kill him and steal the cauldron.

“You plan to kill me?” Said Lin Feng smiling with a warm smile on his face. He didn’t feel threatened at all.

His body flickered, a light flashed, and suddenly, an ancient cauldron appeared in Lin Feng’s hand. It contained a mysterious, ancient Qi.

When the ancient cauldron appeared, everybody was stupefied. At that moment, Lin Feng had taken out the ancient cauldron. It was obviously the heavenly dragon cauldron!

The crowd, who had no hope of ever being able to touch the cauldron, was still very excited when it appeared, and had hope again, what if a miracle happened and they were able to get it...

“You all want the heavenly dragon cauldron? Here, you can have it!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. Immediately, the heavenly dragon cauldron flew through the air towards Mo Cang Lan. Lin Feng was offering it to him.

Mo Cang Lan was astonished. His vines stopped moving towards Lin Feng. Instead, he used them to catch the cauldron. Immediately after, he vigorously pulled it towards him. In a flash, it was almost in Mo Cang Lan’s hands.

Bing He Teng released some ice energy and threw himself at Mo Cang Lan. At that moment, he had already forgotten about Lin Feng.

Even though Lin Feng had killed his disciples of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, they were less important than that ancient cauldron. If he managed to get that ancient cauldron, he would leave Xue Yue and go to even greater and more important places.

How could Bing He Teng miss the opportunity to get the ancient cauldron?

He wasn't the only one to think that way. Because of Lin Feng, Protector Kong had killed Mo Xie, Mo Cang Lan's son, and Mo Cang Lan hated Lin Feng even more for that, but just before, when Mo Cang Lan obtained the cauldron, he immediately focused on storing the cauldron and started running away at an incredible speed. People couldn't even believe their eyes.

He didn't think that it would be that easy to acquire the heavenly dragon cauldron. Mo Cang Lan, at that moment, couldn't help but look up at the sky and feel overjoyed.

He hadn't killed Lin Feng yet but after getting monstrously strong, he would come back and easily be able to kill Lin Feng. He didn't need to rush. The most important thing was to stay safe and leave with the cauldron.

"Where are you going?" Shouted Aunt Yun furiously. She jumped into the air and threw herself at Mo Cang Lan, forgetting about Lin Feng for the time being.

At that moment, Meng Qing and Mister Huo didn't stop them.

They instead moved back to Lin Feng's side. They were looking at the people who were farther and farther away.

“It's not that easy to obtain the heavenly dragon cauldron.” Said Mister Huo indifferently. Mister Huo's eyes were filled with admiration while looking at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng, when he was threatened by the people of the Dream Pavilion hadn't taken the ancient cauldron out, but when the situation had turned out to be really dangerous, he immediately threw away an incredibly precious treasure, without regret or hesitation.

Courage, insight, cunning and resolution, coupled with Lin Feng's natural talent would definitely turn him into an incredibly strong cultivator.

Lin Feng's face turned deathly pale. He was smiling indifferently and took out a sheet, a pill recipe.

“Mister Huo, this is the recipe for spirit blood pills. Keep it safe. I will copy some other recipes for you.” Said Lin Feng while giving the recipe to Mister Huo. If he hadn't been helped by Mister Huo, maybe the outcome of these battles would have been different. He wouldn't even have been able to resist to Mo Cang Lan and Bing He Teng.

Lin Feng would remember that favour forever.

Mister Huo looked delighted, without adhering to formalities with Lin Feng, he immediately put away the recipe and immediately handed a ring to Lin Feng while saying: “These are the things that you have asked me to get. Keep them safe.”

“Thank you.” Said Lin Feng while taking the ring. He immediately said: “Mister Huo, how advanced is your knowledge when it comes to pills?”

“So-so. I have no problem concocting Ling level pills, I can make some Xuan level pills of lower quality as well but it doesn’t always succeed, I have about a ten percent success rate, I am unable to make pills of higher levels.”

Xuan level pills of lower quality, ten percent success rate!

Mister Huo’s abilities when it came to concocting pills were already extremely advanced! Having a ten percent success rate when it came to concocting Xuan level pills of lower quality was not a great success rate, but it was very high compared to others, which was why the demand for Xuan level pills were high. Mister Huo certainly had many people who were interested in his services.

“Mister Huo, are you interested in concocting some pills with me? You could also teach a few things about pills.” Asked Lin Feng.

Mister Huo remained silent for a while and then said, while smiling: “Concocting pills together, no problem, but don’t you want to chase the heavenly dragon cauldron?”

“I’m not strong enough to own such a valuable item, how could I even get it back?” Said Lin Feng while shaking his head and smiling.

“If you cannot get it back, at least, you should make things hard for them. These days, the news that the heavenly dragon cauldron is in Celestial River will spread very quickly. If anyone wants it, it will not be easy for anyone, at least, for a certain period of time. In Celestial River, it will be a bloodbath because of the ancient cauldron. Even though, relying on your own strength, you are not necessarily able to take it back, since you have pill recipes, I could ask some old friends to help, then it might not be that difficult to get it back.” Said Mister Huo while smiling. Lin Feng looked delighted.

Since the precious treasure was there, many extremely strong people were going to try and steal it. The strongest ones could defeat a few of their opponents, but it wouldn’t be an easy task to exterminate all those interested in the cauldron!

# Chapter 294: Mister Chi

---

In a secret room, Lin Feng was sitting cross-legged and his eyes were firmly closed. Carefree and indifferent, Lin Feng was fused with the earth.

A long thread of pure Qi was fluctuating, it contained Lin Feng's soul energy. Lin Feng was practicing his surplus souls technique.

It had been two days since the battle between the multiple groups. During these two days, Lin Feng had only been sitting in that secret room practicing cultivation, nothing else.

His pure Qi had recovered, the strength of his soul had also recovered, at the same time, he had improved the speed of his surplus soul ability. The strength of his soul was becoming stronger and stronger. He was also able to make even more surplus souls appear. He could make an even stronger purple spirit appear. In a battle, he would be much stronger than before.

Lin Feng needed to be extremely strong. Therefore, before even having completely recovered from his injuries, Lin Feng had already started developing the number of his surplus souls.

In order to become stronger, even if it was extremely difficult, Lin Feng was ready and willing to endure the pain and suffering required.

He didn't want to be threatened by other people. He didn't want to rely on Meng Qing and other people each time a situation

appeared where someone wanted to kill him. It was embarrassing for Lin Feng to be so weak. The fact that Meng Qing protected him once in a while was not a problem, but it couldn't always be the case.

Time passed and the third day was already over. In that secret room, many purity stones of medium quality had already disappeared, but Lin Feng's ability to absorb pure Qi was growing stronger.

A white light was fluctuating in the atmosphere emitting whistling sounds. It was violently penetrating into Lin Feng's body. Lin Feng had the impression that he was intoxicated, it was so comfortable.

The pure Qi was revolving faster and faster around Lin Feng. Lin Feng's body was glittering and looked translucent. In the middle of the dazzling light, there was an incredible strength which seemed to be endless. It was the strength of pure Qi, even though they were only small threads of pure Qi, the fact that he was now absorbing enough pure Qi for it to be visible implied that Lin Feng was getting closer and closer to reaching the Xuan Qi layer.

"Boom!" A soft explosion emerged inside Lin Feng's body. An endless supply of pure Qi drowned into Lin Feng's body from heaven and earth. Besides, at the same time, a thread of pure Qi emitted a bright and dazzling light and then immediately vanished.

"Pfeww..." Lin Feng, whose eyes were closed, slightly opened his mouth and took a deep breath. He opened his eyes and looked so



delighted that his eyes were twinkling.

“Ninth Ling Qi layer. I still have one more step before I break through to the Xuan Qi layer, now it’s only a small step away.” thought Lin Feng.

For months, Lin Feng had dedicated all his time to studying the Zun Qi layer cultivator’s memories and techniques. He had not reached the ninth Ling Qi Layer as he was focusing on the pure Qi and techniques rather than just absorbing Qi. After the last big battle, he finally believed he now had enough understanding of pure Qi and could successfully advance. He had finally broken through to the ninth Ling Qi layer, but was still a small step away from breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer.

Even though Lin Feng had broken through to the ninth Qi layer, he didn’t stand up. He slowly closed his eyes again and kept practicing his surplus soul technique.

Lin Feng couldn’t afford to relax and be lazy. No matter how tiresome, how painful, everything that he did was in accordance with his beliefs. Everything he did was because of his incredible ambition, to not get bullied anymore, and to put a stop to the people who wanted to kill him.

Lin Feng spent seven days in the secret room focusing on getting stronger. Outside of the secret room was a spacious guest room but nobody was inside at that moment.

In the room next to Lin Feng’s cultivation room, it was dark.

From outside, that cultivation room looked like shelf but nobody knew that it was actually an entrance to a secret room.

Meng Qing was probably cultivating as well. After all, that big battle had made her exhausted as well.

“Where is Mister Huo?!” thought Lin Feng. He started walking to the guest room and opened the door and entered. Inside, it was a scenery filled with charm and beauty. There were many rooms, in one of the rooms, a vast and boundless heat had invaded the atmosphere. Apart from that heat, it also smelt like medicine.

“No, no, no, it’s not correct. Mister Chi, that’s not correct, the thousand lotus flower leaves have to melt first and then they can be put into the mixture. Then, we have to use our soul to control it.” The sounds of people arguing could be heard in the room where the heat came from. It was precisely Mister Huo’s voice. It seemed like he was arguing with someone else about something.

“Mister Huo, you are wrong. If you first melt the lotus leaves and then put them into the mixture, you will lose half of the medicinal strength when you add them to the mixture, and it will be impossible to concoct Xuan level spirit blood pills.” Said the other voice. It seemed like that person was an old man like Mister Huo. Besides, his voice sounded like he was stubbornly persisting in his own opinion.

“It seems like Mister Huo and his friend were concocting Xuan level spirit blood pills, and that they didn’t agree with each other.” thought Lin Feng. Immediately after, he entered the room in which they were concocting pills. Apart from Mister Huo, Lin Feng

saw another old man, he was sitting down on a chair. Both of them were staring at the other, it seemed like they were unable to persuade each other. Besides, next to them was a huge cauldron.

Mister Huo had taken the recipe of the spirit blood pills and was discussing it with the other old man. Obviously, they were very well acquainted.

Lin Feng glanced at the two old men and then looked at the red-haired old man. His heart started beating a bit faster. He recognized the old man who was with Mister Huo. It was the old man who bid on the heavenly dragon cauldron in the auction room but who, in the end, let Lin Feng get it.

The red-haired old man, when he saw Lin Feng, smiled and nodded.

“Senior.” Said Lin Feng while slightly bowing, as a sign of respect.

“Lin Feng, you provided us with the recipe of the spirit blood pills, we need you to tell us, do we have to make the lotus leaves melt first and then add them to the mixture or not?” Asked Mister Huo, he was only concerned about his argument with the red-haired old man.

“Stop talking nonsense! If you melt them first and add them to mixture, would your soul be strong enough to control the leaves so that their essence spreads evenly in the concoction? If the pills are not perfectly balanced with all the ingredients, can you still

concoct Xuan level spirit blood pills? Said the red-haired old man getting angry again.

When Lin Feng saw these two old men argue, he smiled. In that world, being able to exchange ideas while insulting each other, but remaining friendly was also an enviable thing, it could mean that a friendship had already reached a certain degree.

“Mister Huo, senior, I also did some research about that recipe but my pill concoction abilities are extremely basic. I’m not able to concoct spirit blood pills but I would like to have a try with the guidance from you, my seniors. We could see if Mister Huo’s suggestion works, even if there is no guarantee that it will work.” Said Lin Feng who made the red-haired old man frown.

“Lin Feng, who are you calling a senior? Call me Mister Chi, damn it! Maybe because you have never concocted pills before, but the more people doesn’t mean the merrier, it’s actually the opposite and can get chaotic. People synchronize their souls in perfect harmony. Concocting pills is an extremely rigorous process, each step of the procedure is of highest importance. One careless move and the whole thing would be lost. Besides, it can lead to the cauldron being damaged or destroyed.” Said the red-haired old man sounding solemn and respectful. One person was more appropriate than two when concocting pills.

“I know about that, obviously, but maybe I have a solution.” Said Lin Feng while smiling. Immediately after, he sat next to Mister Huo and Mister Chi, in front of the cauldron.

“You are two senior alchemists, you can feel the strength of a

soul.” Said Lin Feng. Immediately after, he closed his eyes. Mister Huo and Mister Chi glanced at each other and then immediately closed their eyes. They then all started releasing the strength of their soul and slowly let it flow out.

In a flash, Mister Huo and Mister Chi could feel the strength of each others souls, it seemed like there were two sets of eyes angrily staring at each other. Their souls were in the atmosphere but their souls were at odds. Every person was unique and would see things in their own way, it was impossible for two people to have perfectly identical beliefs and opinions, which was why it was difficult for several people to concoct pills together.

However, at that moment, an illusion slowly appeared. It was Lin Feng’s soul.

That bright illusion immediately wrapped up the two old men’s souls and in a flash, it seemed like their souls had entered another world. These three people’s souls seemed to be following the same pace and rhythm as if they were joined through a special connection.

The bright illusion moved their soul power into the cauldron. Mister Huo and Mister Chi could distinctly and clearly perceive what Lin Feng’s soul was doing as if it was their own soul, it was a mysterious and mystical moment.

At that moment, the light vanished from the atmosphere. That mysterious sensation vanished as well. Mister Huo and Mister Chi’s souls suddenly became at odds again. They recalled their souls back into their bodies and opened their eyes. They were both

looking at Lin Feng, they looked delighted.

“Earth Fusion!”

“Indeed, I have broken through the earth dimension.” Said Lin Feng while nodding. Mister Huo and Mister Chi remained silent for a while and then both burst into an insane laughter.

“Mister Huo, the fact that you have met Lin Feng is a stroke of luck. He knows the secret of earth fusion which even we could only dream of. Thanks to him, we can concoct at the same time, while maintaining the efficiency to a high level.” Said Mister Chi while smiling. Before, it was impossible for Mister Huo and Mister Chi to concoct pills together, but since Lin Feng had the power of earth fusion, they would be able to concoct pills together and their souls could work together. They could clearly divide the work without interfering with the other. This made the chance of errors occurring very low.

As alchemists, Lin Feng didn't need to beg them to accept working with him, it was a great chance for them to increase their knowledge and abilities by working together.

# Chapter 295: Generosity!

---

At that moment, Mister Huo and Mister Chi were not arguing anymore. Mister Huo nodded, smiled then said: “It’s a strike of luck indeed. Lin Feng has only been practicing cultivation for less than a decade. Yet he can already fuse with the earth he can also defeat cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer even though he only had the power of the eighth Ling Qi layer. In fact, I particularly look forward to seeing how strong and powerful he will be in the future.”

“Yes.” Said Mister Chi while nodding. Mister Huo had already told him about all the things which had happened in Celestial River. Lin Feng had been at the core of all these incidents. Lin Feng’s natural talent was rare. The so-called geniuses of the biggest sects couldn’t rival Lin Feng.

Such geniuses as Lin Feng maybe appeared once every millennium. If they didn’t die young, they usually reached the heavens.

Mister Chi looked was impatient to see an authentic genius grow up. That would indubitably be very exciting.

Lin Feng slightly smiled while shaking his head. He indeed had a high natural talent but for the time being, he wasn’t strong enough. There were so many people who were much stronger than him. He needed to be monstrously strong. If someday, he managed to reach the heavens and walked above the clouds while looking down at all living creatures, what a mighty and epic moment would that be!

“Mister Huo, Mister Chi, let’s refine some Xuan level spirit blood pills together. We’ll first start heating the cauldron.” Said Lin Feng. Mister Huo and Mister Chi looked delighted. They both looked forward to concocting some pills altogether, the three of them. Refining some Xuan level pills of medium quality was extremely complex, even though Mister Chi and Mister Huo had been arguing, they also didn’t really intend to refine Xuan level pills of medium quality.

But Lin Feng had opened their eyes and it was like a ray of sunshine through the clouds, it seemed like nothing was impossible.

If Mister Huo and Mister Chi had concocted pills, they would only have been able to concoct Xuan level pills of lower quality, but since the earth fusion enabled them to be in symbiosis, the level of the pills could be increased significantly. They were, of course, willing to give it a try.

Mister Huo and Mister Chi turned Lin Feng.

“Is everything ready?” Asked Lin Feng, immediately after, the two old men nodded.

Lin Feng closed his eyes and entered in the mysterious dimension which enabled him to fuse with the earth. The strength of his soul emerged and invaded the entire atmosphere. That strength wrapped up the strength of the two old men’s souls and immediately after moved into the cauldron.



A fireball appeared and embraced the cauldron, boiling the spiritual herbs which were inside.

“Fiery herbs.” Said Mister Huo sounding indifferent. Mister Chi understood what that meant and then his body faintly shook and then some pure Qi strength moved into the cauldron breaking apart the fiery herbs and evenly spreading them in the concoction.

At that moment, Lin Feng was responsible for making sure that their souls remained on the same wavelength. Mister Huo was in charge of maintaining the fire while Mister Chi was in charge of the concoction.

Every single step had to be carried out rigorously. The smell of the pills slowly started invading the entire atmosphere. The odor around the cauldron was getting more and more intense.

“Sanguine flames!” Said Mister Huo after a while in a low voice. Mister Chi had already prepared everything. A long blood-red thread spread in the air and moved into the cauldron.

“A thousand lotus leaves!” Shouted Mister Huo. Immediately after, a thousand lotus leaves moved towards the cauldron. The thousand lotus leaves couldn’t be cooked at the same speed though because of the fire.

“I will help you.” Said Mister Chi in a low voice. His incredibly strong soul came to wrap up the leaves and dispersed them evenly in above the fire, enabling them to gradually melt into the

sanguine flames.

That part was very difficult but was crucial as well. At that moment, Mister Huo and Mister Chi were anxiously frowning. They released the entire strength of their souls which made cold sweat unceasingly drip from their bodies. It was consuming all of their soul strength and pushing them to the limit.

At that moment, the lotus leaves were starting to slide to the side. Mister Huo and Mister Chi started shaking. Had they failed?

At that moment, the great soul, which had been wrapping up theirs, disappeared as well. In a flash, the wonderful feeling, which had invaded their hearts before, disappeared. Hopelessness replaced their positive feelings. Their strength wasn't sufficient to refine Xuan level pills of medium quality. They didn't control the strength of their soul with enough mastery. Maybe after breaking through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer, they would be able to achieve their aim.

The strength of their souls had already come out of the cauldron, however, at that moment, the strength of a soul kept moving into the cauldron. It wrapped up the thousand lotus leaves and put them into the sanguine flames. A bright and resplendent red light emerged in the atmosphere. It almost looked like the lotus leaves were about to blossom. It was splendid.

“It's Lin Feng, he hasn't given up.”

Mister Huo and Mister Chi's hearts were pounding. They

released the strength of their soul once again. One took control of the spiritual herbs and the other took control of the temperature control. After a brief moment, all the spiritual herbs had melted. At that moment, bright red lotus flowers had appeared on the lotus leaves. It was absolutely gorgeous.

“Close!” Shouted Mister Huo. The lotus flowers slowly closed themselves, immediately after, the fire lost in intensity. The smell of the pills was getting stronger and stronger. A bright and resplendent red light was illuminating the atmosphere and kept revolving above the mouth of the cauldron.

“Mister Chi!” Shouted Mister Huo. He then yelled again, his voice was making the atmosphere vibrate: “Finish the pill!”

“BOOM!” A bright and resplendent red light burst from the cauldron. Mister Chi had anticipated this already. He jumped up in the air breaking through the ceiling, abruptly raised his hand and grabbed something within the red light. He immediately came back down and opened the palm of his hand. Amazingly, a small oval object appeared. It was illuminated by a red light which kept fluttering around it.

“It’s finished.”

“It’s a success.”

The three of them suddenly looked truly excited. They had worked together relying on three very strong cultivators’ strength. They had all poured endless effort into this process and become

closer because of it.

It sounded simple but concocting Xuan level spirit blood pills had sucked up a lot of their energy. Besides, at that moment, Mister Huo and Mister Chi felt like he was going to collapse.

“Mister Huo, this time, Lin Feng is the one who has used the most strength to concoct that Xuan level spirit blood pill. He is also the one who has provided us with the recipe. Finally, at the most crucial moment, he is also the one saved the situation. If he hadn’t been there, we wouldn’t have been able to refine that spirit blood pill. Therefore, it belongs to Lin Feng, what do you think?” Said Mister Chi. They had only prepared the ingredients to concoct the pill. Besides, obtaining one pill was already an exceptional success for them, let alone making more.

“I, of course, have no objection to that. The pill belongs to Lin Feng.” Said Mister Huo while smiling and nodding.

When Lin Feng heard them, a warm feeling invaded his heart. In the continent, there were many evildoers who constantly plotted against other people but there were also many people who were very kind and who were honest and sincere to others. Mister Huo and Mister Chi belonged to the second category of people. That pill was Xuan level spirit blood pill of medium quality. It would have been incredibly useful to them, particularly if it helped them advance before a potentially fatal battle but they preferred giving it to Lin Feng.

Of course, it was because they were very honest. Besides, Mister Huo and Mister Chi were very good friends already and neither

would disagree.

Lin Feng smiled and shook his head: “Mister Huo, Mister Chi. The three of us being together to concoct the pills was absolutely essential. This is the result of our team work and it is a success for us as a group. Nobody has more merit than the other. As far as the pill recipe is concerned, I had already promised it to Mister Huo so it doesn’t count. Therefore, it is not my recipe and the pill does not belong to me.”

Lin Feng refused to take the spirit blood pill.

If he wanted to kill people, he used his sword.

But if people were kind to him, he was happy to make friends with them.

“No, in terms of strength, that pill is very beneficial to you.” Said Mister Huo while shaking his head.

“Mister Huo, that pill would be very beneficial to me, however it would be better if one of you took it. With my current strength, taking the pill would be a waste. I would not be able to absorb the full power of the pill. It would be better if one of you took it, if you become stronger, that will also help me.”

Lin Feng once more declined the two old men’s offer. Actually, Lin Feng was just stating facts. A cultivator of the Ling Qi layer taking a Xuan level pill of medium quality was a waste, he would

not be able to absorb even half of its power.

“Mister Huo, you can take the pill.” Said Mister Chi not trying to convince Lin Feng anymore. Instead, he was giving it to Mister Huo.

But Mister Huo also shook his head and said: “Old friend, even though you are not as good as me at concocting pills, you are still stronger than me, this pill is for you, it would be more appropriate for you to take it.”

“Stop talking nonsense! Since when am I not as good as you at concocting pills?” Said Mister Chi angrily.

“If you’re not taking it, you can try to give it to Lin Feng again.” Said Mister Huo with a disdainful expression on his face which made Lin Feng smile wryly. How come these two were talking about concocting ability again....?

“I don’t know, but, Mister Huo, Mister Chi, that pill must be taken as soon as possible for maximum potency. It doesn’t matter if you are not interested.” When Lin Feng finished talking, he immediately made an eat gesture to them by placing his fingers to his mouth, Mister Huo and Mister Chi looked at each other and both immediately burst into a fit of laughter, at the same time.

## Chapter 296: Join Him Before His Success!

---

After Lin Feng had left, Mister Huo and Mister Chi remained in the room where they were concocting the pills.

“Old friend seriously, you are younger than me, yet your cultivation level is higher than mine. You are already at the peak of the third Xuan Qi layer and your natural talent is extremely high. These spirit blood pills increase the strength of the blood vessels and make the soul much stronger. If you take it, you would have high chance of breaking through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer. Even in a city as vast as Celestial River, we would still have absolute power.”

Mister Huo was looking at Mister Chi in a solemn and respectful way. “Therefore, old friend, we shouldn’t fight again.”

Mister Chi was a bit surprised. He remained silent for a moment and finally nodded while saying: “Alright.”

“Old friend, don’t be so serious. In the future, with Lin Feng’s natural talent and the earth fusion. We will have even more good pills, do you think that I will not take any in the future?”

“Huh?” Mister Chi was a bit surprised. He was staring at Mister Huo and said: “What you mean is.....”

Mister Huo slightly nodded and said: “You guessed right, I am getting ready to follow Lin Feng.”

“Follow Lin Feng!” Mister Chi’s pupils shrank. Lin Feng had broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer but Mister Huo was a strong cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer. Surprisingly, he wanted to follow Lin Feng.

“Indeed, follow Lin Feng.” Said Mister Huo sounding absolutely serious. He then said, sounding solemn and respectful; “Old friend, deep in your heart, you’re also able to evaluate Lin Feng’s ability to concoct pills.”

Mister Chi frowned and then said while nodding: “Earth fusion, that exceptional soul strength and Lin Feng’s level of talent, his destiny is to become a great alchemist.”

“You’re wrong, old friend.” Said Mister Huo while shaking his head.

“I’m wrong?”

“Indeed, you are wrong. His earth fusion, his amazing soul strength, he’s not only good for concocting pills. Lin Feng is extremely good at everything. Provided that he’s willing to do something, he always manages to master it. He can become a monstrously strong cultivator. He can become an alchemist, a blacksmith, a commander, anything! He only has to be willing to do something and he’ll be able to achieve it. If we are patient, we will see incredibly wonderful things happen.”

Mister Huo was speaking slowly. Mister Chi’s eyes were



twinkling. Indeed, with the earth fusion and his incredible soul strength, Lin Feng would be able to accomplish anything, only relying on his monstrous talent.

“Old friend, you have observed Lin Feng’s behaviour and ability with your own eyes, he is worth trusting. You know, we may be cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer but we are not that young anymore. We might not be able to have any more breakthroughs in this lifetime. Our lifespan is not limitless. Nowadays, we have a certain reputation in Celestial River but it also has its limits and will eventually fade. Following Lin Feng will provide us with many new opportunities.”

When Mister Chi heard Mister Huo, he shivered. Indeed, ordinary people had a life expectancy of a hundred years. For people of the Qi and Ling Qi layers, provided that they were strong and healthy, could usually hope to live until a hundred and fifty years old. Besides, cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer could live to the age of two hundred years old but that was the maximum. However, for those who could become amazingly strong cultivators, it was a different story, they could live until the age of five hundred years old. Such cultivators could often reach the heavens on the path of cultivation after three hundred years.

Even though Mister Huo and Mister Chi had a prestigious status in Celestial River, but on the scale of the continent, they were nobodies. Besides, sooner or later, they would reach their limit then become weaker and they wouldn’t have the opportunity to improve their cultivation anymore.

“Following someone strong and making them stronger is easy,

but providing help when it is needed the most is difficult. Old friend, what Lin Feng needs now is assistants. If we follow him, he will be truly grateful. Besides, on the day when Lin Feng reaches the heavens, if you only want to help him become even greater at that moment, will he pay attention to you?”

Mister Huo was speaking slowly: “Old friend, we cannot wait for Lin Feng to become extremely powerful to follow him, now, we have a great opportunity and it will enable us to obtain some power and influence too. We have the opportunity to follow a genius, isn’t that formidable? Besides, if we follow Lin Feng, we might get the chance to become stronger cultivators and not have to worry about our lifespan.”

“Wait for Lin Feng to be influential and then follow him....” Whispered Mister Chi... “Could we really become stronger and no longer await our death...?”

“Alright, old friend, take your time to think about it. First, take a spirit blood pill to break through to the next layer. I will help you absorb it.” Said Mister Huo interrupting Mister Chi’s train of thought. Mister Chi nodded and said: “Alright.”

When they finished talking, the two old men walked to the secret room.

A month had passed, and Celestial River was going through some turbulent times.

In the western part of Celestial River, there were some of the

strongest cultivators of the Hao Yue Sect. In the northern part, there were some amazingly strong cultivators of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, besides, there were even some extremely strong cultivators who had come from other distant places. For example, there were some extremely strong cultivators from the Luo Xia Sect, the Imperial City, the Wan Shou Sect, the Yu Clan and the Imperial Clan. All of these groups of people had sent people to Celestial River.

Apart from these people, there were also some unknown people, whose influence was unknown. The entire city of Celestial River had been encircled. It was only possible to get into the city but leaving was impossible. No matter who, they couldn't take half a step outside of the ancient city of Celestial River.

Everybody only had one goal, obtain the heavenly dragon cauldron, one of the ten legendary cauldrons.

It was a treasure which dated back to the ancient times but nobody knew exactly how useful it was. But since it had become one of the ten legendary cauldrons, it probably was an incredible treasure.

That object didn't belong to the history of Xue Yue but to the history of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. If some people in the continent knew that one of the ten legendary cauldrons was in Celestial River, it would turn into a bloodbath.

Apart from Xue Yue cultivators, if people other countries learnt that the precious treasure was in Xue Yue, they would also send forces to take it.

At that moment, in Celestial River, in a thatched hut, there was a silhouette wearing a bamboo hat. That person was wearing ragged clothes and was sitting on the ground. Their head was hanging low.

However, an evil light was flashing in the person's eyes.

“A bunch of bastards!” Said that person in an evil voice. The person's eyes were dark green and looked extremely cold.

The person was the one who had obtained the heavenly dragon cauldron, Mo Cang Lan.

After everything happened, he hadn't thought that the situation would turn out so difficult. After Mo Cang Lan obtained the ancient cauldron, his escape had been obstructed by a myriad of people who wanted to kill him. He wanted to rush out of Celestial River but he had nearly been killed. Later on, more and more strong cultivators had been gathering around the city. Mo Cang Lan had no possibility of escape, he was completely encircled.

At that moment, he was severely injured. Even though he had been injured, he had also killed a certain number of his pursuers.

These days, Mo Cang Lan was like a beggar who nobody wanted to be associated with. He was chased by a myriad of people who wanted to kill him. He was under extreme pressure.

Mo Cang Lan was breathing heavily, pure Qi was revolving around his body. His Qi was unstable. During that short time, he swallowed an incredible quantity of pure Qi but horrible things were progressively approaching him, it seemed like oblivion was awaiting.

At that moment, Mo Cang Lan frowned, an evil expression flashed in his eyes. In the distance, some people were moving towards him.

“Sister, there is a thatched hut there, let’s go and rest there.” Said a girl. Immediately after, everybody started walking towards the hut.

Mo Cang Lan was in corner, he was dispirited. A short moment after, three beautiful silhouettes entered the thatched hut.

“Sister, look, there’s somebody here, let’s switch to another place.” Said the younger girl in a soft voice.

“Why would we? Let’s make him get the hell out of here.” Said the other one aggressively. Immediately after, she arrived on Mo Cang Lan’s side and said, sounding ice-cold: “We belong to the Luo Xia Sect and need to have a rest. Leave and find another place to stay.”

“Switch to another place?” Said Mo Cang Lan with a strange expression on his face. He slowly raised his head. His face was filled with an evil expression which made the three people shiver. Their facial expressions drastically changed.

“Slash, slash!” Several vines appeared in the air, in a flash, the girl’s body was constricted by the vines, which were sucking the blood and flesh from under her skin.

“Ahhhh.....” A horrible shriek spread in the air. The two other people started running away but in a flash, another vine moved towards one of the girls and firmly wrapped around her body.

“Don’t kill me.....” Desperately shouted that girl. Immediately after, her body turned into a pile of skin and bones which hit the floor.

Two girls had already been killed. From the three girls, there was only one left.

“Mo Cang Lan, surprisingly, you’re here.” Said a cold voice. Immediately after, the thatched hut was completely frozen. Mo Cang Lan was shivering, he was unable to deal with the younger girl.

“Boom!” An ice Qi rushed into the thatched hut and Mo Cang Lan immediately tried to leave.

“Mo Cang Lan, I’ve been chasing you for such a long time, you already want to escape?” Said that ice-cold voice.

“Bing..... He..... Teng!” When the young girl heard these incredibly evil shouts, she immediately sat down onto the ground.

When she saw her two sisters' corpses, her body started shaking in grief.

## Chapter 297: The Luo Xia Sect

---

At that moment, a person entered the now empty thatched hut.

The young girl slightly calmed down. She raised her head and looked at the silhouette who had just entered the thatched hut. That person was wearing a monstrous bronze mask. The girl was so terrified that her hands dug into the ground. She kept crawling backwards. The pair of eyes behind the bronze mask looked swift and fierce, ice-cold, but they didn't look at the young girl at all, as if the person was lost in thoughts.

“Mo Cang Lan and Bing He Teng are here, surprisingly. Besides, it seems like Mo Cang Lan still has the heavenly dragon cauldron. Bing He Teng has been chasing him.” Thought Ba Dao. That thatched hut wasn't far from the place where Lin Feng and him were staying. Mister Huo's residence was very close to this place.

He was walking near the thatched hut and had sensed the cold Qi, he quickly approached and then he had immediately heard Mo Cang Lan shout Bing He Teng's name.

In the distance, another voice spread in the atmosphere which surprised Ba Dao and made him shiver. He jumped away, he didn't feel like creating more trouble.

“Stay there!” Said an ice-cold voice. At the moment when Ba Dao was getting ready to leave the thatched hut, a violent energy oppressed his body. Then someone punched through the air and the energy transformed into a blade which bombarded the



atmosphere.

Extremely loud explosion sounds spread through the atmosphere. The thatched was already wrecked. Ba Dao's body was completely oppressed and fell down onto the ground.

There was a man in front of him who glanced at Ba Dao. It was a young man. Immediately after, he looked at the two corpses as well as the young girl sitting on the ground.

"Your methods are cruel and evil." Said the young man sounding ice-cold while releasing deadly Qi.

"I didn't kill them." Said Ba Dao sounding cold and detached but his interlocutor didn't pay attention to him and his deadly Qi was becoming even denser.

"Do you think that I would believe you?" Said the young man sounding ice-cold. "You kill my two sister disciples and want to do evil things to my other sister disciple. I caught you red handed and now you want to escape?"

"He didn't kill them. " said the girl sitting on the ground while standing up. She looked at the young man in an ice-cold way. Fellow disciples? A moment ago, her brother disciple was near the thatched hut, he should have noticed that her two sisters being killed but at the moment when they shouted for help, he did not come to help. He had just arrived after Ba Dao entered the hut. That was her brother disciple, how ridiculous!

The young man couldn't deal with the murderer so he wanted to use Ba Dao as a scapegoat.

“Sister, don't worry, since I am here, you don't need to be afraid of being bullied. Besides, I will avenge our two sisters.” Just as the young girl had guessed, that young man really wanted to make Ba Dao a scapegoat. If he and his sister came out safe and sound while the two others had been killed, how would he be able to explain why he hadn't stopped the murderer? Wouldn't he lose face?

“Huh?” Ba Dao frowned. That young girl guessed right, that young man intended, to make him as a scapegoat. Was it that easy though?

“Since you want to kill him, what can I do? But I know that he hasn't killed them.” Said the young girl looking disgusted.

“You don't know how to differentiate good from bad.” Said the young man. His facial expression looked strict and rigid. He then added: “If you had been raped and killed by him, isn't revenge important?”

“Wu Gang, you're really shameless!” That young girl looked slightly pale and her face was distorted. At the same time, Ba Dao realized what was going on as well. That guy wanted to kill him.

“Yun Xi, you are so naive. You're not prepared to accept some things but I like you that way, you're so innocent. Unfortunately, the only thing we can have is a one night stand, you are not wife material.” Said Wu Gang while smiling coldly. He had always been

interested in Yun Xi but she had never been interested in him. Proud and ambitious as he was, he was uncomfortable not getting what he wanted. However, he now had the opportunity to make his evil thoughts come to reality at that moment.

When Yun Xi heard Wu Gang, her face turned deathly pale. He was really shameless.

“Sister, don’t worry, I will kill him first and then I will take care of you.” Said Wu Gang while smiling. Immediately after, he looked at Ba Dao in an ice-cold way, his eyes were filled with murderous intentions.

Ba Dao remained silent. A light flashed and his Moon-Breaking blade appeared in his hand. A piercingly cold and extremely brutal energy emerged from the blade.

“You’re not weak, seventh Ling Qi layer and your weapon is a spiritual weapon of higher quality, however, as before, you have run into a dead end.” Said Wu Gang while smiling coldly. He was one of the most outstanding disciples of the Luo Xia Sect, he had broken through to the ninth Ling Qi layer.

His silhouette flickered and he then took a huge step. A illusion on his side transformed into opaque rosy clouds which filled the atmosphere. It was endless, mysterious and unfathomable, it was the Sunset Clouds skill.

“Slash!” Shouted Ba Dao.

Ba Dao's blade lacerated the air, it seemed like the atmosphere was being torn apart. After that, his blade fell down onto the opponent's attack. It seemed like the atmosphere was torn apart. After that, that blade lacerated the endless and mysterious energy. It felt like it that blade was easily cutting through the energy, like his blade was cutting air.

The Sunset Clouds skill was a Di level skill. Sunset clouds emerged from the cultivator's palm. It was vast and boundless but very difficult to carry out. However, in case of success, it was a terrifying attack.

“BOOM!”

The enemy's hand landed on Ba Dao's body which made him groan in pain, and his body was projected backwards. That cultivator had broken through to the ninth Ling Qi layer and was close to the Xuan Qi layer. He could already control a meagre amount of pure Qi and was difficult to fight against.

“In Xue Yue, the Luo Xia Sect doesn't have the greatest influence but if anyone dares look down on my sect. Except for the eight high-officials of Xue Yue, no matter who it is, I despise them. No need to say that it especially applies to such worthless and insignificant people such as you.” Said Wu Gang sounding arrogant. He was looking at Yun Xi while talking as if he had been talking to her but she didn't care about him at all. How ridiculous!

“Is that so?” Said a voice which echoed through the atmosphere. It was extremely distinct yet nobody was visible.

Wu Gang frowned and said coldly: “Show yourself!”

Ba Dao was smiling, except for the eight high-officials, Wu Gang despised everybody else? Very quickly, Wu Gang was going to realize that he was a fool.

“You dare say such arrogant things, and now you don’t even know the location of the person you are speaking down to. How ridiculous.” Said Ba Dao coldly when he saw that Wu Gang looked so arrogant.

“Shut the hell up. It’s probably a shameless liar just like you, just another shameless person.” Said Wu Gang sounding cold and detached, but when finished talking, his heart twitched. He abruptly turned his head around and a distorted expression appeared on his face.

Someone had been standing directly behind him, that person had appeared in absolute silence.

That person looked clear and had limpid eyes. That person was a bit younger than Wu Gang. He looked handsome as well, his face didn’t contain the least bit of shamelessness.

“Who are you?” Asked Wu Gang to Lin Feng coldly. He didn’t recognize Lin Feng. Lin Feng gave a mysterious impression to Wu Gang. Lin Feng looked indifferent and carefree like a gentle breeze, as if Lin Feng was just an illusion on the wind.

“You despise everyone who looks down on your sect except for the eight high-officials. Since it’s like that, there is no need to tell you anything, the only thing that you need to know is that we are enemies, that’s enough.”

Lin Feng was smiling. A moment before, Wu Gang had said it himself, except for the eight high-officials, he despised everybody else.

“Even though I, Wu Gang, am very proud, is not willing to make an enemy of others without reason. If there is the possibility, I prefer making friends.” Said Wu Gang. Wu Gang couldn’t sense Lin Feng’s presence so he was feeling unsafe.

“How shameless!” Cursed Yun Xi. Wu Gang was really shameless. She felt disgusted by him.

“He is my friend. You wanted to kill him a moment ago. Are we friends or enemies, you tell me?” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly and pointing at Ba Dao. Wu Gang enjoyed using his power to bully those weaker than him, well Lin Feng could do the same.

“I’m giving you face, don’t be shameless. I am the second best core disciple of the Luo Xia Sect. What do you intend to do, acting so arrogantly in front of me?” Wu Gang couldn’t reply to Lin Feng’s question so he immediately became aggressive and announced his status. After mentioning the Luo Xia Sect, Lin Feng would definitely be afraid.

“I’m so scared!” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. His silhouette flickered and he disappeared from his original position. When Lin Feng reappeared, he was within arms reach of Wu Gang.

“Die!” Furiously shouted Wu Gang. His Sunset Clouds attack appeared again. The atmosphere was illuminated by rosy clouds, it looked incredible. The attack was just as opaque and unfathomable as before.

“However, the endless rosy clouds were extremely distinct for Lin Feng who was in fusion with the earth. He shook his finger out of which sword energies emerged and whistled in the air. He immediately attacked Wu Gang with his finger.

“Psh!”

“Ahhhhhhh...” A horrible shriek spread in the atmosphere. Wu Gang’s body was projected back of ten meters. His facial expression looked glum. At that moment, in the middle of his palm, blood was pouring down. A moment before, Lin Feng’s sword-like finger had immediately pierced the palm of his hand. What a terrifying sharpness!

“Except for the eight high-officials, you despise everybody else, as expected, you are a real genius!” Said Lin Feng while laughing disdainfully on the tone of a joke.

## Chapter 298: The Scapegoat

---

When Yun Xi saw that Lin Feng had defeated Wu Gang's Sunset Clouds so easily and had even injured him, her beautiful eyes started twinkling. How strong!

“Who the hell are you?” Wu Gang's palm was bleeding. He was evilly staring at Lin Feng. To which sect did Lin Feng belong? Why had he never heard about him before?

Even though he had just said that, except for the eight high-officials, he despised everybody, he was just exaggerating. His ego had made him say those words. But the disciples of the other sects who could rival him were actually very few. He was well aware that they were completely different from the person who was standing before him.

“You are Lin Feng?” At that moment, Yun Xi asked in a low voice.

Lin Feng's name was already famous in Celestial River. He was carefree and ruthless. He was eighteen years old but had defeated Bing Yuan, the Blade Elder Leng Yue, and he had even killed four cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. At the Luo Xia Sect, many disciples were talking about Lin Feng. Yun Xi had already heard about him a few times, trying to imagine what Lin Feng looked like.

She had imagined that Lin Feng was arrogant and rude but the young man who was standing there in front of her looked



handsome and delicate. However, his proud temperament reminded her of the rumours surrounding Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at Yun Xi and smiled. He looked handsome. He slightly nodded at her. Lin Feng's smile made Yun Xi's heartbeat accelerate.

“He nodded, it's really Lin Feng.”

Since ancient times, beautiful women liked heroic men. At the Luo Xia Sect, many girls wanted to see Lin Feng, that powerful and elegant young man. At that moment, Lin Feng's smile had the same effect as a gentle breeze on Yun Xi's body.

In comparison with Lin Feng, Wu Gang looked extremely ugly. He was far from being able to rival Lin Feng in looks.

“Lin Feng!” Wu Gang was stupefied. When he heard that name, he suddenly looked terrified.

Lin Feng was able to kill cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. Besides, he had killed Bing Yuan of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. Therefore, Lin Feng wouldn't hesitate for a moment when killing him, who belonged to the Luo Xia Sect.

“Lin Feng, there is a misunderstanding.” Said Wu Gang while smiling warmly. He suddenly forgot that he wanted to kill Lin Feng a moment before. His hand was even still bleeding from the wound.

“A misunderstanding?” Said Lin Feng with a cold smile on the corner of his mouth. “Ba Dao, is there a misunderstanding?”

“He and the girls belong to the Luo Xia Sect. Mo Cang Lan killed the two other girls. He perfectly knows about that. Because he cannot defeat Mo Cang Lan, he used me as a scapegoat. Besides, from his previous words it is clear that he was definitely planning to rape and kill the remaining girl, and then accuse me of doing it. He perfectly knew everything from the beginning. There is no misunderstanding.

Ba Dao’s voice sounded ice-cold which made Wu Gang’s facial expression turn glum.

“It is really a misunderstanding! I didn’t know that you were Lin Feng’s friend.” Continued Wu Gang while smiling.

“So what? You don’t think that it is shameful to come and use someone else as scapegoat. Now, I feel like killing you and that means I will kill you.” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. He then started walking slowly which made Wu Gang’s smile turn rigid.

“Lin Feng, nothing has to be set in stone. You can give me some conditions to live, besides, my sister disciple, Yun Xi, is pure and fresh. If you like her, you can play with her as you wish, what do you think?”

Wu Gang was slowly stepping backwards. He didn’t want to fight, his courage had already been crushed. He now knew Lin

Feng's identity, he didn't dare to fight anymore.

"You're so shameless." Said Lin Feng whose silhouette flickered just like an illusion. At that moment, Wu Gang's hand shook as well. An incredible quantity of poisonous Qi invaded the atmosphere which surprised Lin Feng, who immediately stopped. He raised his hand and the poisonous Qi immediately dispersed. However, at that moment, Wu Gang suddenly grabbed Yun Xi and was staring at Lin Feng.

"Lin Feng, look at my sister disciple, she is so fresh and pure. Besides, she likes you. Wouldn't it be a waste if she died?"

Lin Feng was surprised. He hadn't thought that he was that kind of person. He had taken Yun Xi as a hostage to threaten Lin Feng. What did he intend to do? Yun Xi was also his fellow disciple. She wasn't Lin Feng's friend. However, Wu Gang was taking her as a hostage, Lin Feng was really startled.

Yun Xi hadn't thought that Wu Gang would do such a thing either. What Wu Gang was doing was utterly illogical. However, Yun Xi was looking at Lin Feng with pleading eyes. She had already seen Mo Cang Lan kill her two sister disciples and then the ugly Wu Gang had shown himself. She felt hopeless, lonely and desperate. She wished someone would show her some sympathy and consideration.

The daring young hero whom she had wished would come and save her had appeared. Besides, he was very handsome. That was like a ray of light in her heart. She had a strange sensation though as if she had been floating through the air. She had the impression

that her heart had become vast and boundless. Taking advantage of a woman who was lost in her heart was extremely easy.

“How shameless!” Said Lin Feng coldly while looking at Wu Gang.

“So what? Lin Feng, surely you can’t stand seeing such a pure and beautiful flower fade? Look how delicate her skin is. She’s just turned seventeen.” Said Wu Gang, who ignored Lin Feng’s words. He just kept talking. An ice-cold looking blade suddenly pressed against Yun Xi’s face.

When Lin Feng saw the girl’s pure and beautiful eyes, he felt like he couldn’t leave her and had to do something, even though he didn’t even know her.

“Hehe. The power of a woman’s beauty is impressive. Sister, don’t you always talk about Lin Feng? Now, it seems that Lin Feng is also interested in you. Look how good he is to you. It seems like you two are a perfect match.” Said Wu Gang while slowly pulling back Yun Xi.

Yun Xi had mixed feelings. Wu Gang was her fellow disciple and acted so shamelessly and evil. Wu Gang was using her life to threaten a stranger. Lin Feng and her didn’t know each other, but Lin Feng wasn’t going to attack Wu Gang to save her. She was in a difficult position.

Far away in the distance, some silhouettes were moving towards the hut. When Lin Feng saw that there were some silhouettes

flying through the sky, he frowned. Besides, Wu Gang looked delighted.

His dagger suddenly disappeared. He kept dragging Yun Xi backwards. He shouted loudly: “The elders have arrived at the perfect time! Someone wants to kill us, the disciples of the Luo Xia Sect!”

These people who were coming precisely belonged to the Luo Xia Sect. In a flash, they arrived on Wu Gang’s side.

“Wu Gang, what’s going on?” Asked that person coldly while glancing at the corpses on the ground.

“Elder, Lin Feng is a criminal and attacked me by surprise. He also killed some of our disciples. He also planned to rape Yun Xi, my fellow disciple. Luckily, I risked my life to protect her, preventing Lin Feng from attacking. I am lucky that you arrived at the critical moment.” Said Wu Gang which made the people of the Luo Xia Sect coldly stare at Lin Feng.

“Elder, Wu Gang is shameless. The one who killed my two fellow disciples was someone else. Besides, the one who wanted to rape me is Wu Gang. He just took a dagger and put it against my face, threatening Lin Feng.” Said Yun Xi honestly. Wu Gang was way too shameless and trying accuse others.

“Sister, I took you to threaten Lin Feng? What is the nature of your relationship with Lin Feng? I know that Lin Feng’s words made you confused but in front of the elders, you don’t need to

lie.” Said Wu Gang coldly. Yun Xi’s face turned deathly pale, she was speechless.

“Yun Xi, stop causing trouble!” Said the great elder sounding indifferent. Yun Xi was astonished. She looked at him and said: “You don’t believe me either! It’s the truth, it was really Wu Gang who did all these things!”

“Alright, shut up now!” Shouted the Great Elder. Yun Xi started shaking when she heard him. Besides, an indifferent smile appeared on Wu Gang’s face at the same time.

What a naive girl! Wu Gang was the genius of the Luo Xia Sect. He had been trained for many years in the sect. The Elder had obviously witnessed what had happened but was turning a blind eye to the truth. Besides, she wasn’t that important in the sect when compared with Wu Gang.

Besides, elders we all seniors, they didn’t need to know any of the details. If there was a problem, They would always take Wu Gang’s side and protect him.

The Great Elder looked at Lin Feng with an ice-cold glare.

“Lin Feng, how audacious! You dared kill members of the Luo Xia Sect!” Said another elder coldly. Immediately after, several silhouettes flickered and the members of the Luo Xia Sect encircled Lin Feng.

When Lin Feng saw these people, a cold expression appeared in his eyes. A moment before, Wu Gang had used him as a scapegoat and now these people, because of Wu Gang's lies, wanted to kill him too?

Lin Feng understood things much better than Yun Xi, how could he not understand the morally corrupt actions of these people?

Nonetheless, was killing Lin Feng really that easy?

# Chapter 299: Powerful Energy Filling the Atmosphere

---

“Elders, you must all stop immediately.” Said Yun Xi while looking at the elders surrounding Lin Feng. She looked nervous and yelled: “This really has nothing to do with Lin Feng. How can you all be so unfair?!”

“Arghh.....”

“Shut up!”

Yun Xi’s body flew away and crashed into the ground. She raised her head and saw that she was struck by her own master. She felt extremely cold in her heart, cold to the extent that it was piercing to the bones.

She devoted her life to the sect, rarely leaving it to the extent that it had almost become her permanent home.

She had little experience in the real world, therefore, there were many things which she didn’t understand. In her heart, she had always had the feeling that the sect was a place where she would always be safe.

But at that moment, her heart had been invaded with bitter feelings. She had just seen the true face of her sect. She had seen the coldness and cruelty of these people. That coldness was enough to make her feel hopeless. At that moment, Yun Xi’s world had



been crushed. The sect was no longer the same in her heart. She wasn't seeing any of the warmth, only desolate coldness.

When she saw her master's cold and indifferent expression, she finally realized that that world wasn't as simple and pure as she thought. The people of the Luo Xia Sect weren't as kind and caring as she thought.

A single teardrop slowly ran down her cheek. It was a tear of hopelessness. She had also realized that no matter what she said, no matter how loud she shouted, nobody would pay attention to her.

When Lin Feng saw Yun Xi's teardrop, he sighed. Yun Xi was way too naive. She had never understood that there were evil people running her sect. That was the hypocrisy of the world.

It wasn't about who was in the right or wrong, it was more about understanding the other party's real objective.

"Sister, because of a stranger you're now suffering, and you surprisingly dared humiliate an elder in front of everybody." Said Wu Gang indifferently.

Yun Xi looked at him in an ice-cold way. Everything was happening because of Wu Gang. He was such a disgusting person but Wu Gang didn't care about her opinion. Wu Gang was just thinking that it would be a pity if he didn't have the opportunity to play with such a beautiful girl.

“Elders, Lin Feng is a shameless enemy. Not only did he attack me by surprise but he has also killed two of our disciples and fooled Yun Xi. He is a worthless and disgusting animal! He must die!”

Wu Gang turned around and smiled coldly, his face was filled with murderous intentions.

“Indeed. That disgusting person must die! We must avenge our disciples!” said another elder immediately.

“Kill him! We’ll definitely kill him!” Said all the elders consecutively as if they were judges giving Lin Feng the death sentence. In their eyes, Lin Feng’s life was already in their hands, if they wanted to kill him, they could kill him.

Amongst these elders of the Luo Xia Sect, three of them were at the first Xuan Qi layer, two at the second Xuan Qi layer and one at the third Xuan Qi layer. In such circumstances, Lin Feng was unable to escape even if he grew wings.

Extremely swift and fierce sword Qi emerged and bombarded the atmosphere.

At that moment, a purple light shot high into the sky above Lin Feng’s head making him look like a ferocious warrior.

“What? He wants to fight?” The members of the Luo Xia Sect laughed coldly and joked: “He is a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer. Even if he relies on external factors to increase his cultivation

abilities, how could he resist our elders?”

“Yes, he just wants to die.”

A gigantic Qi emerged in the atmosphere. The cultivators of the Ling Qi layer all moved back and only those of the Xuan Qi layer continued surrounding Lin Feng.

They had all heard about that day when Lin Feng had fought against the Dream Pavilion and that he had killed four cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. Even though they had only broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer, they had probably been careless when dealing with him. At that moment, all the elders were surrounding Lin Feng, how could he resist?

“You still want to kill him, does that mean that you don’t believe me?” Said Yun Xi in a quiet voice. Was it that they didn’t believe her or that they chose to ignore her? They all knew the truth perfectly but it was much easier for them to just kill Lin Feng and settle the matter.

Yun Xi stood up and said to the elders: “Elders, I swear that my two fellow disciples were killed by an evil man whom we met when we went into the hut. He also wanted to kill me but at that moment, someone, whose name apparently was Bing He Teng, appeared, and then the man stopped paying attention to me. Then they both left.

“Wu Gang perfectly knows what happened but he doesn’t want to lose face. He wanted to find a scapegoat. He was planning to

rape me and kill me then blame the one in the bronze mask. Fortunately, Lin Feng appeared but Wu Gang shamelessly captured me as a hostage and threatened Lin Feng which is why Lin Feng didn't kill him. After that, all of you arrived. I would prefer death over living a lie."

"What a naive little girl."

"How foolish." All these people of the Luo Xia Sect were coldly staring at Yun Xi.

"Get lost!" Shouted a powerful voice that filled everyone's ears. It made Yun Xi's entire body shake.

"If you try to prevent us from avenging our sect members, we will bury you here with them!" Shouted an incredibly aggressive voice which made Yun Xi's heart pound faster. She had lost all hope.

It seemed like everything she had done had been useless.

"No problem, kill me too." Said Yun Xi. At that moment, a smile appeared on her face, a smile of agony. Suddenly, a deadly Qi emerged from her body. Everybody was surprised.

"It doesn't look good." Cried Lin Feng in alarm. His body flickered and he appeared behind Yun Xi's body. It was already too late though. Yun Xi groaned, she slammed the deadly Qi into her chest and blood gushed from her mouth. A flower, which had yet

to blossom, had already withered.

Lin Feng caught Yun Xi's body and his face turned deathly pale.

Yun Xi killed herself, surprisingly, she took her own life.

How foolish, what a naive young girl.

She was so young, she was only seventeen years old. She was supposed to be experiencing the most beautiful years of her life. However, because she had discovered how bitter reality really was, she couldn't stand it and killed herself. It shouldn't have ended that way.

The members of the Luo Xia Sect were astonished. Yun Xi's suicide was unexpected. However, they were only surprised for a few seconds and cold expressions quickly reappeared on their faces again. In their opinion, her death was insignificant. She had died, so what?

Yun Xi's body softly collapsed into Lin Feng's chest. Her head was raised. Blood was flowing out of her little mouth. Her naïve young eyes were looking at Lin Feng and she was still smiling.

"I'm sorry. I didn't have the chance to fight for you. All of this happened because of me." Lin Feng was wiping the blood from her mouth with the greatest care. He was unceasingly shaking his head.

When Lin Feng looked at her deathly pale smile, he could see that she was very beautiful and soft hearted. Unfortunately, the flower had chosen to wither over blossoming into a cruel world.

“I know that it is not because they don’t believe me, it is that they disdain my words. I couldn’t convince them. Therefore...Death was the only solution.”

Yun Xi’s voice gradually lost in intensity. Lin Feng raised his head and felt like he was going to cry.

He wasn’t like Yun Xi, he wasn’t naive. He was convinced that his efforts would bring him good luck. However, he had already experienced the bitterness of the cruelty of people in his past life.

“Lin Feng, I’m already a young woman and I have no one to love. Please grant me my first kiss.” Said. Yun Xi suddenly with a shy smile. Immediately after, she added: “Just consider this as the last wish of a fellow cultivator.”

“Alright.” Said Lin Feng while solemnly nodding. How could he refuse the last request of such a young and naive girl?

He slightly lowered his head and wiped away the blood as he softly kissed her warm lips. She looked beautiful and resplendent.

“So that’s what it feels like to kiss someone.” Yun Xi’s face slightly turned red. Immediately after, her beautiful naive eyes slowly closed.

When Lin Feng saw her close her eyes, he raised his head while looking to the sky to stop his tears and took a deep agonizing breath.

“KILL!”

“KILL! KILL! KILL!”

Lin Feng was shouting these words, his voice was extremely loud and filled with fury.

In the air, three silhouettes appeared and rushed towards him. An incredibly strong and powerful ice-cold Qi suddenly emerged in the atmosphere enveloping everybody. The powerful Qi made the ground vibrate.

That purple light was Lin Feng's signal for Mister Huo, Mister Chi, as well as Meng Qing. They had all seen the purple light and rushed to that location, it was just that they hadn't shown themselves until now.

When the people of the Luo Xia Sect sensed the terrifying energies, their hearts started pounding!

# Chapter 300: The Nightmare of the Luo Xia Sect

---

What a terrifying Qi! The people of the Luo Xia Sect were looking at the three people, who had just landed next to Lin Feng, which made them shake from head to toe.

They had heard that two strong cultivators stood on Lin Feng's side. There was the old man Mister Huo and a delicate-looking girl whose face was covered with a fine veil. But at that moment, there was one more person: Mister Chi. And besides, Mister Chi's Qi was terrifying.

“Mister Chi, Mister Huo, kill them, all of them.”

Lin Feng's Qi was getting even more brutal. Mister Chi and Mister Huo slightly nodded. Their terrifying Qi was getting more and more powerful, especially the Qi from Mister Chi. The strength of the Qi that he was releasing already exceeded that of the third Xuan Qi layer.

“Fourth Xuan Qi layer!” The elders of the Luo Xia Sect were suddenly feeling uneasy. They were furious. On Lin Feng's side, there was another powerful cultivator. He was even stronger than Mister Huo and the girl. He had broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer.

At the scale of the Xuan Qi layer, one layer already constituted a huge difference.



“How foolish!” Hideous facial expressions appeared on all these people’s faces. They wanted to kill Lin Feng? At this moment, they were the ones in danger.

“Lin Feng. She still has one breath left in her body. I will give her a pill. A miracle could still happen.” Said Mister Huo while putting a pill in Yun Xi’s mouth. Immediately after, the strength of the pure Qi spread through her body and his finger pressed between her eyebrows.

Lin Feng was stupefied. He could sense it. He was dumbstruck. Indeed, Yun Xi still had a breath in her lungs. She was extremely weak. A moment ago, Lin Feng’s heart had been filled with so much hatred and murderous intentions that he hadn’t noticed it.

“Mister Huo.” Said Lin Feng, whose eyes were filled with hope. A small light appeared between her eyebrows, it was pulsating. Then, Mister Huo took his finger off her head and looked at Lin Feng: “She will not die within the next seven days but the blood vessels are completely destroyed. She’s severely injured. She will not live past seven days.”

Lin Feng was dumbstruck and hastily replied: “Is there no solution?”

“There is one.” Said Mister Huo. He then remained silent for a moment and said, while frowning: “But only monstrously powerful pills can save her life.”

“Pills...” lights were flashing in Lin Feng’s eyes. Immediately after, he handed Yun Xi over to Meng Qing and said: “Meng Qing, take care of her.”

Meng Qing looked at Lin Feng, she was surprised, but immediately after she nodded and took Yun Xi in her arms.

After that Lin Feng handed Yun Xi over to Meng Qing, he turned around and stared at Wu Gang. His terrifying deadly Qi turned into a sword which immediately rushed towards Wu Gang. Wu Gang couldn’t help but move backwards, his face turned deathly pale.

He was terrified of Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked frightening. His deadly Qi was monstrous in power.

“If I don’t kill you, it means that justice doesn’t exist.” Said Lin Feng as his voice filled with killing intent. He then said: “Mister Chi, Mister Huo, kill them all. Sorry for the trouble.”

“It’s been a while since I last fought. I still haven’t enjoyed a good fight since I broke through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer.” Said Mister Chi while smiling. His silhouette flickered and in a flash he disappeared.

“Ahhhhhh.....” In a flash, a horrible shriek spread in the atmosphere. Mister Chi’s palm immediately crashed into an elder’s body. Immediately, that elder’s chest started burning and a black

mark appeared.

That elder was at the first Xuan Qi layer. He had just died!

The difference between a cultivator of the first Xuan Qi layer and the fourth Xuan Qi layer was enormous. There was a difference of three layers. It was a gigantic gap. The strength between layers was even more vast than the Ling Qi Layer. In a flash, the elder was killed.

The elders of the Luo Xia Sect were all incomparably pale. They were all cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, they were all treasures in their sect but at that moment, they could easily get killed at any moment.

Besides, there was one thing that scared them. A moment ago, Mister Chi had killed a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer in one strike, well, what about them?

A sensation of danger invaded their hearts. Maybe they made a mistake on that day.

“Everybody, act together and defeat the enemies!” Said the leader of the elders, who was the one at the third Xuan Qi layer.

But when he finished talking, a terrifying fireball appeared. Mister Huo was attacking him.

“Old friend, I’ll keep this one under control, you kill the others. I

will see how much time you need.” Said Mister Huo. He was going to fight against the cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer. The other ones had only broken through to the first and second Xuan Qi layer. Mister Chi would easily kill them all. He wouldn’t need much time to deal with them.

“Alright.”

Mister Chi nodded and took a huge step. An insanely violent pure Qi started spinning around his body which made everybody’s heartbeat accelerate.

What a monstrous ability. Mister Huo was going to take care of the elder at the third Xuan Qi layer so how would the others resist Mister Chi without him? They had no absolutely no hope. They would never be able to resist the power without the support of a stronger cultivator.

At that moment, Mister Chi was moving towards a cultivator of the first Xuan Qi layer. That person didn’t even try to release his Qi, he immediately tried to run away.

However, how could a cultivator at the first Xuan Qi layer be faster than one of the fourth Xuan Qi layer?

In a flash, a monstrous force descended from the sky. He abruptly turned his head around and immediately saw a brutal attack crash into him. Another cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer had just died!

Dread was invading their hearts at that moment. The cultivator of the fourth Xuan Qi layer was way too terrifying. Their hearts were filled with regret.

They regretted siding with Wu Gang and trying to kill Lin Feng, while letting Yun Xi die. Now, not only would they not have the power to kill Lin Feng, but instead Lin Feng was repaying their hostility several times over.

“Wu Gang, bastard!” Cursed the members of the Luo Xia Sect at that moment. That bastard had provoked Lin Feng and the consequences would be terrifying, they could all possibly die today because of it.

At that moment, a purple light was furiously circling Lin Feng’s body. At the same time, a terrifying sword energy rose into the air and then rushed towards Wu Gang.

Wu Gang’s heart was pounding violently. Lin Feng was terrifying, he looked like a death god.

In a flash the purple energy wrapped around a person in front of Wu Gang. The purple energy lifted the person into the air. His legs were frenetically moving above the ground but he was unable to escape.

Lin Feng’s hand was rushing through the air. The sword energy burst forth and a blood mark appeared between that person’s eyebrows. It looked like a sword had pierced through his head.

“Run, run.....!”

The other disciples were panic-stricken, they didn't want to fight at all.

The elders at the Xuan Qi layer were being slaughtered by Mister Chi. Besides, none of the disciples could fight against Lin Feng. If they couldn't escape, the only possibility was to die. It was a dead end for them.

“Escape?”

Lin Feng's deadly Qi became even more violent. His mouth looked distorted for a moment and then several hundred purple snakes appeared, which threw themselves at the escaping enemies, wrapping their bodies around the escaping disciples.

At that moment, in the air, a few silhouettes were violently struggling.

“Everybody will die!”

Lin Feng's voice sounded ice-cold to the extent that it was piercing through to the bones. He raised both his hands high up into the air and a sword appeared, it was made of pure Qi. It looked like the sword of a war god.

That sword was filled with deadly Qi, Sword Qi and battle energy. Besides, it was gigantic.

Lin Feng slowly rose into the air. His sword was dazzling and it suddenly shot through the air like a meteor. The entire atmosphere was consumed by a rain of blood as the sword slashed down.

One sword made of Qi was enough to kill all of them. There wasn't a single disciple left alive.

Battle noises were unceasingly spreading through the atmosphere. Wu Gang was looking at the corpses unceasingly falling onto the ground. His heart was violently pounding, and it was getting worse each time a new corpse hit the floor.

Everybody had died. Only one person was left: Lin Feng. He had meticulously killed everybody.

Wu Gang raised his head and looked at Lin Feng's face, it was filled with killing intent. Fear invaded Wu Gang's entire soul. He was hopeless and terrified.

"Don't kill me. I know that I was wrong....." said Wu Gang while frantically shaking his hand. He finally regretted that he tried to put the blame on Lin Feng. He had invited the fury of a god of death.

The arrogance had disappeared from his face, he also didn't have his evil smile anymore. Instead, there was only fear on his face. Everybody had died. All the elders of the Xuan Qi layer had died. Those of the Ling Qi layer had all been slaughtered under Lin

Feng's sword made of Qi.

“You know that you are wrong?” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. Was admitting that he was at fault enough?

“Didn't you say that I attacked you by surprise? Now, I will give you the chance to attack me.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. After seeing such a slaughter, how could Wu Gang still dare to fight? His body flickered and he immediately tried to escape.

After that, when Wu Gang's body was in mid air, a purple snake immediately wrapped around him and brought him back. He appeared in front of Lin Feng, who raised his head and saw Wu Gang, tied up.

“You want to run away?” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. He raised his sword, a horrible shriek spread through the air. Wu Gang's legs were both cut off to stop him running away.



# Table of Contents

## [Peerless Martial God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 201: The Officers](#)

[Chapter 202: The Black Guards](#)

[Chapter 203: The Celestial Sword Unit](#)

[Chapter 204: Assassin!](#)

[Chapter 205: The Prologue of Battle](#)

[Chapter 206: The Calamity](#)

[Chapter 207: No Choice but Death](#)

[Chapter 208: Night within the City](#)

[Chapter 209: The Ambush](#)

[Chapter 210: Annihilate the army](#)

[Chapter 211: Yan Yu Ping Sheng](#)

[Chapter 212: Long Chase](#)

[Chapter 213: Fearless](#)

[Chapter 214: Broken Bones](#)

[Chapter 215: Painful Love!](#)

[Chapter 216: Lack of Pure Qi](#)

[Chapter 217: The Mysteries of Cultivation](#)

[Chapter 218: Earth Fusion](#)

[Chapter 219: Foot of the Golden Zi Mountain](#)

[Chapter 220: Golden Rain fills the sky](#)

[Chapter 221: The Zi Government](#)

[Chapter 222: The Day of the Wedding](#)

[Chapter 223: The Forbidden Area](#)

[Chapter 224: The Princess' Tears](#)

[Chapter 225: Allowed to Hold a Sword](#)

[Chapter 226: Lin Feng's Sword](#)

[Chapter 227: Fury for the Princess!](#)

[Chapter 228: Purple Annihilation](#)

[Chapter 229: Sword of the Rising Sun](#)

[Chapter 230: The Resplendence of the Cross](#)

[Chapter 231: The Purple Lake](#)

[Chapter 232: Where is Lin Feng?](#)

[Chapter 233: The Final Day](#)  
[Chapter 234: The Strong Cultivator!](#)  
[Chapter 235: The Surplus Souls](#)  
[Chapter 236: The Zun Qi layer](#)  
[Chapter 237: Warmth in the Forbidden Area](#)  
[Chapter 238: Ruthless](#)  
[Chapter 239: The Purple Dragon Spirit](#)  
[Chapter 240: Encircling the Imperial City](#)  
[Chapter 241: The Orders](#)  
[Chapter 242: The Death of an Officer!](#)  
[Chapter 243: The Chi Xie Officer](#)  
[Chapter 244: Who's the Traitor?](#)  
[Chapter 245: Duan Tian Lang's Interrogation](#)  
[Chapter 246: The Marquis and His Fief](#)  
[Chapter 247: The New Officer](#)  
[Chapter 248: You Will Fight!](#)  
[Chapter 249: Lin Feng's Army](#)  
[Chapter 250: The Snow-Dragon Guards](#)  
[Chapter 251: She Must Be Blind!](#)  
[Chapter 252: The Fool!](#)  
[Chapter 253: The Tyrant](#)  
[Chapter 254: Back To Yangzhou City](#)  
[Chapter 255: Blade of the Wind!](#)  
[Chapter 256: Make Him Apologize!](#)  
[Chapter 257: The Apology](#)  
[Chapter 258: Identity!](#)  
[Chapter 259: Commit Suicide](#)  
[Chapter 260: The Annual Meeting](#)  
[Chapter 261: I, Lin Feng, Want To Die!](#)  
[Chapter 262: Kill Lin Feng!](#)  
[Chapter 263: Officer!](#)  
[Chapter 264: Regret and Resentment](#)  
[Chapter 265: The Terrible Loss!](#)  
[Chapter 266: Lin Feng Is Dangerous!](#)  
[Chapter 267: The Nine Palaces](#)  
[Chapter 268: Celestial River](#)  
[Chapter 269: The Blademaster](#)  
[Chapter 270: The Dream Pavilion](#)  
[Chapter 271: The Humiliation](#)

[Chapter 272: The Recipe](#)  
[Chapter 273: Provocations](#)  
[Chapter 274: The Ancient Cauldron](#)  
[Chapter 275: The Apple of His Eye](#)  
[Chapter 276: The Genius?](#)  
[Chapter 277: Kill As He Wishes?](#)  
[Chapter 278: The Night Visit!](#)  
[Chapter 279: Enchanting and Bewitching](#)  
[Chapter 280: Searching Everywhere!](#)  
[Chapter 281: Threats At The Door!](#)  
[Chapter 282: The Sword of Pure Qi](#)  
[Chapter 283: Kill me and see!](#)  
[Chapter 284: The Massacre](#)  
[Chapter 285: Encircled!](#)  
[Chapter 286: The Sharp Light](#)  
[Chapter 287: Fury!](#)  
[Chapter 288: The Demonic Skill](#)  
[Chapter 289: The Evil Deity](#)  
[Chapter 290: The New Party](#)  
[Chapter 291: Thousand Illusions](#)  
[Chapter 292: The Dragon Metamorphosis](#)  
[Chapter 293: Giving up the Cauldron!](#)  
[Chapter 294: Mister Chi](#)  
[Chapter 295: Generosity!](#)  
[Chapter 296: Join Him Before His Success!](#)  
[Chapter 297: The Luo Xia Sect](#)  
[Chapter 298: The Scapegoat](#)  
[Chapter 299: Powerful Energy Filling the Atmosphere](#)  
[Chapter 300: The Nightmare of the Luo Xia Sect](#)